PAMELA;

OR,

VIRTUE REWARDED.

IN A SERIES OF

FAMILIAR LETTERS

FROM A

BEAUTIFUL YOUNG DAMSEL

TO HER PARENTS:

And afterwards,

IN HER EXALTED CONDITION,

BETWEEN

HER, AND PERSONS OF FIGURE AND QUALITY,

U P O N T H E M O S T

IMPORTANT AND ENTERTAINING SUBJECTS,
IN GENTEEL LIFE.

PUBLISHED,

In order to cultivate the Principles of VIRTUE,
and RELIGION in the Minds of the

VOL. III.

THE THIRTEENTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for J. F. and C. Rivington, B. Law and Son, S. Crowder, G. G. J. and J. Robinson, S. Bladon, T. Vernor, T. Cadell, J. Johnson, W. Richardson, W. Otridge, R. Baldwin, S. Hayes, W. Goldsmith, P. Macqueen, Ogilvie and Speare, G. and T. Wilkie, and W. Lane.



PREFACE

TO THE

Third and Fourth VOLUMES.

THE Two former Volumes of PAMELA met with a Success greatly exceeding the most Sanguine Expettations: And the Editor hopes, that the Letters which compose these, will be found equally written to NATURE, avoiding all romantic Flights, improbable Surprises, and irrational Machinery; and that the Passions are touched, where requisite, and Rules, equally New and Practicable, inculcated, throughout the Whole, for the General Conduct of Life: And, therefore, be flatters bimself, that they may expett the good Fortune, which few Continuations bave met with, to be judged not unworthy the First Part; nor disproportioned to the more exalted Condition in which PAMELA was distined to shine, as an affectionate Wife, a faithful Friend, a polite and kind Neighbour, an indulgent Mother, and a beneficent Mistress; after baving in the Two former Volumes Supported the Character of a dutiful Child, a spotless Virgin, and a modest and amiable Bride. The The Reader will easily see, that in so great a Choice of Materials, as must arise from a Multitude of Important Subjects, in a married Life, to such Geniuses and Friendships as those of Mr. and Mrs. B. the Editor's greatest Difficulty was how to bring them within the Compass which he was determined not to exceed. And it having been left to his own Choice, in what Manner to digest and publish the Letters, and where to close the Work, he had intended, at first, in regard to his other Avocations, to have carried the Piece no farther than the Two former Volumes.

It may be expected, therefore, that he should enter into an explanation of the Reasons whereby be was provoked into a Necessity of altering his Intention. But he is willing to decline saying

Any-thing upon so well-known a Subject.

The Editor has been much pressed with Importunities and Conjectures, in relation to the Person and Family of the Gentlemen, who are the principal Persons in the Work: All he thinks himself at Liberty to say, or is necessary to be said, is only to repeat what has been already hinted, That the Story has its Foundation in Truth: And that there was a Necessity, for obvious Reasons, to vary and disquise some Facts and Circumstances, as also the Names of Persons, Places, &c.

PAMELA;

O R,

VIRTUE REWARDED.

In a Series of FAMILIAR LETTERS.

VOL. III.

LETTER I.

My dear Father and Mother,

Welling, which is just what I wished it to be. And don't make your grateful Hearts too uneasy in the Possession of it, by your modest Diffidence of your own Worthiness: For, at the same Time, that it is what will do Honour to the best of Men, it is not so very extraordinary, considering his Condition, as that it will give any one Cause to centure.

fure it as the Effect of a too partial and injudicious Kindness for the Parents of one whom he delighteth

to honour.

My dear Master (why should I not still call him fo, bound to reverence him as I am, in every Light that he can shine in to the most oblig'd and sensible Heart?) holds his kind Purpose of fitting up the large Parlour, and three Apartments in the commodious dwelling he calls yours, for his entertainment and mine, when he shall permit me to pay my Duty to you both, for a few happy Days together; and he has actually given Orders for that Purpose; and that the three Apartments be so fitted up, as to be rather fuitable to your Condition, than his own; for, he fays, the plain simple Elegance which he will have to be observed in the Rooms, as well as the Furniture, will be a Variety in his Retirement to this Place, that will make him return to his own with the greater Pleasure: and, at the same Time, when we are not there, will be of Use for the Reception of any of your Friends; and so he shall not, as he kindly fays, rob the good Couple of any of their Accommodations.

The old Bow-windows he will have preferv'd, but will not have them fash'd, nor the Woodbines, Jessamines, and Vines, that run up against them destroyed; only he will have larger Panes of Glass, and convenienter Casements, to let in more of the sweet Air and Light, to make amends for that obstructed by the Shades of those fragrant Climbers. For he has mention'd three or four Times, how gratefully they dispens'd their intermingled Odours to us, when, the last Evening we stood at the Window in our Bed-chamber, to hear the responsive Songs of two warbling Nightingales, one at a Distance, the other near, which took up our delighted Attention for above two Hours, and charm'd

charm'd us the more, as we thought their Seasen had been over. And when they had done, he made me fing him one, for which he rewarded me with a Kits, faying, How greatly do the innocent Pleasures I now hourly taste, exceed the guilty Tumults that used formerly to agitate my unequal Mind! Never talk, my Pamela, as you frequently do, of Obligation to me: One such Hour as I now enjoy is an ample Reward for all the Benefits I can confer on

you and yours in my whole Life!

The l'arlour indeed will be more elegant; tho' that is to be rather plain than rich, as well in its Wainfcot as Furniture, and to be new floor'd. The dear Gentleman has already given orders about it, and you will foon have Workmen with you to put them in execution. The Parlour-doors are to have Brass Hinges and Locks, and to shut as close, he tells them, as a Watch-case: For who knows, said he, my Dear, but we shall have still added Blessings, in two or three charming Boys and Girls, to place there in their Infancy, before they can be of Age to be benefited by your Lessons and Example? And besides, I make no doubt, but I shall entertain there some of my chosen Friends, in their Excursions, for a Day or so.

How am I, every Hour of my Life overwhelm'd with Instances of God Almighty's Goodness and his!—O spare, blessed Father of Mercies, the precious Life of this excellent Man, and increase my Thankfulness, and my Worthiness; and then—But what shall I say?—Only, that then I may continue to be what I am; for more bless'd, and more happy,

in my own Mind, furely I cannot be.

The Beds he will have of Cloth, because he thinks the Situation a little cold, especially when the Wind is Easterly, and because he purposes to be down in the early Spring Season, now-and-then, as well as in the latter Autumn, and the Window-

curtains of the fame, in one Room red, in the other green; but plain, left you should be afraid to use them occasionally. The Carpets for them will be fent with the other Furniture; for he will not alter the old Oaken Floors of the Bedchamber, nor vet of the little Room he intends for my Use, to withdraw to, when I choose not to join in such Company as may happen to fall in: Which, my Dear, fays he, shall be as little as is possible, only particular Friends, who may be disposed once in a Year or two to fee, when I am there, how I live with my Pamela, and her Parents, and how I pass my Time in my Retirement, as I shall call this: For otherwife, perhaps, they will be apt to think I am afham'd of Company I shall always be pleased with. - Nor are you, my Dear, continu'd he, to take this as a Compliment to yourfelf, but a Piece of requilite Policy in me; for who will offer to repreach me for marrying, as the World thinks, below me, when they shall fee, that such a Reproach, as they intend it, is fo far from being fo to me, that I not only pride myself in my Pamela, but take Pleasure in owning her Relations as mine, and vifiting them, and receiving Visits from them; and yet offer not to set them up in fuch a glaring Light, as if I would have the World forget (who in that Cafe would always take the more Pleasure in remembering) what they were? And how will it anticipate low Reflection when they shall fee, I can bend my Mind to partake with them the Pleasures of their humble but decent Life?— Ay, continued he, and be rewarded for it too, with better Health, better Spirits, and a better Mind; fo that, my Dear, added he, I shall reap more Benefit by what I propose to do, than I shall confer.

In this generous Manner does this best of Men endeavour to disclaim, (though I must be very ungrateful, if, with me, it did not inhance) the proper Merit of a Beneficence which is natural to him; and

which,

which, indeed, as I tell him, may be in one Respect depreciated, inasmuch as (so excellent is his Nature) he cannot help it if he would—O that it was in my Power to recompense him for it! But I am poor, as I have often said, in every Thing but Will—and that is wholly his:—And what a Happiness is it to me, a Happiness I could not so early have hoped for, that I can say so without Reserve; since the dear Object of my Happiness requires nothing of me but what is consistent with my Duty to the Supreme Benefactor, the First Mover and Cause of all his own Happiness, of my Happiness, and of that of my dear, my ever-dear Parents!

But whither does the inchanting Subject lead me! I am running on to my usual Length, the? I have not the same Excuse for it; for heretofore I had nothing to do but to write. Yet, I am sure, if I do exceed a little, you will be pleased with it; and you have moreover a Right to rejoice with me in the Days of my Felicity, after your indulgent Hearts had been so much pained by a long Succession of my Fears and my Dangers, which only ought to be remembered now, as Subjects of thankful Exultation, by

Your dutiful and happy Daughter.

LETTER II.

My dearest Daughter,

I Need not repeat to you the Sense your good Mother and I have of our Happiness, and of our Obligations to your honour'd Spouse: You both were pleased Witnesses of it every Hour of the happy Fortnight you pass'd with us. But still, my Dear, we hardly know how to address ourselves even to You, much less to the 'Squire, with the Freedom he so often invited us to take: For, I don't know how it is, but tho' you are our Daughter, and are so far from being B 2

lifted up by your high Condition, that we see no Difference in your Behaviour to us, your poor Parents, yet when we look upon you as the Lady of so sine a Gentleman, we cannot forbear having a kind of Respect, and—I don't know what to call it,—that lays a little Restraint upon us. And, yet we would not, methinks, let our Minds be run away with the Admiration of worldly Grandeur, so as to set too

much by it.

But your Merit, and your Prudence, my dear Daughter, is so much above all we could ever have any Notion of: - And to have Gentry come only to behold you, and admire you, not fo much for your Genteelness and Amiableness neither, as for your Behaviour, and your Affability to Poor as well as Rich, and to hear every one calling you an Angel, and faying, you deferve to be what you are, makes us hardly know how to look upon you, but as an Angel indeed !- I am fure you have been a good Angel to us; fince, for your Sake, God Almighty has put it into your honour'd Husband's Heart to make us the happiest Couple in the World. But little lefs, indeed, we should have been, had we only, in some far distant Land, heard of our dear Child's Happiness, and never partaken of the Benefits of it ourselves. But thus to be provided for !—Thus kindly to be owned, and called Father and Mother by fuch a brave Gentleman! and thus to be placed, that we have nothing to do, but to blefs God, and blefs him, and blefs you, and hourly pray for you both, is fuch a providence, my dear Child, as is too mighty to be borne by us, with Equalness of Temper; and we kneel together every Morning, Noon, and Night, and weep and rejoice, and rejoice and weep, to think how our Unworthiness is distinguilhed, and how God has provided for us in our latter Days, when all that we had to fear was, that, as we grew older and more infirm, and worn out by hard Labour, we should be troublesome where, not our Pride, but our industrious Wills, would have made us wish not to be so;—but to be intitled to a happier Lot: For this would have grieved us the more, for the Sake of you, my dear Child, and your unhappy Brother's Children: For it is well known, that, though we pretend not to boast of our Family, and indeed have no Reason, yet none of us were ever sunk so low as I was:—To be sure, partly by my own Fault; for had it been for your poor aged Mother's Sake only, I ought not to have done what I did for Jahn and William; for, so unhappy were they, poor Lads! that what I could do, was but as a Drop of Water to a Bucket.

But yet the Islue has shewn, that, (if I may presume to say so) what I did was not displeasing to God; inasmuch as I have the Comfort to see that my Reliance on Him, while I was doing what though some thought imprudent Things yet not wrong Things, is so abundantly rewarded, beyond Expectation and Desert. Blessed be his Holy Name

for it!

You command me—Let me, as writing to Mr. B.'s Lady, fay command, tho' as to my dear Daughter, I will only fay defire: And, indeed, I will not, as you wish me, not to do, let the one Condition, which was accidental, put the other, which was natural, out of my Thought: You spoke it in better Words, but this was the Senfe —But you have the Gift of Utterance; and Education is a fine Thing, where it meets with fuch Talents to improve upon as God has given you. - But let me not forget what I was going to fay - You command, - or, if you please you desire me to write long Letters, and often-And how can I help it, if I would? For when here, in this happy Dwelling, and this wellstock'd Farm, in these rich meadows, and wellcropt

cropt Acres, we look around us, and which Way foever we turn our Heads, fee Bleffings upon Bleffings, and Plenty upon Plenty; fee Barns well-ftor'd, Poultry increasing, the Kine lowing and crowding about us, and all fruitful; and are bid to call all these our own.—And then think, that all is the Reward of our Child's Virtue!—O my dear Daughter, who can bear these Things!—Excuse me!—I must break off a little! For my Eyes are as full as my Heart; and I will retire to bless God, and your honour'd Husband.

So-my dear Child-I now again take up my Pen: But reading what I had written, in order to carry on the Thread, I can hardly forbear again being in one Sort affected. But do you think I will call all these Things my own?-Do you think I will live Rent-free ?- Do you think I would? Can the honour'd 'Squire believe, that having fuch a generous example before me, if I had no Gratitude in my Temper before, I could help being touched by fuch an one as he fets me? - If his Goodness makes him know no Mean in giving, shall I be so greedy as to know none in receiving? - Come, come, my dear Child, your poor Father is not fo fordid a Wretch neither. He will shew the World, that all these Benefits are not thrown away upon one, who will difgrace you as much by his Temper, as by his Condition: What tho' I cannot be as worthy of all thefe Favours as I wish, I will be as worthy as I can. And let me tell you, my dear Child, if the King and his Royal Family (God blefs 'em!) be not asham'd to receive Taxes and Duties from his Subjects; if Dukes and Earls, and all the top Gentry, cannot fupport their Bravery, without having their Rents paid; I hope I shall not affront the 'Squire, to pay to his Steward, what any other Person would pay for this noble Stock, and improving Farm: And I will do it,

if it please God to bless me with Life and Health .-I should not be worthy to crawl upon the Earth, if I did not. And what did I say to Mr. Longman, the faithful Mr. Longman? Sure no Gentleman had ever a more worthy Steward than he: It was as we were walking over the Grounds together—and observing in what good Order every Thing was, he was praifing fome little Contrivances of my own, for the Improvement of the Farm, and faying, how comfortably he hoped we might live upon it. Ay, Mr. Longman, faid I, comfortably indeed: But do you think I could be properly faid to live, if I was not to pay as much Rent for it as another?—I can tell you, faid he, the 'Squire will not receive any Thing from you, Goodman Andrews .- Why, Man, he has no Occafion for it: He's worth a Power of Money, befides a noble and clear Estate in Land. - Ad's heartlikins, you must not affront him, I can tell you that: For he's as generous as a Prince, where he takes; but he is hafty, and will have his own Way .- Why, for that Reason, Mr. Longman, faid I, I was thinking to make you my Friend.—Make me your Friend! You have not a better in the World, to my Power, I can tell you that; nor your Dame neither; for I love such honest Hearts: I wish my own Brother would let me love him as well; but let that pass.—What I can do for you, I will, and here's my Hand upon it.

Well then, faid I, it is this: Let me account to you at the Rent Farmer Dickens offered, and let me know what the Stock cost, and what the Crops are valued at; and pay the one as I can, and the other quarterly; and not let the 'Squire know it till you can't choose; and I shall be as happy as a Prince; for I doubt not, by God's Blessing, to make a comfortable Livelihood of it, besides.—Why, dost believe, Goodman Andrews, said he, that I would do such a Thing?—Would not his Honour think if I hid one Thing from him, I might hide another!—Go to, go to, honest

B 5

Heart,

Heart, I love thee dearly: But can Mr. B. do too much for his Lady, think'st thou? Come, come, (and he jeer'd me so, I could not tell what to say to him) I wish at Bottom there is not some Pride in this.—What, I warrant, you would not be too much beholden to his Honour, would you?—No, good Mr. Longman, said I—it is not that, I'm sure. If I have any Pride, it is only in my dear Child—to whom, under God, all this is owing—But some how or other it shall be so.

And fo, my dear Daughter, I refolve it shall; and it will be, over and above, one of the greatest Pleafures to me, to do the good 'Squire Service, as well as to be so much benefited and obliged by him.

Our eldeft Grandson Thomas is very desirous to come and live with us: The Boy is honest, and they tell me, industrious. And Cousin Burroughs wants me to employ his Son Roger, who understands the Business of a Farm very well. It is no Wonder, that all one's Relations should wish to partake of our happy Lot: and if they can and will do their Business as well as others, I see not why Relationship should be an Objection: But yet, I think, one would not beleaguer, as one may say, your honoured Husband with one's Relations. You, my best Child, will give me always your Advice, as to my Carriage in this my new Lot; for I would not for the World be thought an Incroacher. And I am sure you have so much Prudence, that there is nobody's Advice fitter to be followed than yours.

Our Bleffing (I am fure you have bleffed us!) attend you, my dearest Child; and may you be as happy as you have made us, (I cannot wish you to be happier, because I have no Notion how it can be,

in this Life) conclude us,

Your ever-loving Father and Mother, JOHN and ELIZ. ANDREWS. May we not hope to be favoured now-and-then with a Letter from you, my dear Child, like fome of your former, to let us know how you go on? It would be a great Joy to us: Indeed it would.—But we know you'll have enough to do without obliging us in this Way. So must acquiesce.

LETTER III.

My dear Father and Mother,

I HAVE shew'd your Letter to my Beloved.

—Don't be uneasy that I have;—for you need not be ashamed of it, since it is my Pride to have such honest and grateful Parents: And I'll tell you what he said to it, as the best Argument I can use, why you should not be uneasy, but enjoy without Pain or Anxiety all the Benefits of your happy Lot.

Dear, good Souls! faid he, how does every Thing they fav, and every Thing they write, manifest the Worthiness of their Hearts. No wonder, Pamela, you love and revere such honest Minds; for that you would do, were they not your Parents: And tell them, that I am so far from having them believe, that what I have done for them is only the Effect of my Affection for their Daughter, that let them find out another Couple as worthy as themselves, and I will do as much for them. Indeed I would not place them, continued the dear Obliger, in the fame County, because I would wish two Counties to be thessed for their Sakes. Tell them, my Dear, that they have a Right to what they enjoy on the Foot of their own proper Merit; and bid them enjoy it as their Patrimony: And if there can any Thing arife, that is more than they themselves can wish for, in the Way of Life they choose to live, let them look round among their own Relations, where it may be accept-B 6 able, able, and communicate to them the like folid Reafons for rejoicing in the Situation they are pleafed with: And do you, my Dear, continued he, still further enable them, as you shall judge proper, to gratify their inlarged Hearts, for fear they should deny any Comfort to themselves in order to do Good to others.

I could only fly to his generous Bosom, (for this is a Subject which most affects me) and, with my Lyes (wimming in Tears of grateful Joy, and which overflowed as foon as my bold Lips touched his dear Face, blefs God, and blefs him, with my whole Heart; for speak I could not! But, almost choaked with my Joy, fobbed to him my grateful Acknowledgments-He clasped me in his Arms, and said, How, my Dearest, do you overpay me for the little I have done for your Parents! If it be thus to be bleffed for conferring Benefits fo infignificant to a Man of my Fortune, what Joys is it not in the Power of rich Men to give themselves, whenever they please! Foretaftes, indeed, of those we are bid to hope for; which can furely only exceed thefe, as then we shall be all Intellect, and better fitted to receive them .-Tis too much!-too much, faid I, in broken Accents: --- How am I oppressed with the Pleafure you give me !---O, Sir, bless me more gradually, and more cautioufly-for I cannot bear it! And, indeed, my Heart went flutter, flutter, flutter, at his dear Breast, as if it wanted to break its too narrow Prison, to mingle still more intimately with his own.

Surely, furely, my dear, my beloved Parents, nobody's Happiness is so great as mine!—If it proceeds thus from Degree to Degree, and is to be augmented by the Hope, the charming Hope, that the dear second Author of your Blessings and mine, be the uniformly good as well as the partially kind Man to us, what a Felicity will this be! and if our Prayers Prayers shall be heard, and we shall have the Pleasure to think, that his Advances in Piety are owing not a little to them, and to the Example God shall give us Grace to set; then, indeed, may we take the Pride to think, we have repaid his Goodness to us, and that we have satisfied the Debt, which nothing less can discharge.

Thus, then, do I fet before you imperfectly, as I am forced to do, the Delight your grateful, your honest Hearts give us; I say, imperfectly, and well I may; for I might as eafily paint Sound, as describe the noble, the fublime Pleasures, that wind up my Affections to even a painful Height of Rapture on fuch Occasions as this: And I defire, as he often bids me, that you will take to yourselves the Merit of thus delighting us both, and then think with lefs Uneafiness, of the Obligation you are under to the best of Friends, - And indeed it is but doing Justice to his beneficent Temper, to think, that we have given him an Opportunity of exercifing it in a Way so agreeable to it; and I can tell by the Ardour of his Speech, by the additional Lustre that it lights up in his Eyes, naturally so lively, and by the virtuous Endearments, refined on these Occasions above what Senie can know, that he has a Pleafure, a Joy, a Transport, in doing what he does of this Sort, that is its own Reward; as every virtuous and noble Action must be to a Mind that can be delighted with Virtue for its own Sake, and can find itself inlarged by the Power of doing Good to worthy Objects. Even I, my dear Parents, know this by Experience, when I can be an humble Means to make an honeft Creature happy, tho' not related to myself; and yet I am but a third-hand Dispenser, as I have * elsewhere faid of these Comforts; and all the Light I can communicate, as, I once before observed t, like that of the Moon, is but borrowed from his funny Radiance.

Forgive

Forgive me, my dear, my worthy Parents, if my Stile on this Subject be raifed above that natural Simplicity, which is more fuited to my humble Talents. But how can I help it! For when the Mind is elevated, ought not the Sense we have of our Happinels to make our Expressions foar equally? Can the Affections be so highly raised as mine are on these Occasions, and the Thoughts creep groveling, like one's ordinary Self? No, indeed! - Call not this, therefore, the Gift of Utterance, if it should appear to you in a better Light than it deferves. It is the Gift of Gratitude; a Gift which makes you, and me too, speak and write, as I hope it will make us act, above ourselves.—And thus will our Gratitude be the Inspirer of Joy to our common Benefactor; and his Joy will heighten our Gratitude; and fo we shall proceed, as Cause and Effect to each other's Happiness, to bless the dear Man who blesses us .-And will it be right then to fay, you are uneafy under fuch (at least as to your Wills) returned and difcharged Obligations? God Almighty requires only a thankful Heart for all the Mercies he heaps upon the Children of Men: My dear Mr. B. who, in these Particulars, imitates Divinity, defires no more: You have this thankful Heart; -yes, you have; and that to fuch a high Degree of Gratitude, that nobody can exceed you.

But yet, my dear Parents, when your worthy Minds would be too much affected with your Gratitude, so as to lay you under the Restraints you mention, to the dear Gentleman, and for his Sake, to your dependent Daughter; then let me humbly advise you, that you will at such Times, with more particular, more abstracted Aspirations, than at others, raise your Thoughts upwards, and consider who it is that gives him the Opportunity; and pray for him and for me; for him, that all his suture Actions may be of a piece with this noble Disposition

of Mind; for me that I may continue humble, and consider myself blest for your Sakes, and in order that I may be, in some Sort, a Rewarder in the Hands of Providence, of this its dear excellent Agent; and then we shall look forward, all of us, with Pleasure indeed to that State, where there is no Distinction of Degree, and where the humble Cottager shall be

upon a Par with the proudest Monarch.

O my dear, dear Parents, how can you, as in your Postscript, fay-May we not be favoured now-andthen with a Letter? Call me your Daughter, your Pamela-I am no Lady to you.-I have more Pleafure to be called your Comfort, and to be thought to act worthy of the Sentiments with which your Examples, Cautions, and Instructions, have inspired me, than in any other Thing in this Life; my determin'd Duty to our common Benefactor, the best of Gentlemen and Husbands, excepted. And I am fure, God has bleffed me for your Sakes, and has thus answered for me all your Prayers; nay, more than anfwered all you or I could have wished or hoped for. We only prayed, only hoped, that God would preferve you honest, and me virtuous: And see, O see, my excellent Parents, how we are crown'd with Bleffings upon Bleffings, till we are the Talk of all that know us: - You for your Honesty; I for my Humility and Virtue; -that Virtue which God's Grace inspired, and your Examples and Lessons, with those of my dear good Lady, cultivated; and which now have left me nothing to do but to reap all the Rewards which this Life can afford; and if I walk humbly, and improve my bleffed Opportunities, will heighten and perfect all in a still more joyful Futurity.

Hence, my dear Parents (I mean, from the Delight I have in writing to you, a Delight which transports me so far above my own Sphere) you'll see, that I must write to you, and cannot help it, if I would.

And will it be a great Joy to you!—And is there any thing that can add to your Joy, think you, that is in the Power of your Pamela, that she would not do?—O that the Lives and Healths of my dearest Mr. B. and my dearest Parents, may be continued to me! And who then can be so blest as your Pamela?

I will write; depend upon it, I will—on every Occasion:—And you augment my Joys, to think it is in my Power to add to your Comforts. Nor can you conceive the Pleasure I have in hoping that this your new happy Lot may, by relieving you from corroding Care, and the too wearing Effects of hard Labour, add, in these your advanced Years, to both your Days.—For, so happy am I, I can have no Grief, no I ain, in looking forward, but from such Thoughts as remind me, that one Day either you from me, or I from you, must be separated.

But it is fit, that we so comport ourselves, as that we should not imbitter our present Happiness with Prospects too gloomy—but bring our Minds to be cheerfully thankful for the present, wisely to enjoy that present as we go along—and at last, when all is to be wound up, lie down, and say, Not mine, but

Thy Will be done!

I have written a great deal; yet have much still to say relating to other Parts of your kind, your acceptable Letter; and so will soon write again: For I must think every Opportunity happy, whereby I can assure you, how much I am, and will ever be, without any Addition to my Name, if that will make you easier,

Your dutiful PAMELA.

LETTER IV.

My dearest Father and Mother,

I Now write again, as I told you I should in my last:—But I am half assaid to look back on the Copy of it; for your worthy Hearts, so visible in your Letter, and my Beloved's kind Deportment upon thewing it to him, raised me into the Frame of Mind that was bordering on Ecstacy: Yet am I sure, I wrote my Heart. But you must not, my dear Father, write to your poor Pamela so assectingly. Your steadier Mind could hardly bear your own moving Strain, and you were forced to lay down your Pen, and retire: How then could I, who love you so dearly, if you had not, if I may so say, increased that Love by fresh and stronger Instances of your Worthiness, sorbear being affected, and raised above myself!—But I will not again touch upon this Subject.

You must know then, that my dearest Spouse commands me, with his kind Respects, to tell you, that he has thought of a Method to make your worthly Hearts easy; those were his Words—And this is, said he, by putting that Whole Estate, with the new Purchase, under your Father's Care, as I at first intended *; and he shall receive and pay, and order every thing as he pleases; and Longman, who grows in Years, shall be eased of that Burden. Your Father, said he, writes a very legible Hand, and He shall take what Assistants he pleases: And do you, Pamela, see to that, that this new Task may be made as easy and pleasant to him as possible. He shall make up his Accounts only to you, my Dear. And there will be several Pleasures arise to me upon it, conti-

nued

nued he: First, That it will be a Relief to honest Longman, who has Bufiness enough on his Hands befides. Next, It will make the good Couple eafy, that they have an Opportunity of enjoying that as their Due, which now their too grateful Hearts give them fo many causeless Scruples about. Thirdly, It will employ your Father's Time, more fuitably to your Liking and mine, because with more Ease to himself; for you see his industrious Will cannot be fatisfied without doing fomething. In the fourth place, The Management of this Estate will gain him more Respect and Reverence among the Tenants and his Neighbours; and yet be all in his own way. -For, my Dear, added he, you'll fee, that it is always one Point in View with me, to endeavour to convince every one, that I esteem and value them for their own intrinsic Merit, and want not any body to diffinguish them in any other Light, than that in which they have been accustomed to appear.

So, my dear Father, the Instrument will be drawn, and brought you by honest Mr. Longman, who will be with you in a few Days, to put the last Hand to the new Purchase, and to give you Possession of your new Commission, if you please to accept of it; as I hope you will; and the rather, for my dear Mr. B.'s third Reason; and because I know that this Trust will be discharged as worthily and as sufficiently, after you are used to it, as if Mr. Longman himself was in it—And better it cannot be. Mr. Longman is very fond of this Relief, and longs to be down to settle every thing with you, as to the proper Powers, the Method, &c.—And he says, in his usual Way of Phrasing, that he'll make it as easy to you as a Glove.

If you do accept it, my dear Mr. B. will leave every thing to you, as to Rent, where not already fixed, and likewise, as to Acts of Kindness and Favour to be done where you think proper; and he is pleased to say, that with all his bad Qualities, he was ever deemed a kind Landlord; and this I can confirm in fifty Instances to his Honour: So that the old Gentleman, faid he, need not be afraid of being put upon severe or harsh Methods of Proceeding, where Things will do without; and he will always have it in his Power to befriend an honest Man; by which means the Province will be intirely fuch a one as fuits with his Inclination. If any thing difficult or perplexing arifes, continued he, or where a little Knowledge in Law-matters is necessary, Longman shall do all that: And your Father will fee, that he will not have in those Points a Coadjutor that will be too hard-hearted for his Wish. For it was a Rule my Father set me, and I have strictly followed, that although I have a Lawyer for my Steward, it was rather to know how to do right Things, than oppreffive ones; and Longman has fo well answered this Intention, that he was always more noted for composing Differences, than promoting Law-fuits.

I dare say, my dear Father, this will be an acceptable Employment to you, on the several Accounts my dearest Mr. B. was pleased to mention: And what a charming Contrivance is here! God forever bless his considerate Heart for it!—To make you useful to him, and easy to yourself; as well as respected by, and even a Benefactor to all around you! What can one say to all these things?—But what signifies exulting in one's Gratitude for one Benefit;—Every Hour the dear Man heaps new ones upon us, and we have hardly Time to thank him for one, but a second, and a third, and so on to countless Degrees, consound one, and throw back one's Words upon one's Heart before they are well formed, and oblige one to sit down under all with

profound Silence and Admiration.

As to what you mentioned of the Desire of Cousin Thomas and Roger, to live with you, I endeavoured to found what our dear Benefactor's Opi-

nion was. He was pleased to say, I have nothing to choose in this Case, my Dear. Your Father is his own Master: He may employ whom he pleases; and, if they are not wanting in Respect to him and your Mother, I think, as he rightly observes, Relationship should rather have the Preserence; and as he can remedy Inconveniences, if he finds any, by all means let every Branch of your Family have Reason to rejoice with him.

But I have thought of this Matter a good deal, fince I had the Favour of your Letter; and I hope, fince you condescend to ask my Advice, you will excuse me, if I give it freely; yet entirely submit-

ting all to your Liking.

In the first place, then, I think it would be better to have any body than Relations; and that for these Reasons:

One is apt to expect more Regard from Relations, and they more Indulgence, than Strangers can have Reason for.

That where there is such a Difference in the Expectations of both, it is hardly possible but Uneasiness must arise.

That this will subject you to bear it, or to resent it, and to part with them. If you bear it, you will know no End of Impositions: It you dismiss them, it will occasion Ill-will. They will call you unkind; and you them ungra eful; and as, it may be, your prosperous Lot will raise you Enviers, such will be apt to believe them rather than you.

Then the World will be inclined to think that we are crowding upon a generous Gentleman a numerous Family of indigent People; and tho' they may be ever so deserving, yet it will be said, the Girl is filling every Place with her Relations, and beleaguering, as you significantly express it, a worthy Gentle-

man_

man. And this will be faid, perhaps, should one's

Kindred behave ever fo worthily. And fo,

In the next place, one would not, for their Sakes, that this should be done; who may live with left Reproach, and equal Benefit, any-where else: For I would not wish any one of them to be listed out of his Station, and made independent, at Mr. B.'s Expence, if their Industry will not do it; although I would never scruple to do any thing reasonable to promote or affish that Industry, in the way of their Callings.

Then it will possibly put others of our Relations upon the same Expectations of living with you; and this may occasion Ill-will among them, if some be

preferred to others in your Favour.

Then, my dear Father, I apprehend that our beloved and honoured Benefactor would be under fome Difficulty, from his natural Politeness, and Regard for you and me. - You fee how kindly, on all Occasions, he treats you both, not only as the Father and Mother of his Pamela, but as if you were his own Father and Mother: And if you had any-body as your Servants there, who called you Coulin, or Grandfather, or Uncle, he would not care, when he came down, to treat them on the Foot of common Servants, though they might nevertheless think themselves honoured (as they would be, and as I am fure I shall always think myself) with his Commands. And would it not, if they are modest and worthy, be as great a Difficulty upon them, to be thus diffinguished, as it would be to him and to me, for his Sake? For otherwise, (believe me, I hope you will, my dear Father and Mother) I could fit down and rejoice with the meanest and remotest Relation I have. in the World's Eye, to every body but my best of Parents, I must, if I have ever so much Reluctance luctance to it, appear in a Light that may not give Difcredit to his Choice.

Then again, as I hinted, you will have it in your Power, without the least Injury to our common Benefactor, to do kinder Things by any of our Relations, when not with you, than you can do, if they

live with you.

You may lend them a little Money to put them in a way, if any thing offers that you think will be to their Advantage. You can fit out my She-Coufins to good reputable Places—The younger you can put to School, or, when fit, to Trades, according to their Talents; and fo they will be of course in a way to get an honest and creditable Livelihood.

But, above all things, one would as much discourage, as one could, such a proud and ambitious Spirit in any of them, as should want to raise itself by Favour instead of Merit; and this the rather, for that, undoubtedly, there are many more happy Persons in low than in high Life, take Number for Number, all the World over.

I am fure, although four or five Years of different Life had passed with me, I had so much Pride and Pleasure in the Thought of working for my Living with you, my dear Parents, if I could but get honest to you, that it made my Confinement the more grievous to me, and even, if possible, aggravated the

Apprehensions attending it.

But I must beg of you, not to harbour a Thought, that these my Reasons proceed from the bad Motives of a Heart tainted with Pride on its high Condition. Indeed there can be no Reason for it, to one who thinks after this Manner:—The greatest Families on Earth have some among them who are unhappy and low in Life; and shall such a one reproach me with having twenty low Relations, because they have, peradventure, not above Five? or with

with Ten, because they have but One, or two, or Three ?-Or should I, on the other hand, be ashamed of Relations who had done nothing blame-worthy, and whose Poverty (a very necessary State in the Scale of Beings) was all their Crime, when there is hardly any great Family but has produced Inflances of Persons guilty of bad Actions, really bad, which have reduced them to a Diffress we never knew? Let the Person who would reproach me with low Birth, which is no Difgrace, and what I cannot help, give me no Cause to retort upon him low Actions, which are a Difgrace to any Station, the more fo the higher it is, and which he can help, or elfe I shall smile with Contempt at his empty Reproach: And could I be half so proud with Cause, as he is without, glory in my Advantage over him.

Let us then, my dear Father and Mother, endeavour to judge of one another, as God, at the last Day, will judge of us all: And then the honest Peasant will stand fairer in our Esteem than the

guilty Peer.

In thort, this shall be my own Rule—Every one who acts justly and honestly I will look upon as my Relation, whether he be so or not; and the more he wants my Assistance, the more intitled to it he shall be, as well as to my Esteem: While those who deserve it not, must expect nothing but Compassion from me, and my Prayers, were they my Brothers or Sisters. 'Tis true, had I not been poor and lowly, I might not have thought thus: But if it be a right way of thinking, it is a Blessing that I was so; and that shall never be Matter of Reproach to me, which one Day will be matter of Justification.

Upon the Whole then, I should think it adviseable, my dear Father and Mother, to make such kind Excuses to the offered Services of my Cousins, as your better Reason shall suggest to you; and to do any thing else for them of more Value, as their Circumstances may require, or Occasions offer to serve them.

But if the employing them, and having them about you, will add any one Comfort to your Lives, I give up entirely my own Opinion, and doubt not every thing will be thought well of, that you shall think fit to do.

And so I conclude with affuring you, that I am,

my ever-dear Parents,

Your dutiful and happy Daughter.

The Copy of this Letter I will keep to myfelf, till I have your Answer to it, that you may be under no Difficulty how to act in either of the Cases mentioned in it.

LETTER V.

My dearest Daughter,

Tow shall I do to answer, as they deserve, your two last Letters? Surely no happy Couple ever had such a Child as we have! But it is in vain to aim at Words like your Words; and equally in vain for us to offer to set forth the Thankfulness of our Hearts, on the kind Office your honoured Husband has given us; for no Reason but to favour us still more, and to quiet our Minds in the Notion of being useful to him. God grant I may be able to be so!—Happy shall I be, if I can! But I see the generous Drift of his Proposal; it is only to make me more easy from the Nature of my Employment, and in my Mind too, overloaden, as I may say, with Benesits; and at the same time to make me more respected in my new Neighbourhood.

I can only fay, I most gratefully accept of the kind Offer; and fince it will ease the worthy Mr. Long-

man, shall with still greater pleasure do all I can in it. But I doubt I shall be wanting in Ability; I doubt I shall: But I will be just and honest however. That, by God's Grace, will be within my own Capacity; and that, I hope, I may answer for.

It is kind, indeed, to put it in my own power to do good to those who shall deserve it: and I will take double Pains to find out the true Merit of such as I shall recommend to Favour, and that their Circum-

stances be really such as I shall represent them.

But one thing, my dear Daughter, let me desire, that I may make up my Accounts to Mr. Longman, or to his Honour himself, when he shall make us so happy as to be here with us. I don't know how—but it will make me uneasy, if I am to make up my Accounts to you: For so well known is your Love to us, that though you would no more do an unjust Thing, than, by God's Grace, we should desire you; yet this same ill-willing World might think it was

like making up Accounts to one's felf.

Do, my dearest Child, get me off this difficulty, and I can have no other; for already I am in hopes I have hit upon a Contrivance to improve the Estate, and to better the Condition of the Tenants at the fame time, at least not to worst them, and which, I hope, will please every Body: But I will acquaint Mr. Longman with this, and take his Advice; for I will not be too troublesome either to you, my dear Child, or to your Spoule.—If I could act for his Interest, as not to be a Burden, what happy Creatures should we both be in our own Minds! We find ourfelves more and more respected by every one; and, fo far as shall be consistent with our new Trust, we will endeavour to deferve it, that we may interest as many as know us in our own good Wishes and Prayers for the Happiness of you both.

But let me fay, how much convinced I am by the Reasons you give for not taking to us any of our Vol. III.

1

Relations. Every one of those Reasons has its Force with us. How happy are we to have so prudent a Daughter to advise with! And I think myself obliged to promise this, that whatever I do for any of them above the Amount of Forty Shillings at one Time, I will take your Direction in it, that your wise Hints of making every one continue their Industry, and not to rely upon Favour instead of Merit, may be followed. I am sure this is the Way to make them happier, as well as better Men and Women; for, as I have often thought, if one were to have a Hundred Pounds a Year in good Comings-in, it would not do without Industry; and with it, one may do with a Quarter of it, and less.

In short, my dear Child, your Reasons are so good, that I wonder they came not into my Head before, and then I needed not to have troubled you about the Matter: But yet it ran in my own Thought, that I could not like to be an Incroacher:—For I hate a dirty Thing; and in the midst of my Distresses, never

could be guilty of one. Thank God for it.

You rejoice our Hearts beyond Expression at the Hope you give us of receiving Letters from you nowand-then: To be sure it will be the chief Comfort of our Lives, next to seeing you, as we are put in hope we sometimes shall. But, yet, my dear Child, don't let us put you to Inconvenience neither. Pray don't: You'll have enough upon your Hands without—To be sure you will.

The Workmen have made a good Progress, and wish for Mr. Longman to come down; as we also do.

You need not be afraid, we should think you proud, or listed up with your Condition. You have weathered the first Dangers, and but for your fine Clothes and Jewels, we should not see any Difference, indeed we should not, between our dear Pamela, and the much respected Mrs. B—. But God has given you too much Sense to be proud or listed up. I remem-

ber

ber in your former Wrings, a Saying of the 'Squire's, fpeaking of you, my dear Child, that it was for Perfons who were not used to Praise, and did not deserve it, to be proud of it *: In like fort one may say, it is for Persons of little Sense to be proud; but you, my dear Child, every one sees, are above it: And that, methinks, is a proud Word, is it not? If one was not—I don't know how,—half stupid, I believe—one would be raised by your high Style of Writing. But I should be more than half stupid,

I am fure, to aim at it.

Every Day brings us Inftances of the good Name his Honour and you, my dear Child, have left behind you in this Country. Here comes one, and here come another, and a third and a fourth; and, Goodman Andrews, cries one, and, Goody Andrews, cries another-(and some call us Mr. and Mrs. but we like the other full as well) When heard you from his Honour? How does his Lady do?—What a charming Couple are they?—How lovingly they live !- What an Example do they give to all about them !- Then one cries, God bless them both; and another cries, Amen; and fo fays a third and a fourth; and all fay, But when do you expect them down, again?-Such-a-one longs to fee them-and fucha-one will ride a Day's Journey, to have but a Sight of them at Church.—And then they fay, how this Gentleman praises them, and that Lady admires them.—O my dear Child, what a Happiness is this! How do your poor Mother and I stand fixed to the Earth to hear both your Praises, our Tears trickling down our Cheeks, and our Hearts heaving as if they would burst with Joy, till we are forced to take leave in half Words, and hand-in-hand go in together to blefs God, and blefs you both! - O my Daughter, what a happy Couple have God and you made us!

Your poor Mother is very anxious about her dear Child. I will not touch upon a Matter so very irk-some to you to hear of. But, though the Time may be some Months off, she every Hour prays for your Safety and Happiness, and for all the Increase of Felicity that his Honour's generous Heart can wish for. That is all we will say at present: Only, that we are, with continued Prayers and Blessings, my dearest Child,

Your loving Father and Mother, J. and E. Andrews.

Yet one Word more !—and that is,—Our Duty to your honoured Husband. We must say so now; though he forbad us so often before. You cannot, my dear Child, imagine how ashamed I was to have my poor Letter shewn to him. I hardly remember what I wrote; but it was from my Heart, I'm sure; so I needed not to keep a Copy; for an honest Mind must always be the same, in Cases that cannot admit of Change, such as those of my Thankfulness to God and to him. But don't shew him all I write: for I shall be afraid of what I say, if I think any body but our Daughter sees it, who knows how to allow for her poor Parents Defects.

LETTER VI.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.

My Dear PAMELA,

I HAD intended to have been with you before this; but my Lord has been a little indisposed with the Gout, and Jackey has had an Intermittent Fever; but they are pretty well recovered, and it shall not be long before I see you, now I understand you are returned from your Kentish Expedition.

We

We have been exceedingly diverted with your Papers. You have given us, by their Means, many a delightful Hour, that otherwise would have hung heavy upon us; and we are all charm'd with you. Lady Betty as well as her noble Mamma, has always been of our Party, whenever we have read your Accounts. She is a dear generous Lady, and has shed many a Tear over them, as indeed we all have; and my Lord has not been unmov'd, nor Jackey neither, at some of your Distresses and Restections. Indeed, Pamela, you are a charming Creature, and an Ornament to your Sex. We wanted to have had you among us a hundred. Times, as we read, that we might have loved, and kissed, and thanked you.

But after all, my Brother, generous and noble as he was, when your Trials were over, was a strange wicked young Fellow; and happy it was for you both, that he was so cleverly caught in the Frap he

had laid for your Virtue.

I can affure you, my Lord longs to fee you, and will accompany me; for, he fays, he has but a faint Idea of your Person. I tell him, and tell them all, that you are the finest Girl, and the most improved in Person and Mind, I ever beheld; and I am not afraid, although they should imagine all they can in your Favour, from my Account of you, that they will be disappointed when they see you, and converse with you. But one thing more you must do for us, and then we will love you still more; and that is, you must fend us the rest of your Papers, down to your Marriage at least; and farther, if you have written farther; for we all long to see the rest, as you relate it, though we know in general what has passed.

You leave off* with an Account of an angry Letter I wrote to my Brother, to persuade him to give you your Liberty, and a Sum of Money; not doubting

³ bu

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 52, & 353.

but his Designs would end in your Ruin, and, I own it, not wishing he would marry for you; for little did I know of your Merit and Excellence, nor could I, but for your Letters so lately sent me, have had any Notion of either.—I do not question but, if you have recited my passionate Behaviour to you, and when I was at the Hall, I shall make a ridiculous Figure enough; but I will forgive all that, for the Sake of the Pleasure you have given me, and will still farther give

me, if you comply with my Request.

Lady Betty says, it is the best Story she has heard, and the most instructive; and she longs to have the Conclusion of it in your own Words. She says now-and-then, What a hopeful Brother you have, Lady Davers!—O these intriguing Gentlemen!—What Rogueries do they not commit! I should have had a fine Husband of him, had I received your Proposal! The dear Pamela would have run in his Head, and had I been the first Lady in the Kingdom, I should have stood but a poor Chance in his Esteem; for, you see his Designs upon her began * early.

She says, You had a good Heart to go back again to him, when the violent Wretch had driven you from him on such a slight Occasion: but yet, she thinks, the Reasons you give + in your Relation, and your Love for him, (which then you began to discover was your Case) as well as the Event, shewed

you did right.

But we will tell you all our Judgments, when we have read the rest of your Accounts. So pray send them, as soon as you can, to (I won't write myself Sister till then)

Your affectionate, &c.

B. DAVERS.

LET-

* See Vol. I. p. 85. 4 10. + See Vol. II. p. 46.

LETTER VII.

My dear good Lady,

TOU have done me great Honour in the Letter your Ladyship has been pleased to send me; and it is a high Pleafure to me, now all is fo happily over, that my poor Papers were in the least diverting to you, and to fuch honourable and worthy Perfons as your Ladyship is pleased to mention. I could wish, my dear Lady, I might be favoured with fuch Remarks on my Conduct, fo nakedly fet forth, (without any Imagination that they would ever appear in fuch an Affembly) as may be of use to me in my future Life, and make me, by that Means, more worthy than it is otherwise possible I can be, of the Honour to which I am raifed. Do, dearest Lady, favour me so far. I am prepared to receive Blame, and to benefit by it, and cannot expect Praise so much from my Actions as from my Intentions; for, indeed, these were always just and honourable: But why, even for these, do I talk of Praise, since, being prompted by Impulses I could not refift, it can be no Merit in me to have been governed by them?

As to the Papers following those in your Lady-ship's Hands, when I say, that they must needs appear impertinent to such Judges, after what you know, I dare say your Ladyship will not insist upon them: Yet I will not scruple briefly to mention what they

All my Dangers and Trials were happily at an end: So that they only contain "the Conversations that "passed between your Ladyship's generous Brother and me; his kind Assurances of honourable Love to me; my Acknowledgments of Unworthiness to him; Mrs. Jewkes's respectful Change of Behaviour towards me; Mr. B's Reconciliation to Mr.

C 4 Williams;

" Williams; his introducing me to the good Fa-" milies in the Neighbourhood, and avowing before " them his honourable Intentions. A Visit from " my honest Father, who, (not knowing what to " conclude from the Letter I wrote to him before " I returned to your honoured Brother, defiring my " Papers from him) came in great Anxiety of Heart " to know the worst, doubting I had at last been " caught by a Stratagem that had ended in my Ruin. " His joyful Surprise to find how happy I was likely " to be. All the Hopes given me, answered, by the " private Celebration of our Nuptials - An Ho-" nour fo much above all that my utmost Ambition " could make me aspire to, and which I never can " deferve! Your Ladyship's Arrival, and Anger, " not knowing I was actually married, but sup-" posing me a vile wicked Creature; in which Case " I should have deserved the worst of Usage. Mr. " B's angry Lessons to me, for daring to interfere, " though I thought in the tenderest and most dutiful " Manner, between your Ladyship and himself. "The most acceptable Goodness and Favour of " your Ladyship afterwards to me, of which, as be-" comes me, I shall ever retain the most grateful " Senfe. My return to this sweet Mansion in a " Manner so different from my quitting it, where " I had been fo happy for Four Years, in paying my " Duty to the best of Mistresses, your Ladyship's " excellent Mother, to whose Goodness in taking " me from my poor honest Parents, and giving me " what Education I have, I owe, under God, my " Happiness. The Joy of good Mrs. Fervis, Mr. " Longman, and all the Servants, on this Occasion. " Mr. B's acquainting me with Miss Godfrey's Af-" fair, and prefenting to me the pretty Miss Good-" win, at the Dairy-house. Our Appearance at " Church, the Favour of the Gentry in the Neigh-" bourhood, who, knowing your Ladyship had not a disdained " diffained to look upon me, and to be favourable to me, came the more readily into a neighbourly

" Intimacy with me, and still so much the more readily, as the continued Kindness of my dear

" Benefactor, and his condescending Deportment

" to me before them, (as if I had been worthy of the

" Honour done me) did Credit to his own generous

" Act."

These, my Lady, down to my good Parents setting out to this Place, in order to be settled by my honoured Benefactor's Bounty, in the Kentish Farm, are the most material Contents of my remaining Papers: And though they might be the most agreeable to those for whom only they were written, yet, as they were principally Matters of course, after what your Ladyship has with you; as the Joy of my fond Heart can be better judged of by your Ladyship, than described by me; and as your Ladyship is acquainted with all the Particulars than can be worthy of any other Person's Notice but my dear Parents; I and sure your Ladyship will dispense with your Commands; and I make it my humble Request, that you will.

For, Madam, you must needs think, that when my Doubts were dispelled; when I was confident all my Trials were over; when I had a Prospect before me of being so abundantly rewarded for what I had fuffered; when every Hour role upon me with new Delight, and fraught with fresh Inflances of generous Kindness from such a dea: Gentleman, my Master, my Benefactor, the fon of my honoured Lady; your Ladyship must needs think, I say, that I must be too much affected, my Heart must be too much opened; and especially as it then, (relieved from its patt Anxieties and Fears, which had kept down and damped the latent Flame) first discovered to me Impressions of which before I hardly thought it susceptible.-So that it is scarce possible, that my Foy and my Prudence, Prudence, if I were to be tried by fuch Judges of Delicacy and Decorum as Lord and Lady Davers, the honoured Countess, and Lady Betty, could be so intimately, so laudably coupled, as were to be wished: Altho', indeed, the continued Sense of my Unworthiness, and the Disgrace the dear Gentleman would bring upon himself by his generous Goodness to me, always went hand-in-hand with my Joy and my Prudence; and what these Considerations took from the former, being added to the latter, kept me steadier, and more equal to myself, than otherwise it was possible such a young Creature as I could have been.

Wherefore, my dear good Lady, I hope I fland excused, and shall not bring upon myself the Censure

of being disobedient to your Commands.

Befides, Madam, fince you inform me, that my good Lord Davers will attend your Ladyship hither, I should never dare to look his Lordship in the Face, if all the Emotions of my Heart on fuch affecting Occasions, stood confessed to his Lordship; and, indeed, if I am ashamed they should to your Ladyship and to the Counters, and Lady Betty, whose Goodness must induce you all three to think favourably, in fuch Circumstances, of one who is of your own Sex, how would it concern me, that the same should appear before such Gentlemen as my Lord and his Nephew?-Indeed I could not look up to either of them in the Sense of this. - And give me leave to hope, that some of the Scenes in the Letters your Ladyship had, were not read to Gentlemen: - Your Ladyship must needs know which I mean, and will think of my two grand Trials of all.-For though I was the innocent Subject of wicked Attempts, and fo cannot, I hope, fuffer in any one's Opinion for what I could not help; yet, for your dear Brother's Sake, as well as for the Decency of the Matter, one would not, when one shall have the Honour to appear before my Lord and his Nephew, be looked upon, methinks,

methinks, with that Levity of Eye and Thought, which, perhaps, hard-hearted Gentlemen may pass upon one, by reason of those very Scenes, which would move Pity and Concern in a good Lady's

Breaft, for a poor Creature fo attempted.

So, my dear Lady, be pleased to let me know, if the Gentlemen have heard all.—I hope they have not.

—And be pleased also to point out to me such Parts of my Conduct as deserve Blame: Indeed, I will try to make a good Use of your Censure, and am sure I shall be thankful for it;—for it will make me hope to be more and more worthy of the Honour I have, of being exalted into such a distinguished Family, and the Right the best of Gentlemen has given me to style myself

Your Ladyship's most humble

And most obliged Servant,

P. B.

LETTER VIII.

From Lady DAVERS, in Reply,

My dear PAMELA,

YOU have given us all a great Disappointment in declining to oblige me with the Sequel of your Papers. I was a little out of Humour with you at first;—I must own I was:—For I cannot bear Denial, when my Heart is set upon any-thing. But Lady Betty became your Advocate, and said, She thought you very excusable; since, no doubt, there might be many tender Things, circumstanced as you were, which might be well enough for your Parents to see, but for nobody else; and Relations of our Side least of all, whose future Intimacy, and frequent Visits, might give Occasions for Raillery and C 6

Remarks, that might not be always agreeable. I regarded her Apology for you the more, because I knew it was a great Baulk to her, that you did not comply with my Request. But now, Child, when you know me more, you will find, that if I am obliged to give up one Point, I always insist on another, as near it as I can, in order to see if it be only one thing I am to be refused, or every thing; in which last Case

I know how to take my Measures, and refent.

Now, therefore, this is what I infift upon; That you correspond with me in the same manner you did with your Parents, and acquaint me with every Paffage that is of Concern to you; beginning with your Accounts how you fpent your Time, both of you, when you were in Kent; for, you must know, we are all taken with your Duty to your Parents, and the Difcretion of the good Couple, and think you have given a very edifying Example of filial Piety to all who shall hear your Story; for if so much Duty is owing to Parents, where nothing can be done for one, how much more is to be expected, where there is a Power to add to the natural Obligation, all the Comforts and Conveniencies of Life? We People in Upper Life, you must know, love to hear our Gratitude and unexpected Benefits operate upon honest Minds, who have little more than plain artless Nature for their Guide; and we flatter ourselves with the Hopes of many a delightful Hour, by your Means, in this our folitary Situation, as it will be, if we are obliged to pass the next Winter in it, as my Lord and the Earl threaten me, and the Counters, and Lady Betty, that we shall. Then let us hear of every-thing that gives you Joy or Trouble: And if my Brother carries you to Town, for the Winter, while he attends Parliament, the Advices you will be able to give us of what passes in London, and of the public Entertainments and Divertions he will take you to, as you will relate them in your own artlefs

and natural Observations, will be as diverting to us, as if we were at them ourselves. For a young Creature of your good Understanding, to whom all these Things will be quite new, will give us, perhaps, a better Taste of them, their Beauties and Defects, than we might have before. For we People of Quality go to those Places, dres'd out and adorn'd in such Manner, outvying one another, as if we confidered ourselves as so many Parts of the public Entertainment, and are too much pleased with ourselves to be able fo to attend to what we fee, as to form a right Judgment of it: And, indeed, we, some of us, behave with fo much Indifference to the Entertainment, as if we thought ourselves above being diverted by what we come to fee, and as if our View was rather to trifle away our Time, than to improve ourselves by attending to the Story or Action.

See, Pamela, I shall not make an unworthy Correspondent altogether, for I can get into thy grave Way, and moralize a little now-and-then: And if you'll promise to oblige me by your constant Correspondence in this Way, and divest yourself of all Restraint, as if you were writing to your Parents, (and I can tell you, you'll write to one who will be as candid and as favourable to you as they can be) then I am sure we shall have Truth and Nature from you; and these are Things which we are generally so much listed above by our Conditions, that

we hardly know what they are.

But I have written enough for one Letter; and yet, having more to fay, I will, after this, fend another, without waiting for your Answer, which you may give to both together; and am, mean time,

Yours, &c.

B. DAVERS.

LETTER

LETTER IX.

Dear PAMELA,

I AM very glad thy honest Man has let thee into the Affair of Sally Godfrey. But pr'ythee, Pamela, give us an Account of the Manner in which he did it, and of thy Thoughts upon it; for that is a critical Case; and according as he has represented it, so shall I know what to say of it before you and him: For I would not make Mischief between you for the World.

This, let me tell you, will be a trying Part of your Conduct. For he loves the Child; and will judge of you by your Conduct towards it. He dearly loved her Mother; and, notwithstanding her Fault, she well deferved it: For the was a fentible, ay, and a modest Lady, and of an antient and genteel Family. But he was heir to a noble Estate, was of a bold and enterprifing Spirit, fond of Intrigue-Don't let this concern you-You'll have the greater Happiness. and Merit too if you can hold him-And, 'tis my Opinion, if any-body can, you will.—Then he did not like the young Lady's Mother, who fought artfully to entrap him. So that the poor Girl, divided between her Inclination for him, and her Duty to her defigning Mother, gave into the Plot upon him; and he thought himself-vile Wretch as he was, for all that;—at Liberty to fet up Plot against Plot, and the poor Lady's Honour was the Sacrifice.

I hope you fpoke well of her to him. I hope you received the Child kindly.—I hope you had Presence of Mind to do this.—For it was a nice Part to act; and all his Observations were up, I dare say, on the Occasion.—Do, let me hear how it was: There's my good Pamela, do. And write, I charge you, freely, and without Restraint; for although I am not

your Mother, yet am I bis eldest Sister, you know—and as such—come, I will say so, in hopes you'll oblige me—your Sister, and so entitled to expect a Compliance with my Request: For is there not a Duty in Degree, to elder Sisters from younger!

As to our Remarks upon your Behaviour, they have been much to your Credit, I can tell you that: But, nevertheless, I will, to encourage you to enter into this requested Correspondence with me, confult Lady Betty, and will go over your Papers again, and try to find fault with your Conduct; and if we can see any-thing censurable, will freely let you know our Minds.

But, before-hand, I can tell you, we shall be agreed in one Opinion; and that is, that we know not who would have acted as you have done, upon the whole.

So, Pamela, you see I put myself upon the same Foot of Correspondence with you.—Not that I will promise to answer every Letter: No, you must not expect that-Your Part will be a kind of Narrative purposely designed to entertain us here; and I hope to receive Six, Seven, Eight or Ten Letters, as it may happen, before I return one: But such a Part I will bear in it, as shall let you know our Opinion of your Proceedings, and Relations of Things .-And as you wish to be found fault with, as you fay, you shall freely have it, (though not in a splenetick or ill-natured way) as often as you give Occasion. Now, you must know, Pamela, I have two Views in this. One is, to fee how a Man of my Brother's Spirit, who has not denied himself any genteel Liberties, (for it must be owned he never was a common Town Rake, and had always Dignity in his Roguery) will behave himself to you, and in Wedlock, which used to be freely fneered by him: The next, that I may love you more and more, which it will be enough to make me do, I dare fay, as by your Letters I shall

be more and more acquainted with you, as well as by Conversation; so that you can't be off, if you would.

I know, however, you will have noe Objection to this; and that is, that your Family Affairs will require your Attention, and not give you the Time you used to have for this Employment. But consider, Child, the Station you are raised to does not require you to be quite a domestic Animal. You are lifted up to the Rank of a Lady, and you must act up to it, and not think of fetting fuch an Example, as will derive upon you the Ill-will and Censure of other Ladies .- For will any of our Sex visit one who is continually employing herfelf in fuch Works as either must be a Reproach to herself, or to them ?-You'll have nothing to do but to give Orders. You will confider yourfelf as the Task-mistress, and the common Herd of Female Servants, as fo many Negroes directing themselves by your Nod; or yourself as the Mafter-wheel, in some beautiful Piece of Mechanism, whose dignified grave Motions is to set a-going all the Under-wheels, with a Velocity fuitable to their respective Parts.—Let your Servants, under your Direction, do all that relates to Houshold Management: They cannot write to entertain and instruct, as you can: So what will you have to do?-I'll answer my own Question: In the first place, Endeavour to please your sovereign Lord and Master; and let me tell you, any other Woman in England, be her Quality ever so high, would have found enough to do to fucceed in that. Secondly, To receive and pay Visits, in order, for his Credit as well as your own, to make your fashionable Neighbours fond of you. Then, thirdly, you will have Time upon your Hands (as your Monarch himself rises early, and is tolerably regular for such a Brazen-face as he has been) to write to me, in the Manner I have mentioned, and expect; and I fee plainly, by your Style, Style, that nothing can be easier for you, than to do this.

And thus, and with Reading, may your Time be filled up with Reputation to yourfelf, and Delight to others, till a fourth Employment puts itself upon you; and that is (shall I tell you in one Word, without mincing the Matter;) a Succession of brave Boys, to perpetuate a Family that has for many hundred Years been esteemed worthy and eminent, and which, being now reduced, in the direct Line, to him and me, expects it from you; or else, let me tell you, (nor will I baulk it) my Brother, by descending to the wholesome Cot—Excuse me, Pamela,—will want one Apology for his Conduct, be as excellent as you may.

I say this Child, not to reflect upon you, since the Thing is done; for I love you dearly, and will love you more and more—but to let you know what is expected from you, and to encourage you in the Prospect that is already opening to you both, and to me, who have the Welfare of the Family I sprung from so much at Heart, although I know this will be attended with some Anxieties to a Mind so thoughtful

O but this puts me in mind of your Solicitude for fear the Gentlemen should have seen every-thing contained in your Letters—But this I will particu-

larly speak to in a third Letter, having filled my Paper on all Sides: And am, till then,

Yours, &c.

B. DAVERS.

You see, and I hope will take it as a Favour, that I break the Ice, and begin first in the indispenfably expected Correspondence between us.

LETTER X.

From the Same.

A ND so, Pamela, you are very solicitous to know, If the Gentlemen have seen every Part of your Papers? I can't say but they have: Nor, except in regard to the Reputation of your saucy Man, do I see why the Part, you hint at, might not be read by those to whom the rest might be shewn.

I can tell you, Lady Betty, who is a very nice and delicate Lady, had no Objection to any Part, though read before Men: Only now-and-then, crying out-O the vile Man: - See, Lord Davers, what Wretches you Men are !- And, commisferating you, Ah! the poor Pamela!-And expressing her Impatience to hear on, how you escaped at this Time, and at that, and rejoicing in your Escape.-And now-and-then, O Lady Davers, what a vile Brother you have !-I hate him perfectly.—The poor Girl cannot be made amends for all this, though he has married her. Who, that knows these Things of him, would wish him to be hers, with all his Advantages of Person, Mind and Fortune?—And such-like Expressions in your Praise, and condemning him, and his wicked Attempts.

But I can tell you this, that except one had heard every Tittle of your Danger; how near you were to Ruin, and how little he stood upon taking any Measures to effect his vile Purposes, even daring to attempt you in the Presence of a good Woman, which was a Wickedness that every wicked Man could not be guilty of; I say, except one had known these things, one should not have been able to judge of the Merit of your Resistance, and how shocking those Attempts were to your Virtue, insomuch that Life itself was endangered by them: Nor, let me tell you,

could

could I in particular, have so well justified him for marrying you, (I mean with respect to his own proud and haughty Temper of Mind) if there had been Room to think he could have had you upon easier Terms.

It was necessary, Child, on twenty Accounts, that we, your and his Well-wishers and his Relations, should know that he had tried every Stratagem, and made use of every Contrivance, to subdue you to his Purpose, before he married you: And how would it have answered to his intrepid Character, and Pride of Heart, had we not been particularly let into the Nature of those Attempts, which you so nobly resisted, as to convince us all, that you have deserved the good Fortune you have met with, as well as all the kind and respectful Treat-

ment he can possibly shew you?

Nor ought you to be concerned who fees any the most tender Parts of your Story, except, as I said, for his Sake: for it must be a very unvirtuous Mind, that can form any other Ideas from what you relate, than those of Terror and Pity for you. Your Expressions are too delicate to give the nicest Ear Offence, except at him. -- You paint no Scenes but fuch as make his Wickedness odious; and that Gentleman, much more Lady, must have a very corrupt Heart, who could, from such Circumstances of Diftrefs, make any Reflections, but what should be to your Honour, and in abhorrence of fuch Actions. Indeed, Child, I am so convinced of this, that by this Rule I would judge of any Man's Heart in the World, better than by a thousand Declarations and Protestations. I do assure you, rakish as Jackey is, and freely as I doubt not that Lord Davers has formerly lived, (for he has been a Man of Pleafure) they gave me by their Behaviour on these tenderer Occasions, Reason to think they had more Virtue, than not to be very apprehensive for your Safety; and my Lord feveral Times exclaimed, That he could not have thought his Brother fuch a Libertine neither.

Befides, Child, were not these Things written in confidence to your Mother? And, bad as his Actions were to you, if you had not recited all you could recite, would there not have been room for any one, who should have seen what you wrote, to imagine they had been still worse? - And how could the Terror be supposed to have had such Effects upon you, as to endanger your Life, without imagining you had undergone the worst that a vile Man could offer, unless you had told us, what that was which he did offer, and so put a Bound, as it were, to one's apprehenfive Imaginations of what you fuffered, which otherwise must have been injurious to your Purity,

though you could not help it.

Moreover, Pamela, it was but doing Justice to the Libertine himself to tell your Mother the whole Truth, that the might know he was not to very abandoned, but that he could stop short of the Execution of his wicked Purpoles, which he apprehended, if purfued, would destroy the Life, that, of all Lives, he would choose to preserve; and you owed also thus much to your Parents Peace of Mind, that after all their distracting Fears for you, they might see they had Reason to rejoice in an uncontaminated Daughter. And one cannot but reflect, now all is over, and he has made you his Wife, that it must be a Satisfaction to the wicked Man, as well as to yourfelf, that he was not more guilty than he was, and that he took no more Liberties than he did.

For my own part, I must say, that I could not have accounted for your Fits, by any Descriptions fhort of those you give? and had you been less particular in the Circumstances, I should have judged he had been still worse, and your Person though not your Mind, less pure, than his Pride would expect from the Woman he should marry; for this is the Case of all Rakes, that though they indulge in all manner of Libertinism themselves, there is no Class of Men who exact greater Delicacy than they, from the Persons they marry; though they care not how bad they make the Wives, the Sisters, and Daughters of others.

I have run into Length again; so will only add, (and send all my Three Letters together) that we all blame you in some Degree for bearing the wicked fewkes in your Sight, after the most impudent Assistance she gave to his lewd Attempt; much less, we think, ought you to have lest her in her Place, and rewarded her: For her Vileness could hardly be equalled by the worst Actions of the most abandoned Procuress.

I know the Difficulties you labour under, in his arbitrary Will, and in his Intercession for her: But Lady Betty rightly observes, that he knew what a vile Woman she was, when he put you into her Power, and no doubt employed her, because he was sure she would answer all his Purposes; and that therefore she should have had very little Opinion of the Sincerity of his Resormation, while he was so solicitous in keeping her there, and in having her put upon a foot in the Present on your Nuptials with honest Jervis.

She would, she says, had she been in your Case, have had one Struggle for her Dismission, let it have been taken as it would; and he that was so well pleased with your Virtue, must have thought this a natural Consequence of it, if he was in earnest to reclaim.

o su y - , a - d

t

d

r

n

I know not whether you shew him all I write, or not: But I have written this last Part in the Cover, as well for want of Room, as that you may keep it from him, if you please. Though if you think it will serve any good End, I am not against shewing to him all I write. For I must ever speak my Mind, though I were to smart for it; and that nobody can, or has the Heart to make me do, but my bold Brother. So, Pamela, for this time, Adieu.

LET-

LETTER XI.

My good Lady,

I AM honoured with your Ladyship's Three Letters, the Contents of which are highly obliging to me: And I should be inexcusable if I did not comply with your Injunctions, and be very proud and thankful for your Ladyship's Condescension in accepting of my poor Scribble, and promifing me fuch a rich and invaluable Return; of which you have given me already fuch ample and fuch delightful Inftances. I will not plead my Defects, to excuse my Obedience. I only fear, that the Awe which will be always upon me, when I write to your Ladyship, will lay me under so great a Restraint, that I shall fall short even of the Merit my Papers have already made for me, through your kind Indulgence. But nevertheless, sheltering myself under your Goodness, I will chearfully comply with every thing your Ladythip expects from me, that is in my Power to do.

You will give me leave, Madam, to put into some little Method, the Particulars of what you desire of me, that I may speak to them all: For, since you are so good as to excuse me from sending the rest of my Papers, (which indeed would not bear in many Places) I will omit nothing that shall tend to convince you of my Readiness to obey you in

every thing elfe.

First then, your Ladyship would have the Particulars of the happy Fortnight we passed in *Kent*, on one of the most agreeable Occasions that could befal me.

Secondly, An Account of the Manner in which your dear Brother acquainted me with the affecting Story of Miss Godfrey, and my Behaviour upon it.

And,

And, thirdly, I presume your Ladyship, and Lady Betty, expect that I should say something upon your welcome Remarks on my Conduct towards Mrs.

Fewkes.

The other Particulars contained in your Ladyship's kind Letters will naturally fall under one or other of these three Heads—But expect not, my Lady, though I begin in Method thus, that I shall keep up to it. If your Ladyship will not allow for me, and keep in view the poor Pamela Andrews in all I write, but will have Mrs. B. in your Eye, what will become of me?—But, indeed, I promise myself so much Improvement from this Correspondence, that I enter upon it with a greater Delight than I can express, notwithstanding the mingled Awe and Dissidence that will accompany me, in every Part of the agreeable Task.

To begin with the first Article:

Your dear Brother and my honest Parents—(I know your Ladyship will expect from me, that on all Occasions I should speak of them with the Duty that becomes a good Child)—I say, then, your dear Brother, and they, and myself, set out on the Monday Morning for Kent, passing through St. Albans to London, at both which Places we stopped a Night: for our dear Benefactor would make us take easy Journeys; and on Wednesday Evening we arrived at the sweet Place allotted for the good Couple. We were attended only by Abraham and John, on Horseback; for Mr. Colbrand, having sprained his Foot, was in the Travelling-Coach with the Cook, the House-Maid, and Polly Barlow, a genteel new Servant, whom Mrs. Brooks recommended to wait on me.

Mr. Longman had been down there for a Fortnight, employed in fettling the Terms of an additional Purchase to this pretty well-wooded and well-watered

Estate;

Estate; and the Account he gave of his Proceedings was very satisfactory to his honoured Principal. He told us, he had much ado to dissuade the Tenants from pursuing a formed Resolution of meeting their Landlord on Horseback, at some Miles Dissance; for he had informed them when he expected us: But knowing how desirous Mr. B. was of being retired while he staid here this time, he had ventured to assure them, that when every thing was settled, and the new Purchase actually entered upon, they would have his Presence among them now-and-then; and that he would introduce them all at different times to their worthy Landlord, before we left the Country.

The House is large and very commodious; and we found every thing about it, and in it, exceeding neat and convenient; which was owing to the worthy Mr. Longman's Care and Direction. The Ground is well stocked, the Barns and Out-houses in excellent Repair, and my poor Father and Mother have only to wish, that they and I may be deserving of half the Goodness we experience from the boun-

tiful Mind of your good Brother.

But indeed, Madam, I have the Pleasure of discovering every Day more and more, that there is not a better disposed, and more generous Man in the World than himself, insomuch that I verily think, he has not been fo careful to conceal his bad Actions as his good ones. His Heart is naturally beneficent, and his Beneficence is the Gift of God to him for the most excellent Purposes, as I have often been so free as to tell him.-Pardon me, my dear Lady: I wish I may not be impertinently grave: But I find a great many Inflances of his confiderate Charity, which hardly any body knew of, and which, fince I have been his Almoner, could not avoid coming to my Knowledge.—But this, possibly, is no News to your Ladyship. Every body knows the generous Goodness of your Own Heart: Every one that

that wanted Relief tasted the Bounty of your excellent Mother, my late honoured Lady: So that it is a Family Grace, and I have no need to speak of it to

you, Madam.

This cannot, my dear Lady, I hope, be construed as if I would hereby suppose ourselves less obliged. Indeed I know nothing so god-like in Human Nature as this Disposition to do Good to our Fellow-Creatures; for is it not following immediately the Example of that gracious Providence which every Minute is conferring Bleffings upon us all, and by giving Power to the Rich, makes them but the Difpenfers of its Benefits to those that want them? But yet as there are but too many Objects of Compassion, and as the most beneficent Mind in the World cannot, like Omnipotence, do good to all, how much are they obliged who are diffinguished from others? And this, kept in mind, will always contribute to make the Benefited receive, as thankfully as they ought, the Favours of the Obliger.

I know not if I write to be understood in all I mean; but my grateful Heart is so over-filled when it is employed on this Subject, that methinks I want to say a great deal more at the same time that I am apprehensive I say too much.—Yet, perhaps, the Copies of the Letters I here inclose to your Lady-ship, (that marked [I.] written by me to my Father and Mother, on our Return hither from Kent; that marked [II.] from my dear Father in answer to it, and that marked [III.] mine in reply to his *) will (at the same time that they may convince your Ladyship, that I will conceal nothing from you in the Course of this Correspondence, that may in the least amuse and givert you, or that may better explain our grateful Sentiments) in a great measure answer, what your

^{*} See Letters I. II. III. of this Volume.

Ladyship expects from me, as to the happy Fortnight

we passed in Kent.

And here I will conclude this Letter, chusing to fuspend the Correspondence, till I know from your Ladyship, whether it will not be too low, too idle for your Attention; whether you will not dispense with your own Commands for my writing to you when you see I am so little likely to answer what you may possibly expect from me; or whether, if you insist upon my Scribbling, you would have me write in any other Way, be less tedious, less serious—in short, less or more any thing. For all that is in my Fower, your Ladyship may command from

Madam,

Your obliged and faithful Servant,

P. B.

Your dearest Brother, from whose Knowledge I would not keep any thing that shall take up any considerable Portion of my Time, gives me leave to proceed in this Correspondence, if you command it: and is pleased to say, He will content himself to see such Parts of it, and only such Parts, as I shall shew him, or read to him— Is not this very good, Madam?—O my Lady, you don't know how happy I am!

LETTER XII.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B.

My dear PAMELA,

YOU very much oblige me by your chearful Compliance with my Request. I leave it intirely to you to write in what Manner you please, and as you shall be in the Humour to write, when you take up your Pen; for then I shall have you write with

with lefs Restraint: For, you must know, that what we admire in you, are Truth and Nature, and not studied or elaborate Epistles. We can hear at Church or we can read in our Closets, sifty good Things that we expect not from you; but we cannot receive from any body else the Pleasure of Sentiments slowing with that artless Ease, which so much affects us when we read your Letters. Then, my sweet Girl, your Gratitude, your Prudence, your Integrity of Heart, your Humility, shine so much in all your Letters and Thoughts, that no Wonder my Brother

loves you as he does.

But I shall make you proud, I doubt, and so by Praise ruin those Graces which we admire, and, but for that, cannot praife you too much. ———In my Conscience, if they canst hold as thou hast begun, I believe thou wilt have him ail to thefelf; and that was once, more than I thought ever any Woman on this Side the Seventieth Year of his Age would ever be able to fay. The Letters to and from your Parents we are charmed with, and the communicating of them to me, I take to be as great an Inflance of your Confidence in me, as it is of your Judgment and Prudence; for you cannot but think, that we his Relations are a little watchful over your Conduct, and have our Eyes upon you, to observe what Use you are likely to make of the Power you have over your Man, with respect to your own Relations.

Hitherto all is unexampled Prudence, and you take the right Method to reconcile even the proudest of us to your Marriage, and make us not only love you, but respect your Parents, because their Honesty will, I perceive, be their distinguishing Character, and they will not forget themselves, nor their former Condition.

I can tell you, you are exactly right; for if you were to be an *Increacher*, as the good old Man calls D 2

it, my Brother would be one of the first to see it, and he would gradually think less and less of you, till possibly he might come to despise you, and to repent of his Choice: For the least Shadow of an Imposition, or low Cunning, or mean Selfishness, he cannot bear.

In fhort, you are a charming Girl; and Lady Betty fays so too; and, moreover, adds, that if he makes you not the best and faithfullest of Husbands, he cannot deserve you, for all his Fortune and Birth.—

And, in my Heart, I begin to think so too.

But won't you oblige me with the Sequel of your Letter to your Father? for, you promise, my dear charming Scribbler, in that you fent to me, to write again to his Letter; and I long to fee how you answer the latter Part of it, about your Relations defiring already to come and live with him. I know what I expect from you. But let it be what it will, fend it to me, exactly as you wrote it; and I shall see whether I have Reason to praise or to reprove you. For furely, Pamela, you must leave one Room to blame you for fomething. Indeed I can hardly bear the Thought, that you should so much excel as you do, and have more Prudence, by Nature, as it were, than the best of us get in a Course of the genteelest Education, and with fifty Advantages, at least in Conversation, that you could not have, by reason of my Mother's retired Life, while you were with her, and your close Attendance on her Person.

But I'll tell you what has been a great Improvement to you: It is your own Writings. This Itch of Scribbling has been a charming Help to you. For here, having a natural Fund of good Senfe, and a Prudence above your Years, you have with the Observations these have enabled you to make, been Flint and Steel too, as I may say, to yourself: So that you have struck Fire when you pleased, wanting nothing but a few dryed Leaves, like the First Pair, in old Du Bartas, to serve as Tinder to catch

your animating Sparks. So that reading constantly, and thus using yourself to write, and enjoying besides the Benefit of a good Memory, everything you heard or read became your own; and not only so, but was improved by passing through more subtrious Ducts and Vehicles; like some sine Fruit grafted upon a common Free-stock, whose more exuberant Juices serve to bring to quicker and greater Perfection the downy Perich, or the smooth Nectarine with its crimson Blush.

Really, Pamela, I believe, I too, shall improve by writing to you—Why, you done Saucy-face, at this rate, you'll make every one that convertes with you, better, and wifer, and wittier too, as far as I know, than they ever before thought there was Room

for them to be.

As so my own part, I begin to like what I have writen a fall, I think; and your Correspondence with a start vive the poetical Ideas that used to fire my Mind, before I entered into the drowsy married Life; for my good Lord Davers's Turn happens not to be to Books; and so by Degrees, my Implication was in a manner quenched, and I, as a dutiful Wife Lioudd, endeavoured to form my Tafte

by that of the Man I chofe.

But after all, Pamela, you are not to be a little proud (I can tell you that) of my Correspondence; and I could not have thought it e'er would have come to this: But you'll have the Penetration to observe, that I am the more free and unreserved, to encourage you to write without Restraint: for already you have made us a Family of Writers and Readers; so that Lord Davers himself is become enamoured of your Letters, and desires of all Things he may hear read every one that passes between us. Nay, Jackey, for that matter, who was the most thoughtless, whistling, fauntring Fellow you ever knew, and whose Delight in a Book ran no higher than a Song

or a Catch, now comes in with an inquiring Face, and vows he'll fet Pen to Paper, and turn Letter-writer himself; and intends (if my Brother won't take it amis, he says) to begin to you, provided he

could be fure of an Answer.

I have twenty Things still to fay; for you have unlocked all our Boloms. And yot I intended not to write above ten or a dozen Lines when I began;—only to tell you, that I would have you take your own Way, in your Subjects, and in your Style.—And if you will but give me Hope, that you are in the Way I so much wish to have you is, I will then call mylest your affectionate Sister; but till then, it shall only barely be

Your Correspondent,

B. DAVERS.

You'll proceed with the Account of your Kintiffs. Affair, I doubt not.

LETTER XIII.

My dear good Lady,

HAT kind, what generous Things are your pleased to say of your happy Correspondent! And what Reason have I to value myself on such an Advantage as is now before me, if I am capable of improving it as I ought, from a Correspondence with so noble and so admired a Lady! I wish I be not now proud indeed!—To be praised by such a Genius, and my honoured Benefactor's worthy Sister, whose Favour, next to his, it was always my chief Ambition to obtain, is what would be enough to fill with Vanity a steadier and a more equal Mind, than mine.

I have heard from my late honoured Lady, what a fine Pen her beloved Daughter was Miftress of,

when she pleased to take it up. But I never could have had the Presumption, but from your Ladyship's own Motion, to hope to be in any manner the Subject of it, much less to be called your Correspondent.

Indeed, Madam, I am proud, very proud of this Honour, and confider it as fuch a Heightening to my Pleasures, as only that could give; and I will set about obeying your Ladyship without Reserve.

But permit me, in the first place, to disclaim any Merit, from my own poor Writings, to that Improvement which your Goodness imputes to me. What I have to boast, of that Sort, is owing principally, if it deserves Commendation, to my late excellent

Ladv.

It is hardly to be imagined what Pains her Ladyship took with her poor Servant. Besides making me keep a Book of her Charities dispensed by my Hands, she caused me always to fet down in my Way, the Cases of the Distressed, their Griefs from their Misfortunes, and their Joys in her bountiful Relief; and fo I was entered early into the various Turns that affected worthy Hearts, and was taught the better to regulate my own, especially by the Help of the fine Observations which my good Lady used to make to me, when I read to her what I wrote. For many a Time has her generous Heart overflowed with Pleasure at my Remarks, and with Praises; and I was her good Girl, her dear Pamela, her hopeful Maiden; and the would fometimes fnatch my Hand with Transport, and draw me to her, and vouchfafe to kifs me; and always was faying, what she would do for me, if God spared her, and I continued to be deferving.

O my dear Lady! you cannot think what an Encouragement this condescending Behaviour and Goodness was to me. Indeed, Madam, you cannot

think it.

I used to throw myself at her Feet, and embrace her Knees; and, my Eyes streaming with Tears of Joy, would often cry, O continue to me, my dearest Lady, the Blessing of your Favour, and kind Instructions, and it is all your happy, happy Pamela, can wish for.

But I will proceed to obey your Ladyship, and write with as much Freedom as I possibly can: For you must not expect, that I can entirely divest my-self of that Awe which will necessarily bey me under a greater Restraint, than if I was writing to my Father and Mother, whose Partiality for their Daughter made me, in a manner, secure of their

good Opinions.

And now, that I may shorten the Work before me, in the Account I am to give of the fweet Fortnight that we passed in Kent, I inclose not only the Copy of the Letter your Ladvihip defired me to find you, but my Father's Answer to it, which, with those you have already, will set before your Ladyship all you want to fee in relation to the Defire forme of my Kindred have to live with my Father, and my own Opinion on the Occasion. And I am humbly confident you will join in Sentiment with me: For Persons are less doubtful of Approbation when their Minds are incapable of dark Referves, or fuch Views as they would be afraid should be detected by any watchful Observer of their Conduct: And your Ladyship gives me double Pleasure, that you are pleafed to have an Eye upon mine; first, Because I hope it will be fuch as will generally bear the ftricteft Scrutiny; and next, because, when my Actions fall fhort of my Intentions, I prefume to hope your Ladyship will be as kind a Monitor to me, as you are a Correspondent; and then I shall have an Opportunity to correct myfelf, and be, as near as my flender Talents will permit, what your Ladyship would have me to be.

As the Letters I fent before, and those I now fend, will let your Ladyship into several Particulars; such as a brief Description of the House and Farm, and your honoured Brother's Intentions of retiring thither now-and-then; of the Happiness and Gratitude of my dear Parents, and their Wishes to be able to deserve the Comforts his Goodness has heaped upon them; and that in stronger Lights than I am able to set them; I will only, in a summary Manner, men-

tion the rest: And particularly,

That the Behaviour of my dear Benefactor to me. to my Parents, to Mr. Longman, and to the Tenants, was one continued Series of Benignity and Condefcenfion. He endeavoured, in every kind and generous way, to encourage the good Couple to be free and chearful with him; and feeing them unable to get over that Awe and Respect, which they owe him above all Mankind, and which they fought to pay him on all Occasions, he would take their Hands, and more than once called them by the nearest and dearest Names of Relationship, as if they were his own Parents; and I believe would have diftinguished them oftener in this Manner, but that he faw them too much affected with his Goodness to bear the Honour (as my dear Father fays in his first Letter) with Equalness of Temper; and he seemed al ways to delight in being particularly kind to them before Strangers, and before the Tenants, and before Mr. Sorby, and Mr. Bennet, and Mr. Shepherd, three of the principal Gentlemen in the Neighbourhood, who with their Ladies came to vifit us, and whofe Vifits we all returned; for your dear Brother would not permit my Father and Mother to decline the Invitation of those worthy Families.

Judge you, my dear Lady, with what a Joy these kind Distinctions, and his sweet Behaviour, must fill their honest Hearts. Judge of my grateful Sentiments and Acknowlegements; of these hourly Inflances of his Goodness; and judge of the Respect with which this must inspire every one for the good Couple. And when once Mrs. Bennet had like tohave faid fomething of their former Condition, which the would have recalled in some Confusion,. and when the could not, apologized for it, the dear Gentleman faid All is well, Mrs. Bennet: No Apologies are necessary; and to shew you they are not, I'll tell you myfelf what you cannot have heard fo particularly from others, and which were I to endeavour to conceal, would be a Piece of Pride as stupid as despicable. So, in a concise Manner, he gave them an Account of my Story, fo much to my Advantage, and fo little to his own, in the ingenuous Relation of his Attempts upon me, that you can't imagine, Madam, how much the Gentry were affected by it, and how much, in particular, they applauded him for the Generolity of his Actions to me, and to my dear Parents. And your Ladyship will permit me to observe, that fince the Matter is circumflanced as it is, Policy, as well as Nobleness of Mind, obliged him to this Frankness and Acknowlegement; for having faid worfe of himself, and as mean of my Parents Fortunes, as any one could think, what remained for the Hearers but to applaud, when he had left them no Room to repreach, not to much as in Thought?

Every Day we rode out, or walked a little about the Grounds; and while we were there, he employed Hands to cut a Vista through a Coppice as they call it, or rather a little Wood, to a rising Ground; which fronting an old fashioned Balcony in the Middle of the House, he ordered it to be planted like a Grove, and a pretty Alcove to be erected on its Summit, of which he has sent them a Draught, drawn by his own Hand. And this, and a few other Alterations mentioned in my Letter to my Father, are to

be finished against we go down next,

The dear Gentleman was every Hour pressing me, while there, to take one Diversion or other, frequently upbraiding me, that I seemed not to chuse any-thing; urging me to propose sometimes what I could wish he should oblige me in, and not always to leave it to him to chuse for me: saying, He was half-asraid, that my constant Compliance with every thing he proposed, laid me sometimes under a Restraint; and he would have me have a Will of my own, since it was impossible, that it could be such as he should not take a Delight in comforming to it.

But, when (as I told him) his Goodness to me made him rather study what would oblige me than himself, even to the Prevention of all my Withes, how was it possible for me not to receive with Pleasure and Gratitude every Intimation from him, in such a Manner as that, though it might seem to be the Effect of an implicit Obedience to his Will, yet was it (nor could it be otherwise) intirely agreeable to

I will not trouble your Ladyship with any further Particulars relating to this happy Fortnight, which was made up all of white and unclouded Days, to the very last; and your Ladyship will judge better than I can describe, what a Parting there was between my dear Parents, and their honoured Benefactor and me.

We fet out, attended with the good Wishes of Crouds of Persons of all Degrees; for your dear Brother left behind him noble Instances of his Bounty; it being the first Time, as he bid Mr. Longman say, that he had been down among them since that Estate had been in his Hands.

But permit me, Madam, to observe, that I could not forbear often, very often, in this happy Period, to thank God in private, for the blessed Terms upon which I was there, to what I should have been, had I gracelessly accepted of those which formerly were ten-

dered to me; for your Ladyship will remember, that the Kentish Estate was to be Part of the Purchase of

my Infamy *.

We returned through London again, by the like eafy Journeys, but tarried not to see any thing of that vast Metropolis, any more than we did in going through it before; your beloved Brother only stopping at his Banker's, and desiring him to look out for a handfome House, which He purposes to take for his Winter Residence. He chuses it to be about the new Buildings called Hanover-Square; and he left Mr. Longman there to see one, which his Banker believed would be fit for him.

And thus, my dear good Lady, I have answered your first Commands, by the Help of the Letters which passed between my dear Parents and me; and conclude this, with the Assurance that I am, with

high Respect,

Your Ladyship's most obliged

and faithful Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XIV.

. My dearest Lady,

I NOW set myself to obey your Ladyship's second Command, which is, to give an Account in what Manner your dear Brother broke to me the Affair of the unfortunate Miss Godfrey, with my Behaviour upon it: And this I cannot do better, than by transcribing the Relation I gave at the Time, in Letters

Letters to my dear Parents, which your Ladyship has not seen, in these very Words.

[See Vol. II. p. 359, beginning My dear Mr. B. down to p. 374. Line 20.]

Thus far, my dear Lady, the Relation I gave to my Parents, at the Time of my being first acquainted

with this melancholy Affair.

It is a great Pleafure to me, that I can already flatter myfelf, from the Hints you kindly give me, that I behaved as you wished I should behave. Indeed, Madam, I could not help it; for I pitied most fincerely the unhappy Lady; and though I could not but rejoice, that I had had the Grace to escape the dangerous Attempts of the dear Intriguer, yet never did the Story of any unfortunate Lady make fuch an Impression upon me, as hers did: She loved him, and believed, no doubt, he loved her too well to take ungenerous Advantages of her foft Paffion for him; and fo, by Degrees, put herfelf into his Power; and too feldom, alas! have the nobleft-minded of the feducing Sex the Mercy or the Goodness to spare the poor Creatures that do !—And then this Love, to be fure, is a fad Thing, when once it is fuffered to reign; -A perfect Tyrant!-requiring an unconditional Obedience to its arbitrary Dictates, and deeming every Instance of Discretion and Prudence, and Virtue itself, too often, but as so many Acts of Rebellion to its usurped Authority.

And then, how do even Blemishes become Perfections in those we love! Crimes themselves too often, to inconsiderate Minds, appear but as human Failings; and human Failings are a common Cause, and every frail Person excuses them for his or her

own fake.

Then 'tis another Misfortune of People in love; they always think highly of the beloved Object, and lowly of themselves; such a dismal Mortister is Love!

I fay not this, Madam, to excuse the poor Lady's Fall: Nothing can do that; because Virtue is, and ought to be, preferable to all Considerations, and to Life itself. – But, methinks, I love this dear Lady so well for the sake of her edifying Penitence, that I would fain extenuate her Crime, if I could; and the rather, as in all Probability, it was a first Love on both Sides; and so he could not appear to her as

a practifed Deceiver.

Your Ladyship will see by what I have transcribed, how I behaved myself to the dear Miss Goodwin; and I am so fond of the little Charmer, as well for the sake of her unhappy Mother, though personally unknown to me, as for the Relation she bears to the dear Gentleman, whom I am bound to love and honour, that I must beg your Ladyship's Interest to procure her to be given up to my Care, when it shall be thought proper. I am sure I shall act by her as tenderly as if I was her own Mother. And glad I am, that the poor unfaulty Baby is so justly beloved by Mr. B.

But I will here conclude this Letter, with affuring

your Ladyship, that I am

Your obliged and humble Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XV.

My good Lady,

I NOW come to your Ladyship's Remarks on my Conduct to Mrs. Fewkes; which you are pleased to think too kind and forgiving, confidering the poor Woman's Baseness.

Your Ladyship fays, "That I ought not to have borne her in my Sight, after the impudent Afif sistance she gave to his lewd Attempts; much

less to have lest her in her Place, and rewarded her." Alas! my dear Lady, what could I do? a poor Prisoner, as I was made, for Weeks together, in breach of all the Laws of Civil Society; without a Soul who durst be my Friend; and every Day expecting to be ruin'd and undone, by one of the haughtiest and most determin'd Spirits in the World!—And when it pleased God to turn his Heart, and incline him to abandon his wicked Attempts, and to profess honourable Love to me, his poor Servant, can it be thought I was to insist upon Conditions with such a Gentleman, who had me in his Power; and who, if I had provoked him, might have resumed all his wicked Purposes against me?

Indeed, I was too much overjoy'd, after all my Dangers path, (which were fo great, that I could not go to Rest, nor rise, but with such Apprehensions, that I wish'd for Death rather than Life) to think of refusing any Term that I could yield to,

and keep my Honour.

And tho' fuch noble Ladies, as your Ladyship and Lady Betty, who are born to Independency. and are hereditarily, as I may fay, on a Foo twith the highest-descended Gentleman in the Land, might have exerted a Spirit, and would have had a Right to have chosen your own Servants, and to have distributed Rewards and Punishments to the Deserving and Undeferving, at your own good Pleafure; yet what had I, a poor Girl, who ow'd even my Title to common Notice, to the Bounty of my late good Lady, and had only a kind of imputed Sightline's of Person, the? enough to make me the Subject of vile Attempts; who from a Situation of Terror and Apprehension was lifted up to an Hope, beyond my highest Ambition, and was bid to pardon the bad Woman, as an Inthance that I could forgive his own hard Ufage of me; who had experienced fo often the Violence and Impetuolity

Impetuolity of his Temper, which even his beloved Mother never ventured to oppose, till it began to sub-fide; and then, indeed, he was all Goodness and Acknowlegement; of which I could give your Ladyship more than one Instance.

What, I fay, had I to do, to take upon me Lady-

Airs, and refent?

But, my dear Ladies, (let me in this Instance, bespeak the Attention of you both) I should be inexcusable, if I did not tell you all the Truth; and that
is, that I not only forgave the poor Wretch, in
regard to his Commands, but from my own Inclination
also.

If I am wrong in faying this, I must submit it to your Ladyships; and, as I pretend not to Persection, am ready to take the Blame I shall be found to deserve in your Ladyships Judgments: But indeed, were it to do again, I verily think, I could not help forgiving her. And were I not able to say this, I should be thought to have made a mean Court to my Master's Passions, and to have done a wrong Thing with my Eyes open: Which, I humbly conceive, no one should do.

When full Power was given me over this poor Creature, (feemingly at least, tho' it might possibly have been refum'd, and I might have been re-committed to hers, had I given him reason to think I made an arrogant Use of it) you cannot imagine what a Triumph I had in my Mind over the mortify'd Guilt, which (from the highest Degree of Insolence and Imperiousness, that before had harden'd her masculine Features) appeared in her Countenance, when she found the Tables likely to be soon turn'd upon her.

The Change of Behaviour, which at first discover'd itself in a sullen Awe, and afterwards in a kind of silent Respect, shew'd me what an Instuence Power had over her; and that when she could treat her late Prisoner, when taken into Favour, so obsequiously, it was the less Wonder the bad Woman could think

it her Duty to obey Commands fo unjust, when her Obedience to them was required from her Master.

To be fure, if a Look could have killed her, after some of her bad Treatment, she had been slain over and over, as I may say: But to me, who was always taught to distinguish between the Person and the Action, I could not hold my Resentment against the poor passive Machine of Mischief, one Day together, the her Actions were so odious to me.

I should indeed except that Time of my grand Trial, when she appeared so much a Wretch to me, that I saw her not (even after * two Days that she was kept from me) without great Plutter and Emotion of Heart; and I had represented to your Brother before, how hard a Condition it was for me

to forgive fo much unwomanly Wickedness +.

But, my dear Ladies, when I confider'd the Matter in one particular Light, I could the more early forgive her; and having forgiven her, bear her in my Sight, and act by her (as a Confequence of that Forgiveness) as if she had not so horridly offended.—Else, how would it have been Forgiveness? Especially as she was asham'd of her Crime, and there

was no Fear of her repeating it.

Thus then I thought on the Occasion: Poor wretched Agent, for Purposes little less than infernal! I will forgive thee, since thy Master and my Master will have it so. And indeed thou art beneath the Resentment even of such a poor Girl as I. I will pity thee, base and abject as thou art. And she who is the Object of my Pity, is surely beneath my Anger. My Eye, that used to quiver and tremble at thy haughty Eye, shall now, with conscious Worthiness, take a superior Steadiness, and look down thy scouling guilty one into Self-Condemnation, the State thou couldst never cast mine into, nor from

from it wilt be able to raise thine own! Bear the Reproach of thine own wicked Heart, low, vile Woman, unworthy as thou art of the Nante, and chosen, as it should seem, for a Foil to the Innocent, and to make Purity shine forth the brighter, the only good Use such Wretches as thou can be of to others (except for Examples of Penitence and Mercy:) This will be Punishment enough for thee, without my exposing myself to the Imputation of descending so near to a Level with thee, as to resent thy Baseness, when thou hast no Power to hurt me!

Such were then my Thoughts, my proud Thoughts, so far was I from being guilty of intentional Meanness in forgiving, at Mr. B's Interposition, the poor, low, creeping, abject, Solf-mor-

tify'd and Master-mortify'd Mrs. Jewkes!

And do you think, Ladies, when you revolve in your Thoughts, who I was, and what I was, and what I had been defigned for; when you revolve the amazing Turn in my Favour, and the Prospects before me (Prospects so much above my Hopes, that I left them intirely to Providence to direct for me, as it pleafed, without daring to look forward to what those Prospects seemed naturally to tend;) when I could fee my haughty Perfecutor become my repentant Protector; the lofty Spirit that used to make me tremble, and to which I never could look up without Awe, except in those animating Cases, where his guilty Attempts, and the Concern I had to preferve my Innocence, gave a Courage more than natural to my otherwise daitardly Heart. When this impetuous Spirit could ftoop to request one whom he had funk beneath even her usual low Character of his Servant, who was his Prisoner, under Sentence of a Ruin, worse than Death, as he had intended it, and had seized her for that very Purpose; could stoop to acknowlege the Vileness of that Purpose; could fav,

at one time, "That my Forgiveness of Mrs. Jewkes "should stand me in greater Stead than I was aware of." Could tell her, before me, "That she must see for the future shew me all the Respect that was due to one he must love *:" At another, acknowledge before her, "That he had been stark naught, and that I was very forgiving +." Again \$\frac{1}{2}\$, to Mrs. Jewkes, putting himself on a Level with her, as to Guilt, "We are both in generous Hands: and indeed, if Pamela did not pardon you, I should think she but half forgave me, because you acted by my Instructions:" Another Time to the same \$\frac{1}{2}\$, "We have been both Sinners, and must be both included in one Act of Grace:"

When, I fay, I was thus lifted up to the State of a fovereign Forgiver, and my lordly Master became a Petitioner for himself, and for the guilty Creature, whom he put under my Feet; what a Triumph was here for the poor Pamela! And could I have been guilty of so mean a Pride, as to trample upon the poor abject Creature, when I found her thus lowly, thus mortify'd, and wholly in my Power! For so she seem'd actually to be, while I really thought so: And would it have been good Manners with regard to my Master, or Policy with respect to myself, to doubt it, after he had so declar'd?

Then, my dear Ladies, while I was enjoying the Soul-charming Fruits of that Innocence, which the Divine Grace had enabled me to preferve, in spite of so many Plots and Contrivances on my Master's Side, and such wicked Instigations and Affistances on her's, and all my Prospects were improving upon me beyond my Wishes; when all was Sunshine, unclouded Sunshine, and I possessed my Mind in

Peace,

ed -, fil

)

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 278.

¹ Ibid. p. 7.7.

⁺ Vol. II. p. 76. § Ibid. p. 166.

Peace, and had nothing to do but to be thankful to Providence, which had been to gracious to my Unworthiness, when I saw, as I said above, my Persecutor become my Protector, my active Enemy, no longer my Enemy, but creeping with flow, doubtful Feet, and speaking to me, with awful hesitating Doubt of my Acceptance; a Stamp of an infolent Foot, now turn'd into curt'fying half-bent Knees; threatening Hands into supplicating Folds; and the Eye unpitying to Innocence, running over with the Sense of her own Guilt; a faltering Accent on her late menacing Tongue, and uplifted Handkerchief,—" I fee she will be my Lady: And " then I know how it will go with me *;"-Was not this, my Ladies, a Triumph of Triumphs to the late miterable, now exalted Pamela!—Could I do less than pardon her? And having declared, that I did fo, was I not to thew the Sincerity of my Declaration?

Indeed, indeed, my dear good Ladies, I found fuch a Subject for Exultation in this providential Change of my Condition, that I had much ado to Subdue my rifing Pride, and thought there was more Danger of being lifted up, (every Moment, to fee fuch improving Continion on the poor Creature's Part) than to be supposed guilty of a Meanness of Heart, in flooping (yes, Madam, that was then the proudly proper Word, in the Elevation wherein I found myfelf) to forgive her !—And, what ! should I not forgive a Creature for that very Basenefs which, papply withflood, had fo largely contributed to exalt me? Indeed, my dear good Ladies, permit me to repeat, I could not chuse but to forgive her! --- How could I? --- And would it not have been out of character in me, and against all Expectation of my high-foul'd (tho' fometimes, as

in my Case, for a great while together, meanly-

acting) Mafter, if I had not?

0

-- Would it not have shewn him, that the low-born Pamela was incapable of a generous Action, had she refused the only Request her humble Condition had given her the Opportunity of granting, at that Time, with Innocence? Would he not have thought the humble Cottager as capable of Insolence, and Vengeance too, in her Turn, as the betterborn? and that she wanted but the Power, to shew the like unrelenting Temper, by which she had so grievously suffer'd?—And might not this have given him Room to think me (and to have resumed and prosecuted his purposes accordingly) fitter for an arrogant kept Mistres, than an humble and obliged Wife?

I see, (might he not have faid?) the Girl has frong Pations and Refentments; and the that has, will be acted, and fometimes governed by them. I will improve upon the Hint the herfelf has now given me, by her inexorable Temper: - I will gratify her Revenge, till I turn it upon herfelf: I will indulge her Pride, till I make it administer to her Fall: For a Wife I cannot think of, in the low-born Cottager; especially when she has lurking in her all the Pride and Arrogance (you know, my Ladies, his haughty way of speaking of our Sex) of the better-descended. - And by a little Persoverance, and watching her unguarded Hours, and applying Temptations to her Paffions, I shall first dicover them, and then make my Advantage of them.

Might not this have been the Language, and this the Resolution, of such a dear wicked Intriguer?— For, my Lady, you can hardly conceive the Struggles he apparently had to bring down his high Spirit to so humble a Level. And tho', I hope, all would have been, even in this worst Case, ineffectual, thro'

thro' Divine Grace, yet how do I know what lurk. ing Vileness might have appeared by Degrees in this frail Heart, to have encouraged his Defigns, and to have augmented my Trials and my Dangers? And perhaps downright Violence might have been used, if he could not, on one hand, have subdu'd his Paffions, nor, on the other, have overcome his Pride. A Pride, that every one, reflecting upon the Difparity of Birth and Condition between us, would have dignify'd with the Name of Decency; a Pride that was become fuch an effential Part of the dear Gentleman's Character, in this Inflance of a Wife, that altho' he knew he could not keep it up, if he made me happy, yet it was no small Motive in his choosing me, in one respect, because he expected from me more Humility, more Submission, than he thought he had Reason to flatter himself would be paid him by a Lady equally born and educated. And of this I will fend your Ladythip an Instance, in a Transcription from that Part of * my Journal you have not feen, of his Lessons to me, on the Occasion your Ladyship so well remembers, of my incurring his Displeasure by interpoling between yourself and him + in your Misunderstanding at the Hall; for, Madam, I intend to fend, at Times, any Thing I think worthy of your Ladyship's Attention, out of those Papers you were fo kind as to excuse me from sending you in the Lump, and many of which must needs have appeared very impertinent to fuch Judges.

Thus, could your Ladyship have thought it?—
have I ventur'd upon a strange Paradox, that even
this strongest Instance of his debasing himself, is
not the weakest of his Pride; and he ventured
once at Sir Simon Darnford's to say, in your Lady-

fhip's

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 311, & feq. beginning at Line 35. + Ibid. p. 316.

thip's Hearing, as you may remember, that in his Conscience, he thought he should hardly have made a tolerable Husband to any Body but Pamela *. And why? For the Reasons you will see in the inclosed Papers, which give an Account of the noblest and earliest Curtain-lecture that ever Girl had: One of which is, That he expects to be borne with, (comply'd with, he meant) even when in the wrong: Another, That a Wife should never so much as expostulate with him, tho' he was in the wrong, till by complying with all he insisted upon, she should have shewn him, she designed rather to convince him for his own Sake than for Contradiction's Sake: And then another Time, perhaps he might take better Resolutions †.

I hope, from what I have faid, it will appear to your Ladyship, and to Lady Betty too, that I am justify'd; or at least excused, in pardoning Mrs. Tewkes: And I have yet another Reason behind, for doing so, had she been as absolutely in my Power, as the Wish of the most resenting Person in the World could have made her; and that is, the Hope I had, that the poor Creature, by being continued in a Family where the Gentleman gave Hopes of so desireable a Reformation, and where the Example of the Person he was about to honour in so eminent a Degree, beyond all that could have been hoped for by her a few Days before, might possibly contribute to make her change her Manner of Thinking, as well as Acting.

I looked upon the poor Wretch, in all her Deportment to me, in my Days of Trial, as one devoted to Perdition; as one who had no Regard to a future State; but while she could live in Ease and Plenty for a poor Remainder of Years, cared not what she did, and was ready to undertake any Thing which Persons

of Power and Riches would put her upon; and who, were the to be turned off difgracefully, at my Defire, befides that I should thereby shew myself to be of an implacable Spirit, might have been entertained by some profligate Persons, to whose Baseness such a Woman might be useful; and that then her Power to do Mischief would have been augmented, and she would have gone on more fuccefsfully to do the Devil's Work, and feveral innocent Creatures might have been entangled, like to many thoughtless Flies, in the infnaring Web of this venomous-hearted Spider, which I had so happily escaped. Is it not better then, thought I, if I can imprint Conviction upon the poor Wretch, whom its hopeful Forerunner Shame had already take hold of, and add the delightful Hope of Mischiefs prevented, to that of a Soul reclaimed? And may not I, who have been fo hardly used by her, for that very Reason, have more Influence upon her than any other Person, even the best of Divines, could have?

Nay, would not this Behaviour of mine, very probably operate on a much higher and nobler Subject, her dear naughty Master, and let him see the Force and Amiableness of conquering one's self? that there must be something in that Duty, which could make so young a Creature regard it, in an Instance so difficult to some Minds, (and especially to the Passionate and High-born) that of sorgiving Injuries, where there is a Power to revenge, and of

returning Good for Evil.

And then, when no fullen Behaviour to the poor Wretch, on my Side, took place; no distant Airs were effected, no angry Brow put on, no Sharpness of Speech used, towards one who might expect all these from me; would it not shew him, that I was sincere in my Forgiveness? that I was not able to bear Malice? was a Stranger to Revenge? and truly that Sostness of Nature, and Placableness of Disposition, which

he holds to be the greatest Merit in our Sex; and which, I dare say, your Ladyship will join with me in Opinion, is indispensibly necessary to the happy

Life of the Person who is his Wife?

Then I have no Notion of that flight Distinction I have so often heard between forgive and forget, when Persons have a mind to split Hairs, and to distinguish away their Christian Duties by a Word, and say, I must forgive such an Action, but I will never forget it: When I would rather say, I will remember such an Action, in order for my suture Guard; but I will forgive it as often as I remember it: or else I will try to forget it for ever, if it will occasion a Breach in my Christian Charity.

I will only add, That I thought it would not be wrong to keep her as, befides what I have mention'd, it would induce the World to think, that Mr. B. had not gone fuch very wicked Lengths, as might have been imagin'd, if she had not been supportable to me in the same House? And who knows, moreover, what she might have reported of both.

had the been difmiffed?

How, then, dearest Ladies, if these Considerations have any Weight, could I act otherwise than I did, either with respect to your honour'd Brother, myself, or the poor Woman? And when I tell your Ladyships, that I have all the Reason in the World to be pleased with this Manner of acting, when I consider the Considence it hath given me with Mr. B. and (what I was very desirous of) the good Effects it hath had upon the Woman herself, I dare say, both your Ladyships Opinions will be in my Favour on this Head.

But your dear Brother has just fent me word, that Supper waits for me; and the Post being ready to go off, I defer till the next Opportunity what I have to say as to these good Effects; and am, in the mean

time, Your Ladyship's most obliged

and faithful Servant, P.B. E LET-

Vol. III.

LETTER XVI.

My dear Lady,

WILL now acquaint you with the good Effects my Behaviour to Mrs. Jewkes has had upon her, as a further Justification of my Conduct towards the

poor Woman.

Then she began to be affected as I wish'd, appeared to me before I left the Hall, not only in the Conversations I had with her after my Happiness was completed; but in her general Demeanour also to the Servants, to the Neighbours, and in her devout Behaviour at Church: And this still further appears by a Letter I have receiv'd from Miss Darnford. I dare say your Ladyship will be pleased with the Perusal of the whole Letter, altho' a Part of it would answer my present Design: And in considence, that you will excuse, for the sake of its other Beauties, the high and undeserved Praises which she so lavishly bestows upon me, I will transcribe it all.

From Miss Darnford to Mrs. B.

My dear Neighbour that was,

I Must depend upon your known Goodness, to excuse me for not writing before now, in an-

fwer to your Letter of Compliment to us, for the Civilities and Favours, as you call them, which

you received from us in Lincolnshire, where we were infinitely more obliged to you, than you to us.

The Truth is, my Papa has been much difordered with a kind of rambling Rheumatism, to

which the Physicians, learnedly speaking, give the Name of Arthritica waga, or the Flying Gout;

and when he ails ever fo little, (it fignifies nothing conceal-

concealing his Infirmities, where they are fo well known, and when he cares not who knows them) he is fo peevifh, and wants fo much Attendance, 4 that my Mamma, and her two Girls (one of which is as waspish as her Papa; you may be sure I don't ' mean myfelf) have much ado to make his Worfhip keep the Peace: And I being his Favourite, when he is indisposed, because I have most Pa-' tience, if I may give myfelf a good Word, he calls upon me continually, to read to him when he is grave, which is not often indeed, and to tell him ' Stories and fing to him, when he is merry; and fo 'I have been employed as a principal Person about him, till I have frequently become fad to make ' him cheerful, and happy when I could do it at any Rate. For once in a Pet, he flung a Book at my 'Head, because I had not attended him for Two ' Hours, and he could not bear to be flighted by ' little Bastards, that was his Word, that were father'd upon him for his V exation! O these Men! · Fathers or Husbands much alike! the one tyran-' nical, the other infolent; fo that, between one and 't'other, a poor Girl has nothing for it, but a few Weeks Courtship, and perhaps a first Month's Bridalry, if that; and then the is as much a Slave to ' a Husband, as the was a Vasial to her Father -I mean, if the Father be a Sir Simon Darnford, and ' the Spoufe a Mr. B. But I will be a little more grave; for a graver

Gocafion calls for it, and yet an Occasion that will give you real Pleasure. It is the very great Change that the Example you have left behind you, has

' had upon your Housekeeper.

You defired her to keep up as much Regularity as the could among the Servants there; and the is next to exemplary in it, so that the has every one's good Word. She speaks of her Lady not only with Respect, but Reverence; and calls it a blessed E 2

Day for all the Family, and particularly for her-

felf, that you came into Lincolnshire. She reads Prayers, or makes one of the Servants read them

every Sunday night; and never miffes being at

Church, Morning and Afternoon; and is preparing herfelf, by Mr. Peters's Advice and Direc-

tion, for receiving the Sacrament; which she

earnestly longs to receive, and says it will be the

Seal of her Reformation.

Mr. Peters gives us this Account of her, and
fays she is full of Contrition for her past mis-spent
Life, and is often asking him, if such and such Sins

can be forgiven? and among them names her vile

Behaviour to her Angel-Lady, as she calls you.
It seems she has written a Letter to you, which passed Mr. Peters's Revisal, before she had the

Courage to fend it; and prides herfelf that you have favour'd her with an Answer to it, which

have favour'd her with an Answer to it, which,
he fays, when she is dead, will be found in a Co-

ver of black Silk next her Heart; for any thing

from your Hand, the is fure, will contribute to

make her keep her good Purposes; and for that

Reason she places it there: And when she has any
 bad Thoughts, or is guilty of any faulty Word,

or passionate Expression, she recollects her Lady's

Letter, and that recovers her to a Calm, and puts

her again into a better Frame.

As she has written to you, 'tis possible I might have spar'd you the Trouble of reading this Account of her; but yet you will not be displeased

that so free a Liver and Speaker should have some

Testimonial besides her own Assurances, to vouch
 for the Sincerity of her Reformation.

What a happy Lady are you, that Perfuafion dwells upon your Tongue, and Reformation fol-

lows your Example? We all hear continually of your Excellencies. Every body is proud of

of your Excellencies. Every body is proud of fpeaking of you, and of having fomething to fay

of what they observe in you. This makes us long more and more to fee you here again. My Papa t'other Day faid, He wish'd you'd undertake him.

'This is not the least of what is admirable in 'you, that profes'd Rakes and Libertines, who take upon themselves to ridicule Seriousness in every body elfe, speak of you with Reverence; and while they attribute Pharifaical Pride, or Affectation, or Hypocrify, to other good Persons, they fay, You are a Credit to Religion, and That

adorns you, and you That.

' Happy, thrice happy Mrs. B. ! May you long live the Ornament of your Sex, and a Credit to all your Acquaintance! Such Examples as you fet, how are they wanted in an Age fo depraved! I fear not making you proud, fince Praife but puts the Worthy upon enlarging their Deservings: For who, as I heard you once fay, can fit down easy under imputed Commendations they do not deferve? If they will not disclaim the Praise they have not merited, when apply'd to their Conduct, they give an Earnest, by receiving it, that they will endeavour to do it, and ought never to reft

till they have made themselves a Title to it. ' Happy Mr. B. ! - But why fay I fo? fince with more Propriety, I may fay, Happy every-one who fees, who knows, who converfes with Mrs. B. not · more the Glory of the humble Cot, than the Or-

ament of the stately Palace!

' If you knew how I love you, you would favour " me with your Presence and Conversation, if it was in your own Power to do fo; and then I would rank myself among the Happies, and call myself · The Happy Polly DARNFORD.

Your Ladyship will, as I said, forgive me what may appear like Vanity in this Communication. Mils Darnford is a charming young Lady. I always admir'd her; but her Letters are the sweetest, kindest!—But I am too much the Subject of her Encomiums, and so will say no more; but add here a Copy of the poor Woman's Letter to me; and your Ladyship will see what an ample Correspondence you have open'd to yourself, if you go on to countenance it.

· Honoured Madam,

Have been long labouring under two Difficulties; the Defire I had to write to you, and the Fear of being thought presumptuous, if I did. But I will depend on your Goodness, so often try'd; and put Pen to Paper, in that very Closet, and on that very Desk, which once were so much used by your dear-Self, when I was acting a Part, that now cuts me to the Heart, to think of. But you forgave me, Madam, and shew'd me you had too much Goodness to revoke your Forgiveness. And could I have silenc'd the Reproaches of my own Heart, I should have had no Cause to think I had ever offended.

But, Oh! Madam, how has your Goodness to " me, which once filled me with so much Gladness, now, on Reflection, made me forrowful, and at times miserable-To think I should act so barbaroufly as I did, by to much Sweetness, and for much Forgiveness! Every Place that I remember to have used you hardly in, how does it now fill • me with Sadness, and makes me often finite my Breast, and sit down with Tears and Groans, be-· moaning my vile Actions, and my hard Heart! ' How many Places are there in this melancholy • fine House, that call one thing or other to my Remembrance, that give me Remorfe! But the Pond and the Woodhouse, whence I dragged you · so mercilesly, after I had driven you to Despair almost, what Thoughts do they bring to my Re-" membrance!

membrance!—Then my wicked Instigations—
What an odious Wretch was I!

' Had his Honour been as abandoned as myfelf, what Virtue had been destroy'd between his Orders,

and my too rigorous Execution of them; nay,

ftretching them, to shew my wicked Zeal, to serve a Master, whom though I honour'd, I should not

(as you more than once hinted to me, but with no

• Effect at all, fo refolutely wicked was my Heart)
• have fo well obey'd in his unlawful Commands!

'His Honour has made you Amends, has done 'Justice to your Merits, and so aton'd for his Fault.

But as for me, it is out of my Power ever to make

Reparation. All that is left me, is to let your

Ladythip fee, that your pious Example has made fuch an Impression upon me, that I am miserable

o now in the Reflection upon my past Guilt.

'You have forgiven me, and GOD will, I hope;
for the Creature cannot be more merciful than the
Creator; that is all my Hope!—Yet sometimes,
I dread that I am forgiven here, at least not
punish'd, in order to be punish'd the more hereafter!—What then will become of the unhappy
Wretch, that has thus lived in a State of Sin, and
had so qualified herself by a Course of Wickedness, as to be thought a proper Instrument for the
worst Purposes that any one could be employed

'in?
'Good your Ladyship, let not my honour'd
'Master see this Letter. He will think I have
'the Boldness to restect upon him; when, God
'knows my Heart, I only write to condemn my's felf, and my unwomanly Actions, as you were

· pleas'd often most justly to call them.

But I might go on thus for ever accusing myfelf, not considering whom I am writing to; and
whose precious Time I am taking up.—But what
E 4

I chiefly write for, I am not come to yet; that is, to beg your Ladyship's Prayers for me. For oh, Madam, I fear I shall else be for ever miserable! We every Week hear of the Good you do, and the Charity you extend to the Bodies of the Miferable. Extend, I beseech you, good Madam, to the unhappy Jewkes, the Mercy of your Prayers, and tell me it you think I have not finned

beyond Hope of Pardon; for there is a Woe de-

· nounced against the presumptuous Sinner.

' Your Ladyship assured me, at your Departure, on the Confession of my Remorie for my Misdoings, and my Promife of Amendment, that you would take it for a Proof of my being in Earnest, if I would endeavour to keep up a Regularity among the Servants here; if I would fubdue them with Kindness, as I had own'd myself subdu'd; and if I would endeavour to make every one think, that the best Security they could give of their doing their Duty to their Master in his Abfence, was by doing it to God Almighty, from whose all-seeing Eye nothing can be hid. This, I remember, your Ladyship told me, was the best · Test of Fidelity and Duty, that any Servants could flew; fince it was impossible without Re-'ligion, but that worldly Convenience, or Self-Interest, must be the main Tye; and so the worst · Actions might succeed, if Servants thought they flould find their fordid Advantage in facrificing their Duty.

So well am I convinced of this Truth, that I hope I have begun the Example to good Effect; and as no one in the Family was so wicked as I, it was therefore less difficult to reform them; and you will have the Pleasure to know, that you have now Servants here, whom you need not be

ashamed to call yours.

c 'Tis true, I found it a little difficult at first to keep them within Sight of their Duty, after your Ladyship departed: But when they saw I was in Earnest, and used them courteously, as you advised, and as your Usage of me convinced me was the rightest Usage; when they were told I had your Commands to acquaint you how they conformed to your Injunctions; the Task became easy; and I hope we shall all be still more and more worthy of the Favour of so good a Lady, and so bountiful a Master.

'I dare not presume upon the Honour of a Line
to your unworthy Servant. Yet it would pride me
much, if I could have it. But I shall ever pray
for your Ladyship's and his Honour's Felicity, as
becomes

'Your undeferving Servant, 'K. Jewkes.'

I have already, with these transcribed Letters of Miss Darnford and Mrs. Jewkes, written a great deal: But nevertheless, as there yet remains one Passage in your Ladyship's Letter, relating to Mrs. Jewkes, that seems to require an Answer, I will take Notice of it, if I shall not quite tire your Patience.

That Passage is this; 'Lady Betty rightly observes, 's says your Ladyship, that he knew what a vile 'Woman she [Mrs. Jewkes] was, when he put 'you into her Power; and, no doubt, employ'd her, because he was sure she would answer all his Purposes: And that therefore she should have had very little Opinion of the Sincerity of his Reformation, while he was so solucitous in keeping her there.

'She would, fhe fays, had she been in your Case,
have had one Struggle for her Disinission, let it
have been taken as it would; and he that was so
E 5

well pleased with your Virtue, must have thought this a natural Consequence of it, if he was in Ear-

neft to become virtuous himself.'

But alas! Madam, he was not fo well pleafed with my Virtue for Virtue's fake, as Lady Betty thinks he was. He would have been glad, at that very Time, to have found me less resolved on that score. He did not so much as pretend to any Disposition to

Virtue. No, not he!

He had entertained, as it proved, a strong Pasfion for me. This Passion had been heighten'd by my refisting of it. His Pride and the Advantages he had both of Person and Fortune, would not let him brook Controul; and when he could not have me upon his own Terms, God turned his evil Purposes to good ones, and he resolved to submit to mine, or rather to fuch as he found I would not yield to him without. For all this Time, I had no Terms to propose. Neither my low Fortunes, my unjust Captivity, nor my Sex, nor unexperienc'd Youth, (not a Soul near me whom I could call my Friend, or whose Advice I could ask) permitted me to offer any Terms to him, had I been disposed to have disputed his Will, or his Intercession for the Woman; which, as I have faid, I was not. I had but one fleady Purpose to adhere to, and having Grace given me to adhere to that, he refolved, fince he could not conquer his Paffion for me, to make me his with Honour. But still I doubt, as I said, this was not for the Love of Virtue at that Time. That came afterwards, and I hope will always be his governing Motive, in his future Actions; and then I shall be happy indeed!

But Lady Betty thinks 'I was to blame to put 'Mrs. Jewkes upon a Foot, in the Present I made on my Nuptials, with Mrs. Jervis.' But the Case was rather this, That I put Mrs. Jervis on a Foot with Mrs. Jewkes; for the dear Gentleman had named the

Sum

Sum he would have me give Mrs. Jewkes, and I would not give Mrs. Jervis less, because I loved her better; nor more could I give her, on that Occasion, without making such a Difference between two Persons equal in Station, on a Solemnity too where one was present and affisting, the other not, as would have shewn such a Partiality, as might have induced their Master to conclude, I was not so sincere in my Forgiveness, as he hoped from me, and as I really was.

But a stronger Reason still was behind; that I could, in a much more agreeable Manner, both to Mrs. Fervis and myself, shew my Love and my Gratitude to the dear good Woman: And this I have taken care to do, in the Manner I will submit to your Ladyship; at the Tribunal of whose Judgment I am willing all my Actions, respecting your dear Brother, shall be try'd: And I hope your Ladyship will not think me a too profuse or lavish Creature; I hope you won't have Reason for it: Yet, if you think you have, pray, my dear Lady, don't spare me; for if you shall judge me profuse in one Article, I will endeavour to save it in another.

But I will make what I have to say on this Head the Subject of a Letter by itself: And am, mean time,

Your Ladyship's most obliged

and obedient Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XVII.

My dear Lady,

I T is needful, in order to let you more intelligibly into the Subject where I left off in my last, that your Ladyship should know, that your generous BroE 6 there

* See Vol. II. p. 188.

ther has made me his Almoner, as I was my late dear Lady's; and has order'd Mr. Longman to pay me 50l.

* Quarterly, for Purposes of which he requires no Account, though I have one always ‡ ready to produce; and he has given me other Sums to enable me to do all the Good I can to distressed Objects, at my first setting out. Thus enabled, your Ladyship knows not how many honest Hearts I have made glad already, and how many more I hope to rejoice before a Year is at an end, and yet keep within my Limits.

Now, Madam, as I knew Mrs. Jervis was far from being easy in her Circumstances, thinking herfelf obliged to pay old & Debts for two extravagant Children who are both dead; and maintaining in Schooling and Clothes three of their Children, which always keeps her bare; I took upon me one Day, as she and I sat together, at our Needles, to say to her, (as we are always running over old Stories, when we are alone) My good Mrs. Jervis, will you allow me to ask you after your own private Affairs, and if you are tolerably easy in them?

You are very good, Madam, faid she, to concern yourself about my poor Matters, so much as you have to employ your Thoughts about, and so much as every Moment of your Time is taken up, from the Hour you rise, to the Time of your Rest. But I can with great Pleasure attribute it to your Bounty, and that of my honoured Master, that I am easier and

eafier every Day.

But tell me, my dear Mrs. Fervis, faid I, how your Matters particularly fland. I love to mingle Concerns with my Friends, and as I hide nothing from you, I hope you'll treat me with equal Freedom; for I always loved you, and always will; and nothing but Death shall divide our Friendship.

She

‡ Ibid. p. 353.

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 342. Vol. I. p. 92.

She had Tears of Gratitude in her Eyes, and taking off her Spectacles, I cannot bear, faid the, fo much Goodness!—Oh! my Lady!

Oh! my Pamela, fay, reply'd I.—How often must I chide you for calling me any thing but your

Pamela, when we are alone together?

My Heart, faid she, will burst with your Good-

nefs! I cannot bear it!

But you must bear it, and bear still greater Exercifes to your grateful Heart, I can tell you that: A pretty thing, truly! Here I, a poor helplefs Girl, raifed from Poverty and Diffress, by the Generofity of the best of Men, only because I was young and fightly, shall put on Lady-Airs to a Gentlewoman born, the Wisdom of whose Years, and her faithful Services, and good Management, make her a much greater Merit in this Family, than I can pretend to have !- And return, thall I, in the Day of my Power, Infult and Haughtiness for the Kindness and Benevolence I receiv'd from her in that of my Indigence?-Indeed, I won't forgive you, my dear Mrs. Jervis, if I think you capable of looking upon me in any other Light than as your Daughter; for you have been a Mother to me, when the Ablence of my own could not afford me the Comfort and good Counfel I received every Day from you.

Then moving my Chair nearer her, and taking her Hand, and wiping, with my Handkerchief in my other, her reverend Cheek, Come, come, my dear fecond Mother, faid I, call me your Daughter, your Pamela: I have passed many sweet Hours with you under that Name: And as I have but too seldom such an Opportunity as this, open to me your worthy Heart, and let me know, if I cannot make my second Mother as easy and happy, as our dear Master

has made my firft.

She hung her Head on her Shoulder, and I waited till the Discharge of her Tears gave Time for Utterance to her Words; provoking only her Speech, by saying, You used to have three Grandchildren to provide for in Clothes and Schooling. They are all living, I hope?

Yes, Madam, they are living: And your last Bounty (Twenty Guineas was a great Sum, and all at once!) made me very easy and very happy!—

How easy, and how happy, Mrs. Fervis?

Why, my dear Lady, I paid Five to one old Creditor of my unhappy Sons; Five to a second; and Two-and-a-half to two others in Proportion to their respective Demands; and with the other Five I paid off all Arrears of the poor Childrens Schooling and Maintenance, and every one is satisfy'd and easy, and all declare they will never do harsh Things by me, if they are paid no more.

But tell me, Mrs. Jervis, what you owe in the World, put all together; and you and I will contrive with Justice to our best Friend, to do all we can, to make you quite easy; for, at your Time of Life, I cannot bear that you shall have any thing to disturb you, which I can remove; and so, my dear Mrs.

Fervis, let me know all.

Come, I know your Debts, (dear, just, good Woman as you are!) like David's Sins, are ever before you: So come, putting my Hand in her Pocket, let me be a friendly Pick-pocket: Let me take out your Memorandum-book, and we will see how all Matters stand, and what can be done. Come, I see you are too much moved; your worthy Heart is too much affected (pulling out her Book, which she always had about her:) I will go to my Closet, and return presently.

So I left her to recover her Spirits, and retir'd with

the good Woman's Book to my Closet.

Your dear Brother stepping into the Parlour just after I had gone out, Where's your Lady, Mrs. Fervis? faid he. And being told, came up to me; What ails the good Woman below, my dear? faid

he: I hope she and you have had no Words!

No, indeed, Sir, answered I.-If we had, I am fure it would have been my Fault: But I have picked her Pocket of her Memorandum-book, in order to look into her private A. Tairs, to fee if I cannot, with Juffice to our common Benefactor, make her as easy as you, Sir, have made my other dear Parents.

A Bleffing, faid he, upon my Charmer's benevolent Heart !- I will leave every thing to your Difcretion, my Dear. - Do all the Good you prudently

can to your Mrs. Fervis.

I clasped my bold Arms about him, the flarting Tear testifying my Gratitude. Dearest, dear Sir, faid I, you affect me as much as I did Mrs. Fervis: And if any one but you had a Right to ask, What ails your Pamela! as you do, what ails Mrs. Fervis? I must say, I am hourly so much oppress'd by your Goodness, that there is hardly any bearing one's own Joy.

He faluted me, and faid, I was a dear obliging Creature. But faid he, I came to tell you, that after we have din'd, we'll take a Turn, if you please, to Lady Arthur's: She has a Family of London Friends for her Guefts, and begs I will prevail upon you to give her your Company, and attend you myfelf, only to drink Tea with her; for I have told

her, we are to have Friends to fup with us.

I will attend you, Sir, reply'd I, most willingly;

altho' I doubt I am to be made a Shew of. Something like it, faid he—For she has promis'd them this Favour.

I need not drefs otherwise than I am?

No, he was pleased to say, I was always what he withed me to be.

So he left me to my good Works, (those were his kind Words) and I ran over Mrs. Jervis's Accounts, and found a Balance drawn of all her Matters, in one Leaf, in a very clear Manner, and a thankful Acknowlegement to God, for her Matter's last Bounty, "which had enabled her to give Satisfaction to others, and do herself great Pleasure," as the bas written underneath.

The Balance of all was 35% 11s. and odd Pence; and I went to my Escritoire, and took out 40% and down I hasted to my good Mrs. Fervis, and I said to her, Here, my dear good Friend, is your Pocket-Book; but are 35 or 36% all you owe, or are bound

for in the World?

It is Madam, faid she, and enough too. It is a great Sum; but 'tis in four Hands, and they are all in pretty good Circumstances, and so convinced of my Honesty, that they will never trouble me for it; for I have reduced the Debt every Year something, since I have been in my Master's Service.

Nor shall it ever be in any body's Power, said I,

to trouble you: I'll tell you how we'll order it.

So I fat down, and made her fit down by me. Here, my dear Mrs. Jervis, is 40l. It is not fo much to me now as the * Two Guineas were to you, that you would have given me, if I would have accepted of them, at my going away from this House to my Father's, as I thought. But I will not give it you neither, at least at present, as you shall hear: Indeed I won't make you so uneasy as that comes to. But here take this, and pay the Thirty-sive Pounds odd Money to the utmost Farthing; and the remaining Four Pounds odd will be a little Fund in Advance towards the Childrens Schooling. And thus you shall repay it: I always designed, as our dear Master added Five Guineas per Annum to

your Salary, in acknowledgment of the Pleasure he took in your Services, when I was Pamela Andrews, to add Five Pounds per Annua to it from the Time I became Mrs. B. But from that time, for so many Years to come, you shall receive no more than you did, till the whole Forty Pounds be repaid. And so my dear Mrs. Jervis, you won't have any Obligation to me, you know, but for the Advance; and that is a poor Matter, not to be spoken of: And I will have Leave for it, for fear I should die.

Had your Ladyship seen the dear good Woman's Behaviour on this Occasion, you would never have forgotten it. She could not speak: Tears ran down her Cheeks in plentiful Currents: Her modest Hand put gently from her my offering Hand, and her Bosom heav'd, and she sobb'd with the painful Tumult that seem'd to struggle within her, and which, for some few Moments, made her incapable of speaking.

At last, I rising, and putting my Arm round her Neck, and wiping her Eyes, and kissing her Cheek, she cry'd, My dear, my excellent Lady! 'tis too much! too much! I cannot bear all this—And then she threw herself at my Feet; for I was not strong enough to hinder it; and with uplisted Hands, May God Almighty, said she—I kneeled by her, and clasping her Hands in mine, both uplisted together—May God Almighty, said I, drowning her Voice with my louder Voice, bless us both together, for many happy Years! And may he bless and reward the dear Gentleman, who has thus enabled me to make the Widow's Heart to sing for Joy!

Dear, good Woman, faid I, rising, and raising her, Do you think you shall outdo me in Prayers and Praises to the Fountain of all these Mercies?—Do you think you shall!—And while I am impower'd to do Good to so many worthy Objects abroad, shall I forget to make my dear Mrs. Feruis happy at home?

And

And thus, my Lady, did I force upon the good

Woman's Acceptance the Forty Pounds.

Permit me, Madam, to close this Letter here, and to refume the Subject in my next: Till when I have the Honour to be,

> Your Ladyship's most obliged and faithful Servant,

> > P. B.

LETTER XVIII.

My dear Lady,

I NOW resume my last Subject where I lest off, that your Ladyship may have the Whole before

you at one View.

I went after Dinner, with my dear Benefactor, to Lady Arthur's; and met with fresh Calls upon me for Humility, having the too natural Effects, of the Praises and professed Admiration of that Lady's Guests, as well as my dear Mr. B's, and those of Mr. and Mrs. Arthur, to guard Myself against: And your good Brother was pleased to entertain me in the Chariot going and coming, with an Account of the Orders he had given in relation to the London House, which is actually taken, and the Furniture he should direct for it: so that I had no Opportunity to tell him what I had done in relation to Mrs. Fervis.

But after Supper retiring from Company to my Closet, when his Friends were gone, he came up to me about our usual Bed-time: He inquired kindly after my Employment, which was trying to read in the French Telemachus: For, my Lady, I am learning French, I'll affure you! And who, do you think, is my Master?—Why, the best I could have in the World, your dearest Brother, who is pleased to say, I am no Dunce: How inexcusable should I be, if I

Was,

was, with fuch a Master, who teaches me on his Knee, and rewards me with a Kiss whenever I do well, and fays, I have already nearly master'd the Accent and Pronunciation, which he tells me is a great Difficulty got over.

I requested him to render for me into English two or three Places that were beyond my Reach; and when he had done it, he asked me, in French, What

I had done for Mrs. Fervis?

I faid, Permit me, Sir, (for I am not Proficient enough to answer you in my new Tongue) in English, to say, I have made the good Woman quite happy; and if I have your Approbation, I shall be as much so myself in this Instance, as I am in all others.

I dare answer for your Prudence, my Dear, he was pleased to say; but this is your Favourite: Let me know when you have so bountiful a Heart to Stran-

gers, what you do for your Favourites?

I then faid, Permit my bold Eye, Sir, to watch yours, as I obey you; and you know you must not look full upon me then; for if you do, how shall I look at you again; how see, as I proceed, whether you are displeased? for you will not chide me in Words, so partial have you the Goodness to be to all I do.

He put his Arm round me, and looked down now-and-then, as I defired; for, O Madam, he is all Condescention and Goodness to his unworthy, yet grateful Pamela! And I told him all I have written to your Ladyship about the Forty Pounds.—And now, dear Sir, said I, haif hiding my Face on his Shoulder, you have heard what I have done, chide or beat your Pamela, if you please: It shall be all kind from you, and Matter of suture Direction and Caution.

He raifed my Head, and kiffed me two or three times, faying, Thus then I chide, I beat, my Angel!

—And yet I have one Fault to find with you; and

let Mrs. Jervis, if not in Bed, come up to ut, and hear what it is; for I will expose you as you deserve before her. My Polly being in Hearing, attending to know if I wanted her Assistance to undress, I bade her call Mrs. Jervis. And tho' I thought from his kind Looks, and kind Words, as well as tender Behaviour, that I had not much to har, yet I was impatient to know what my Fault was, for which I was to be exposed.

The good Woman came, and as the enter'd with all that Modesty which is so graceful in her, he moved his Chair further from me, and, with a set Aspect, but not unpleasant, said,—Step in, Mrs. Jervis: Your Lady, (for so, Madam, he will always call me to Mrs. Jervis, and to the Servants) has incurred my Censure, and I would not tell her in what, till I

had you Face to Face.

She look'd furpriz'd—now on me, now on her dear Master; and I, not knowing what he would say, looked a little attentive.——I am forry—I am very forry for it, Sir, said she, curt'sying low:—Bu should be more forry, if I were the unhappy Occasion.

Why, Mrs. Fervis, I can't fay but it is on your

Account that I must blame her.

This gave us both Confusion, but especially the good Woman; for still I hoped much from his kind Behaviour to me just before.—And she said, Indeed Sir, I could never deserve——

He interrupted her, My Charge against you, Pamela, said he, is that of Niggardlines, and no other; for I will put you both out of your Pain: You ought not to have found out the Method of Repayment.

The dear Creature, faid he, to Mrs. Jervis, feldom does any thing than can be mended; but, I think, when your good Conduct deferved an annual Acknowledgment from me, in Addition to your Salary, the Lady should have shewed herself no less pleased

pleased with your Service, than the Gentleman.— Had it been for old Acquaintance-sake, for Sex-sake, she should not have given me Cause to upbraid her on this Head.—But I will tell you, that you must look upon the Forty Pounds you have, as the Effect of a just Distinction on many Accounts; and your Salary from last Quarter-day shall be advanced, as the dear Niggard intended it some Years hence, and let me only add, That when my Pamela first begins to shew a Coldness to her Mrs. Jervis, I shall then suspect she is beginning to decline in that humble Virtue, which is now peculiar to herself, and makes her the Delight of all who converse with her.

This was what he was pleased to fay: Thus, with the most graceful Generosity, and a Nobleness of Mind truly peculiar to himself, was he pleased to ast: And what, does your Ladyship think, could Mrs. Fervis or I say to him?—Why, indeed, nothing at all!—We could only look upon one another, with our Eyes full, and our Hearts sull, of a Gratitude that would not permit either of us to speak, but which express'd itself at last in a Manner he was pleased to call more elegant than Words, and that was, with uplifted solded Hands, and Tears of Joy.

O my dear Lady! how many Opportunities have the beneficent Rich to make themselves, as well as their Fellow Creatures, happy! All that I could think, or say, or act, was but my Duty before; what a Sense of Obligation then must I lie under to this most

generous of Men!

But here let me put an end to this tedious Subject; the principal Part of which can have no Excuse, if it may not serve as a Proof of my cheerful Compliance with your Ladyship's Commands, That I recite every thing that is of Concern to me, and with the same Freedom as I was wont to do to my dear Parents.

I have

I have done it, and at the same time have offered what I had to plead in behalf of my Conduct to the two Housekeepers, which you expected from me; and I shall therefore close this my humble Defence, if I may so call it, with the Assurance that I am,

My dearest Lady,

Your obliged and faithful Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XIX.

From Lady DAVERS to Mrs. B. in Answer to the Six last Letters.

" WHERE she had it, I can't tell; but I think I never met with the Fellow of her in my Life, at any Age; are, as I remember, my Brother's Words, speaking of his Pamela, in the * early Part of your Papers. In truth, thou art a surprising Creature; and every Letter we have from you, we have new Subjects to admire you for.—Do you think, Lady Letty, said I, when I had read to the End of the Subject about Mrs. Jervis, I will not soon set out to hit this charming Girl a Box of the Ear or two?

For what, Lady Davers? faid she.

For what! reply'd I.—Why, don't you fee how many Slaps of the Face the bold Slut hits me?—I'll LADY-AIRS her! I will!—I'll teach her to reproach me, and so many of her Betters, with her Cottage Excellencies, and Improvements, that shame our Education.

Why, you dear charming Pamela, did you only excel me in Words, I could forgive you; for there may be a Knack, and a Volubility, as to Words, that a natural Talent may supply; but to be thus outdone

11

in Thought and in Deed, who can bear it? And in fo

young an Infulter to!

d

ie

:;

e,

e,

's

rt

1-

e

k,

e

to

W

11

h

re

IT

ly

re

at

ne

n

Well, Pamela, look to it, when I see you: You shall feel the Weight of my Hand, or—the Pressure of my Lip, one or t'other, depend on it, very quickly: For here, instead of my stooping, as I had thought it would be, to call you Sister, I thall be forced to think in a little while, that you ought not to own me as yours, till I am nearer your Standard.

But to come to Business, I will summarily take notice of the following Particulars in all your obliging Letters, in order to convince you of my Friendship, by the Freedom of my Observations, on the Subjects

you touch upon.

First, then, I am highly pleased with what you write of the Advantages you received from the Favour of my dear Mother; and as you know many Things of her by your Attendance upon her, in the last three or four Years of her Life, I must desire you will give me, as Opportunity shall offer, all you can recollect in relation to the honoured Lady, and of her Behaviour and Kindness to you, and with a Retrospect to your own early Beginnings, the Dawnings of this your Bright Day of Excellence: And this not only I, but the Countess and Lady Betty, with whom I am going over your Papers again, and her Sister Lady Jenny, request of you.

2. I am much pleased with your Kentish Account; tho' we wished you had been more particular in some Parts of it; for we are greatly taken with your Descriptions, and your Conversation Pieces; Yet I own, your honest Father's Letters, and yours, a good deal supply that Desect, as our Pleasure in reading your Relations makes us call it. Your Parents are honest, discreet Folks, I see that: I have a Value for them: And you're the prudentest Creature I ever knew, in all your Ways; particularly in the

Advice

Advice you give them about your more distant Relations, and to aim at nothing beyond their natural Sphere.—Every Tittle is right, and as it should be. On these Accounts it is, that all the World will allow, that you, and your Parents too, merit the

Fortune you have met with.

3. I am highly delighted with the Account you give me of my Brother's breaking to you the Affair of Sally Godfrey, and your Conduct upon it. 'Tis a fweet Story, as he brought it in, and as you relate it. The Wretch has been very just in his Account of it. But don't you think he was a fad young Fellow? Well may you be thankful for your Escape; Well may you!—Your Behaviour was what I admire; and so we do all, but none of us think we could have imitated it in all its Parts. We are in love with your charitable Reslections in favour of the poor Lady; and the more, as she certainly deserved them; and a better Mother too than she had, and a faithfuller Lover than she met with.

4. You have exactly hit his Temper, in your declared Love of Miss Goodwin. I see, Child, you know your Man; and never fear but you'll hold him, if you can go on thus to act, and out-do your Sex. But I should think you might as well not insist upon having her with you; for the Girl may be pert, perhaps insolent (you know who is her Father;) you'd not care to check her, for several Reasons, and this may make you uneasy; for, if you did, he might take it amiss, let your Motives be ever so good: So I think you'd better see her now-and-then at the Dairy-house, or at School, than have her with you.—But this I leave to your own Discretion, and his good Pleasure, to determine upon; for in the latter it must rest, let you, or me, or any body, say what we will.

5. You have fully, and to our Satisfaction, anfwer'd our Objections to your Behaviour to Mrs. Jewkes. We had not consider'd your Circumfrances quite so thoroughly as we ought to have done. You are a charming Girl, and all your Motives are so just, that we shall be a little more cautious for the future, how we censure you. We are particularly pleased with the Triumphs of your Innocence over his and her Guilt; and agree, that they are the rightest and best-to-be-defended Motives for Pride, that ever were set before us.

In fhort, I fay with the Countes, This good Girl is not without her Pride; but it is the Pride that becomes, and can only attend, the innocent Heart; and I'll warrant, said her Ladyship, nobody will become her Station so well, as one who is capable of so worthy a Pride as this.

But what a Curtain-lecture hadft thou, Pamela? A noble one, dost thou call it!—Why, what a Wretch hast thou got, to expect thou shouldst never expostulate against his lordly Will, even when in the Wrong, till thou hast obey'd it, and, of consequence, join'd in the Evil he imposes! He says, indeed, in finall Points: but I suppose he is to judge which are and which are not small.

f

t

t

y

11

Ŀ

e,

I

e,

et

n-

rs.

n-

ces

Thus, I remember, my Brother himself took notice once of a Proposal in the House of Commons, to grant the Crown a very great Sum to answer Civil-List Desiciencies, which being opposed by the Minority, the Minister sound out an Expedient, that they might give the Money first, and examine into the Merits of the Demand afterwards. So we read, that, in some Countries, an accused Person is put to Death, and then try'd; and all he has to hope for while he lives, is, that his Relations, and his own Family, will be released from Obloquy, if an Acquittal ensues.

Much good may fuch a Husband do you, says Lady Betty!——Every-body will admire you, but no one will have Reason to envy you upon those Principles. Yet, I don't know how it is, but this is evil Vol. III.

dent, that at present, there is not a happier Couple

in the World than you two are.

6. I am pleased with your Promise of sending me what you think I shall like to see, out of those Papers you choose not to shew me collectedly: This is very obliging. You're a good Girl, and I love you dearly

7. We have all finited at your Paradox, Pamela, that his marrying you was an Inflance of his Pride. The Thought, tho', is pretty enough, and ingenious: But whether it will hold or not, I won't just

now examine.

8. Your Observation on the Forget and Forgive we are much pleafed with, and think you have dis-

tinguish'd well on that Head.

9. You are a very good Girl for fending me a Copy of Miss Darnford's Letter. She is a charming young Lady. I always had a great Opinion of her Merit; her Letter abundantly confirms me in it. I hope you'll communicate to me every Letter that passes between you; and pray fend me in your next a Copy of your Answer to her Letter: I must insist upon it, I think.

poor Jewkes's Reformation. Your Example carries all before it. But pray oblige me with your Answer to her Letter. Don't think me unreasonable: 'Tis all for your sake. You must needs know that, or you know nothing. For I think you deserve all Miss Darnford says of you; and that's a great deal too.

Pray—have you shewn fewkes's Letter to your good Friend?—Lady Betty wants to know (if you have) what he could say to it: For, she says, it cuts him to the Quick. And I think so too, if he takes it as he ought: But, as you say, he's above loving Virtue for Virtue's sake, I warrant him. He likes it in a Wise, because 'tis a Husband's Security against the Law of Retaliation. There's a great deal in that, I

pected

can tell you. I once heard the Wretch hold an Argument that Women had no Souls. I afked him, If he were to marry, whether he'd have his Wife as as if she believ'd this Doctrine to be good? That was another thing he said: He was for having his Wife think she had, he must own: Such a Belief could do her no Harm. Ah! Pamela, for Theory and Practice too, I doubt, never was such a Rake,

for one not quite a Town Debauchee!

11. Your Manner of acting by Mrs. Jervis, with so handsome a Regard to my Brother's Interest, her Behaviour upon it, and your Relation of the Whole, and of his generous Spirit in approving, reproving, and improving your prudent Generofity, make no inconfiderable Figure in your Papers. And Lady Betty fays, Hang him, he has some excellent Qualities too - It is impossible not to think well of him; and his good Actions go a great way towards atoneing for his bad. But you, Pamela, have the Glory We defire, particularly, that you will never omit any of those moving Scenes, which you so well describe, be the Occasion what it will: For they are Nature, and that's your Excellence. Keep to that; for one more learned, I verily think, could not write as you do, nor instruct, and delight, and move, all at once, fo very engagingly.

12. I am glad you are learning French: Thou art a happy Girl in thy Teacher, and he is a happy Man in his Scholar. We are pleased with the pretty Account you give us of his Method of Instructing and Rewarding. 'Twould be strange, if you did not learn any Language quickly under such Methods, and with such Encouragements, from the Man you love, were your Genius less apt than it is. But we wish'd you had enlarged on that Subject: For such Fondness of Men to their Wives, who have been any time marry'd, is so rare, and so unex-

pected from my Brother, that we thought you should

have written a Side upon that Subject at leaft.

What a bewitching Girl art thou! What an Exemplar to Wives now, as well as thou wait before to Maidens! Thou can't tame Lions, I dare fay, if thou I'ft try.—Reclaim a Rake in the Meridian of his Labertinism, and make such an one as my Brother not only marry thee, but love thee better at several Months End, than he did the first Day, if possible! Wonderful Girl! Yet usest thou no Arts but honest ones, such as Prudence directs, Nature points out, and such as make Duty delightful, even commanding most, when thou seemest most to submit.

It must be own'd indeed, that thou hast no brutal Mind to deal with: Bad as he is, it must be faid, that thou hast a sensible and a generous Heart to work upon; one who takes no Glory in the blind Submission of a Slave; but, like a true British Monarch, delights to reign in a free, rather than in an abject Mind. Yet he is jealous as a Tyrant of his Prerogative: But you have found the way to lay that watchful Dragon assep, and so possess the golden Fruits of Content and true Pleasure, the due Reward

of your matchless Conduct.

Now, my dear Pamela, I think I have taken notice of the most material Articles in your Letters, and have no more to say to you; but, write on, and oblige us; and mind to send me the Copy of your Letter to Miss Darnford, of that you wrote to poor penitent fewkes, and every Article I have written about, and all that comes into your Head, or that passes, and you'll oblige

Yours, &c.



B. DAVERS.

LETTER

LETTER XX.

7

My dear Lady,

READ with Pleasure your Commands, in your last kind and obliging Letter; and you may be fire of a ready Obedience in every one of them, that

s in my Power.

That which I can most easily do, I will first do; and that is, to transcribe the Answer I fent to Mis is a ford*, and that to Mrs. Fracker, the former of which (and a long one it is) is as follows:

· Dear Mils Darnford,

I Begin now to be afraid I shall not have the Pleature and Benefit I promised myself of passing a Fortnight or three Weeks at the Hall, in your sweet Conversation, and that of your worthy Family, as well as those others in your agreeable Neighbourhood, whom I must always remember

with equal Honour and Delight.

'The Occasion will be principally, that we expect very foon a Visit from Lord and Lady Davers, who propose to tarry here a Fortnight at least; and after that, the advanc'd Season will carry us to London, where Mr. B. has taken a House for his Winter Residence, and in order to attend Parliment: A Service, he says, which he has been more descient in hitherto, than he can either answer to his Constituents, or to his own Conscience; for tho', he says, he is but One, yet if any good Motion should be lost by one, every absent Member, who is independent, has it to reproach himself with the Consequences that may follow on the Loss of that Good which might otherwise redound to the

^{*} See Mijs Darnford's Letter, p. 74. of this Volume.

Commonwealth. And besides, he says, such Ex

cufes as be could make, every one might plead; and then public Affairs might as well be left to the Ad-

· ministration, and no Parliament be chosen.

· He observed further on this Subject, that every ' absent Member, in such Cases, indirectly abots the Minister, be he who he will, in all his Defigns, be they what they will; and is even less excusable to his Country, than the Man, who, for a transi-' tory Benefit to his private Family, takes a Penlion or Reward for his Vote; fince the Difference is only that the one passively ruins his Country by Neglect and Indolence, which can do nobody good, and the other more actively for a Bribe; which Practice, tho' ruinous, in the End, to the whole Public, in which his own private is included, vet forves to answer some present Turn or Benefit

' to himfelf or Family. . See you, my dear Miss Darnford, from the humble Cottager, what a public Person your favour'd · Friend is grown! and behold how eafy it is for a bold Mind to look forward, and, perhaps, forgetting what the was, now the imagines the has a · Stake in the Country, takes upon herfelf to be as · important, as fignificant, as if, like my dear Miss · Darnford, the had been born to it! But if, neverthelefs, I am confured for troubling my Head with · Politics, let me answer. That I am at Liberty, I hope, to tell you Mr. B.'s Sentiments of these high · Matters; and that is all I have done.

Well; but may I not prefume to ask, Whether, if the Mountain cannot come to Mahomet, Mabount will not come to the Mountain? Since · Lady Davers's Vifit is fo uncertain as to its Begin-' ning and Duration, and so great a Favour as I am to look upon it, and really shall, it being her first · Visit to me;—and since we must go and take Pos-

fellion

e fession of our London Residence; why can't Sir · Simon spare to us the dear Lady, whom he could

· use so hardly; and whose Attendance (tho' he is

indeed intitled to all her Duty) he did not, just in

that Instance, quite so much deserve?

" Well, but after all, Sir Simon, would I fay, if " I had been in prefence at his peevith Hour, you " are a fine Gentleman, are you not? to take fuch " a Method to shew your good Daughter, that be-" cause she did not come fron enough to you, she " came too foon! And did ever Papa, before you, put a a good book (for such I doubt not it was, because " you were in Affliction, tho' fo little affected by " its Precepts) to fuch a bad Use? As Parents Ex-" amples are fo prevalent, suppose your Daughter " had taken this very Book, and flung it at her Sif-" ter; Mis Nancy at her Waiting-maid; and so it " had gone thro' the Family; would it not have " been an Excuse for every one, to say that the Fa-" ther and Head of the Family had fet the Example? " But again, Sir Simon, Suppose you had hurt the " fweet Dove-like Eyes of my dear Miss Darn-" ford-Suppose you had bruised or broken the fine " Skin of any Part of that fine Face, which gives " at first Sight, so bright a Promise of her still " finer Mind, what, let me ask you, Sir, could you " have faid for yourfelf? How would the dear La-" dy's Appearance, with one fweet Eye, perhaps, " mu Hed up, with a plaister'd Forehead, or a veil'd " Cheek, hiding herfelf from every-body but you, " and her grieved Mamma, and pitying Sifter, reor proach'd you for to rath an act?—nay, reproach'd " you more, by her unreproaching Obligingness, " and cheerful Duty, than if (were the capable of " it) the could have spoken in sharp Complaints, and " expostulatory Wailings?

" You almost with, my dear Miss tells me, that "I would undertake you!-This is very good of " you. F 4

"you, Sir Simon, might I (would his Patience have fuffer'd me to run on thus) have added—
"But I hope, fince you are so sensible, that you want to be undertaken, (and fince this peevish Rashness convinces me, that you do) that you will undertake yourself; that you will not, when your Indisposition makes the Attendance and Duty of your dear Lady and Daughter necessary, make it more uncomfortable to them, by adding a Difficulty of being pleased, and an Impatience of Spirit, to the Concern their Duty and Affection make them have for you; and at least, resolve never to take a Book into your Fland again, if you cannot make a better Use of it, than you cid then."

'Pray tell your Papa, that I beg the Favour of him, to prefent me with this Book, and I will put a Mark upon it, and it shall never more either give or receive such Disgrace, I warrant it. Be it what it will, I will present him with as good a one.

'I will write in it, " Memorandum, This Book " reverfing the Author's good Intention, had like to " have done Mischief next to unpardonable!"-· Or, " This Book, instead of subduing the Rea-" der's Paffions, (I take it for granted, you fee, " Mifs, it was Seneca's Morals, or some such good " Book) had like to have been the Cause of a vio-" lent Evil .- Henceforth, unavailing Instructor, " be thou condemned to stand by thyself on a lone " Shelf in my Closet; a Shelf most out of mine " or any other Person's Reach, for pretending to " prescribe Rules for subduing the Passions in so in-" efficacious a Manner! And, confign'd to Duft " and Cobwebs, not once prefume (in hope to hide " thy confcious Guilt) to squeeze thyself into Rank " with better, or at least with more convincing " Teachers!"

But do you think, dear Madam, Sir Simon would be angry, if Opportunity had offer'd, and I had been thus bold? If you think fo, don't let him fee I had fuch Thoughts in my Head. But after all, if he were to have been thus freely treated by me, and if he should have blush'd with Anger at my breedom, 'tis but what he ought to bear from me; for more than once has he made me blulb for Shame, at much greater on his Part; nay, and that too, in Prefence of his virtuous Daughters: So, that I have but half my Revenge upon him yet. -And will you bear Malice, will he fay, Mrs. B.? - Yes, Sir Simon, I will; and nothing but your amending the Evil can make me forgive a Gentleman, that is really a Gentleman, who can fo fadly forego his Character, and, before any Company, not scruple to expose a modest Virgin to the forward Leer, and loud Laugh, of younger Gentlemen, who durst not take such Liberties of Speech. as they would faucily chuckle at, when coming from the Mouth of one of Sir Simon's authenticating, but better promifing Time of Life.

But Sir Simon will fay, I have already undertiken him, were he to see this. Yet my Lady
Darnford once begg'd I would give him a Hint or
two on this Subject, which, she was pleased to say,
would be better received from me than from any
body: And if it be a little too severe, it is but a
just Reprisal made by one whose Ears, he knows,
he has cruelly wounded more than once, or
twice, or three times, besides by what he calls his
innocent double Entendres, and who, if she had
not refented it, when an Opportunity offer'd, must
have been believed by him, to be neither more nor
less than a Hypocrite—There's for you, Sir Simon:
And so here ends all my Malice: for now I have

· poken my Mind.

Yet I hope your dear Papa will not be so angry with me neither, as to deny me, for this my Freedom, the Request I make to him, to your Mamma, and to your dear Self, for your beloved Company, for a Month or two in Beafordshire, and at London: And if you might be permitted to winter with us at the latter, how happy should I be! It will be half done, the Moment you desire it. Sir Simon loves you too well to resuse you, if you are earnest in it. Your honoured Mamma is always indulgent to your requests: And Mr. B. as well in Kindness to me, as for the great Respect he bears you, joins with me to beg this Favour of

' If it can be obtain'd, what Pleafure and Improve-

vou, and of Sir Simon, and my Lady.

ment may I not propose to myself, with so polite a Companion, when we are carried by Mr. B. to the Play, to the Opera, and other of the Town · Diversions! We will work together; visit together, read together, fing together; and improve one another; you me, in every Word you shall · fpeak, in every thing you shall do; I you, by my · Questions, and Defire of Information, which will " make you open all your Breast to me; and so un-· locking that dear Storehouse of virtuous Know-· ledge, improve your own Notions the more for • communicating them. O my dear Miss Darnford! how happy is it in your Power to make me! · I am much affected with the Account you give me of Mrs. Jewkes's Reformation. I could have wished, had I not other and stronger Inducements (in the Pleasure of so agreeable a Neighbourhood, and so sweet a Companion) that on her · Account, I could have been down at the Hall, in hopes to have confirm'd the poor Woman in her newly-affum'd Penitence. God give her Grace to • persevere in it!—To be an humble Means of ' faving a Soul from Perdition! O my dear Miss

· Darnford,

· Darnford, let me enjoy that Heart-ravishing Hope! - To pluck fuch a Brand as this out of the Fire, and to affift to quench its flaming Susceptibility for · Mischief, and make it useful to edifying Purposes, what a Pleafure does this afford one! How does it encourage one to proceed in the Way one has been guided to purfue! How does it make me hope, that I am raifed to my prefent Condition, in order to be an humble Instrument in the Hand of Providence to communicate great Good to others, and of fo extend to many, those Benefits I have receiv'd, which, were they to go no farther than myfelt, what a vile, what an ungrateful Creature should 4 1 bc

I tee, my dearest Mus Darnford, how useful in every Condition of Life a virtuous and a ferious

· Turn of Mind may be!

How have I feen some Ladies in Upper Life behave as if they thought good Actions, and a pious Demeanour, would be to unfathionable, as to ' make them the Subjects of Ridicule to the lighterdispos'd World, and so they are shamed out of their Duty! But let me make it my Boast, that here is fuch a poor Girl as I, raifed from the Cottage to the l'alace, as I may may, persevering in the good Purpofes which had been infilled into her, by worthy, the poor Parents, and the best of Ladies, her Militress, and resolving to be obstinate in Goodness, having stood the Test of Libertinoim; has brought the World to expect good Actions from her, to respect her for doing them; and has even found her Example efficacious, thro' Divine Grace, to bring over to Penitence and Imitation a poor Creature who used to ridicule her for nothing to much as for her Innocence and ' Virtue, which, Word and Thing, were the con-' frant Subjects of her Scorn, as well as the Caufe of her Perfecution.

But let me not too much dwell upon the Thought, left I fall into the Snare, that, of all

others, Persons meaning well have Reason to

dread; that of Spiritual Pride, the most dangerous
 of all Pride.

In hopes of feeing you with us, I will not en-· large on feveral agreeable Subjects, which I could touch upon with Pleasure, besides what I gave you in my former (of my Reception here, and of the · Kindness of our genteel Neighbours;) such, particularly, as the Arrival here of my dear Father and Mother, and the kind, generous Entertainment they met with from my best Friend: His · Condescension in not only permitting me to attend them to Kent, but accompanying us thither, and · fettling them in a most happy Manner, beyond their Wishes and my own; but yet so much in Character, as I may fay, that every one must ap-' prove his judicious Benevolence: The Favours of · my good Lady Davers to me, who, pleafed with ' my Letters, has youchfal'd to become my Corref-· pondent; and a thousand, thousand Things, which 'I want personally to communicate to my dear · Miss Darnford.

Be pleased to present my humble Respects to Lady Darnsord, and to Miss Nanny; to good Madam Jones, and to your kind Friends at Stamford; to Mr. and Mrs. Peters likewise, and their Kinswoman: And beg of that good Gentleman from me to encourage his new Proselyte all he can; and I doubt not, she will do credit, poor Woman! to the Pains he shall take with her. In hopes of your kind Compliance with my Wishes

· for your Company, I remain,

Dearest Miss Darnford, Your faithful and obliged Friend and Servant, P. B. This, my good Lady Davers, is the long Letter I fent to Miss Darnford, who, at parting, engag'd me to keep up a Correspondence with her, and put me in hopes of passing a Month or two with us, at the Hall, if we came down, and if she could persuade Sir Simon and her Mamma to spare her to my Wishes. Your Ladyship will excuse me for so faintly mentioning the Honours you confer upon me; but I would not either add or diminish in the Communications I make to you.

The following is the Copy of what I wrote to

Mrs. Texukes.

YOU give me, Mrs. Jewkes, very great Pleafure, to find that at length God Almighty
has touch'd your Heart, and let you fee, while
Health and Strength lasted, the Error of your
Ways.—Many an unhappy one has not been so
graciously touched, till they have smarted under
some heavy Assistions, or till they have been confin'd to the Bed of Sickness, when perhaps, they
have made Vows and Resolutions, that have
held them no longer than the Discipline lasted;
But you give me much better Hopes of the Sincerity of your Conversion; as you are so well
convinced, before some fore Evil has overtaken
you: And it ought to be an Earnest to you of
the Divine Favour, and should keep you from
Despondency.

As to me, it became me to forgive you, as I most cordially did, since your Usage of me, as it provide, was but a necessary Means in the Hand of Providence, to exalt me to that State of Happiness, in which I have every Day more and more Cause given me to rejoice, by the kindest and most

egenerous of Gentlemen.

As I have often pray'd for you, even when you used me the most unkindly, I now prasse God for having heard my Prayers, and with high Delight

· look upon you as a reclaimed Soul given to my · Supplication. May the Divine Goodness enable you to perfevere in the Course you have entered upon! And when you can taste the all-surpassing Pleasure that fills the worthy Breast, on being placed in a Station where your Example may be or Advantage to the Souls of others, as well as to your own; a Pleasure that every good Mind e glories in, and none else can truly relish; then ' may you be affured, that nothing but your Perfeverance, and the confequential Improvement re-· fulting from it, is wanted, to convince you, that t you are in a right Way; and that the Woe that is pronounced against the presumptuous Sinner,

belongs not to you.

Let me therefore, dear Mrs. Jewkes, (for now · indeed you are dear to me) caution you against two Things; the one, that you return not to your for-· mer Ways, and willfully err after this Repentance; for, in this Cafe, the Divine Goodness will look upon itself as mocked by you, and will withdraw itself from you; and more dreadful will your State then be, than if you had never repented: The other, that you don't despair of the Divine Mercy, which has so evidently manifested itself in · your Favour, and has awaken'd you out of your deplerable Lethary, without those sharp Medicines and Operations, which others, and perhaps " not more faulty l'ersons, have suffer'd. But go on · cheerfully in the happy Path which you have begun to tread. Depend upon it, you are now in the right Way, and turn not either to the Righthand or to the left: For the Reward is before you, in Reputation and a good Fame in this Life, and · everlatting Fencity beyond it.

Your Letter is that of a fenfible Voman, as I always thought you, and of a truly contrite one, as I hope you will approve yourieff to be; and I

LIIS

- the rather hope it, because I shall be always defirous, then, of taking every Opportunity that offers
- to me of doing you real Service, as well with regard to your present as future Life: For I am,
- good Mrs. Jewkes, as I now hope I may call you,

Your loving Friend to serve you, P. B.

- Whatever good Books the worthy Mr. Peters
 - ' will be so kind as to recommend to you, and for those under your Direction, send for them
 - either to Lincoln, or Stamford, or Grantham,
 - as you can get them, and place them to my
 - Account: And may they be the effectual
 - ' Means of confirming you and them in the good
 - Way you are in! I have done as much for
 - all here! and, I hope, to no bad Effect:
 - For I shall now tell them, by Mrs. Fervis,
 - if there be Occasion, that I hope they will
 - onot let me be out-done in Bedfordhire, by
 - . Mrs. Fewkes in Lincolnsbire; but that the
 - Scryants of both Houses may do Credit to the
 - best of Masters. Adieu, good Woman! as
 - once more I take Pleasure to style you.'

Thus, my good Lady, have I obey'd you, in tranferibing these two Letters. I will now proceed to

your Ladyship's twelve Articles. As to the

1. I will oblige your Ladyship, as I have Opportunity, in my future Letters, with such Accounts of my dear Lady's Favour and Goodness to me, as I think will be acceptable to you, and to the noble

Ladies you mention.

2. I am extremely delighted, that your Lady hip thinks fo well of my dear honest Parents: Indeed they are good People, and ever had Minds that fet them above low and fordid Actions; and God and your good Brother has rewarded them most amply in

this World, which is more than they ever expected, after a Series of Unprosperousness in all they undertook.

Your Ladyship is pleased to say, that People in Upper Life love to see how plain Nature operates in honest Minds, who have hardly any thing else for their Guide; and if I might not be thought to descend too low for your Ladyship's Attention, (for as to myself, I shall, I hope, always look back with Pleasure to what I was, in order to increase my Thankfulness for what I am) I would give you a Scene of Resignation, and contented Poverty, of which otherwise your Ladyship can hardly have a Notion. I will give it, because it will be a Scene of Nature, however low, which your Ladyship loves, and it shall

not tire you by its Length.

It was upon Occasion of a great Loss and Disappointment which happened to my dear Parents (for tho' they were never high in Life, yet they were not always to low as my honoured Lady found them, when the took me:) My poor Father came home, and as the Lofs was of fuch a Nature, as that he could not keep it from my Mother, he took her Hand, I remember well, and faid, after he had acquainted her with it, " Come, my Dear, let us take Comfort, " that we did for the best. We left the Issue to " Providence, as we ought, and that has turned it as " it pleafed; and we must be content, tho' not fa-" voured as we wished. All the Business is, our Lot " is not cast for this Life. Let us refign ourselves " to the Divine Will, and continue to do our Duty, " and this short Life will soon be past. Our "Troubles will be quickly overblown; and we shall " be happy in a better, I make no doubt."

Then my dear Mother threw her kind Arms about his Neck, and faid with Tears, "God's Will be done, my dear Love!—All cannot be rich and happy. I am contented, and had rather tay, I have

have a poor honest Husband, than a guilty rich one. What signifies repining; Let the World go as it will, we shall have our Length and our Breadth at last. And Providence, I make no doubt, will be a better Friend to our good Girl here, because she is good, than we could be, if this had not happened, "—pointing to me, who, then about kleven Years old, (for it was before my Ledy took me) fat weeping to the Chinancy-corner, over a few dying Labors of a Fire, at their moving Expressions.

I arose, and kissing both their Hands, and blessing them, said, "And this Length and Breedth, my dear Parents, will be one Day, all that the Rich and the Great can policis; and, it may be, their ungracious fields will trample upon their Ashes, and rejoice they are gone: While such a poor Girl as I, am honouring the Memories of mine, who in their good Names, and good Lessons, will have

" left me the best of Portions."

And then may both hugg'd their prating Girl to their fond Bosams, by Turns; and all three were so filled with Confort in one another, that after joining in a grateful Hymn, we went to Bed (what the supperless perhaps?) with such true Joy, that very sew of the Rich and Great can have any Idea of it; I to my Loft, and they to their Rush-sloor'd cleanly Bedroom. And we have had sweet Sleep and Dreams so pleasant, that we have reaped greater Pleasures, in the peating them one to another, at our next Leisure-Hour, than, possibly, we should have received, had we enjoy'd the Comforts we wanted.

And, truly, I must needs say, that while the virtuous Poor can be blessed with such sweet Enjoyments as these, in contented Minds all Day, and in sound Sleep at Night, I don't know whether they have not more, even of this World's Pleasures, than the abounding Rich: And while the Hours of Night bear so near a Proportion to those of the

Day, may not fuch be faid, even at the worst, to pass at least baif their Lives with more Comfort than many times the voluptuous and distancered Great

can pretend to know?

For a farther Proof that bonest Powerty is not fuch a deplorable Thing as fome People imagine, let me ask, What Pleasure can those over-happy Perfons know, who from the Luxury of their Taltes, and their affluent Circumstances, always eat before they are hungry, and drink before they are thirsty? This may be illustrated by the Instance of a certain Eastern Monarch, who, as I have read, marching at the head of a vast Army through a wide-extended Defart, which afforded neither a River nor Spring, for the first Time, found himself (in common with his Soldiers) overtaken by a craving Thirst, which made him wish for, and pant after a Cup of Water. And when at last, after diligent and diffant Search, one of his Soldiers found a little dirty Puddle, and carried him fome of the filthy Water in his nasty Helmet, the Monarch, greedily fwallowing it, cry'd out, That in all his Life he never tafted fo fweet a Draught!

But when I talk or write of my worthy Parents, how I run on!—Excuse me, my good Lady; and don't think me, in this respect, too much like the Cat in the * Fable, turn'd into a fine Lady; for, methinks, tho' I would never forget what I was, yet I would be thought to know how, gratefully to enjoy my present Happiness, as well with regard to my Obligations to God, as to your dear Brother. But let me proceed to your Ladyship's third Par-

ticular.

3. And you cannot imagine, Madam, how much you have fet my Heart at Rest, when you tell me, that

^{*} See the Æfop's Fables, fold by J. Rivington, in St. Paul's Church Yard.

my dear Mr. B. gave me a just Narrative of his Affair with Miss Goafrey: For, when your Ladyship defu'd to know how he had recounted that Story, lest you should make a Misunderstanding between us unawares, I did not know what to think. I was afraid some Blood had been shed on the Occasion by him: For the Lady was ruin'd, and as to her, nothing could have happen'd worse. And the Regard I have for Mr. E.'s tuture Happines, which in my constant Supplications for him in private, costs me many a Tear, gave me great Apprehensions, and not a little Uneasiness. But as your Ladyship tells me, that he gave me a just Account, I am happy again.

What makes one, my dear Lady, in our most prosperous Condition, be always intermingling one's Fears of what may be; whereby one robs one's self of the Pleasure of one's best worldly Enjoyments?— Is this Apprehensiveness, does your Ladyship think, implanted in our Natures for wise and good Ends, that we may not think ourselves so happy here, as to cause us to forget, that there is a better, and more perfectly happy State, which we ought to aspire after? I believe it is: And if so, what an useful Monitor do we carry about us, that shall make us consider and reslect, when in Prosperity; and in Adversity teach us to bear up to Hopes of a happier Lot! Thus it is said by Mr. Narris, in his Translation of one of Horace's Odes,

Be Life and Spirit when Fortune proves unkind, And framon up the Vigour of thy Mind; But when thou'rt driven by too officious Gales, Be wife, and gather in the fwelling Sails.

I now come to your Ladyship's fourth Parti-

And highly delighted I am for having obtained your Approbation of my Conduct to the Child, as well

well as of my Behaviour towards the dear Gentleman, on the unhappy Lady's Score. Your Ladythip's wile Intimations about having the Child with me, make due Impressions upon me; and I see in them, with grateful Pleafure, your unmerited Regard for me. Yet, I don't know how it is, but I have conceived a strange Passion for this dear Baby: I cannot but look upon her poor Mamma as my Sifter in point of Trial: And thall not the prosperous Sifter paty and love the poor dear Sifter, that, in fo flippery a Path, has failen, while for had the Happinels to keep her Feet

No doubt, Miss Golfrey loved Virtue, and preferred it to all Confiderations: 'T is plain the did even after her Fall—when, as I have observed in the r'apers * I fent your Ladythip, the could leave Country, Parents, Friends, and the Man of all others the loved best, and feek a new Fortune, run the Danger of the Seas, and perhaps the Hazards of meeting with worse Men, rather than trust to her own Strength, where it had once fo unhappily failed her. -- What a Love of Virtue for Virtue's Sake is this? I know not who could have acted up to this Pair of her

Character.

The reft of your Ladyship's Articles gave me the greatest Pleasure and Satisfaction; and if I can but continue myfelf in the Favour of your dear Brother, and improve in that of his noble Sifter, how happy shall I be! I will do ail I can to deferve both. And I hope your Ladyship will take as an Instance that I will, the cheerful Obedience which I pay to your Commands, in writing to fo fine a Judge, tuch crude and indigested Stuff, as otherwise I ought to be afham'd to lay before you.

I am impatient for the Honour, which your Ladvthip makes me hope for of your Pretence here;

hill

And yet I perplex myfelf with the Fear of appearing to unworthy in your Eye when near you, as to fuster in your Opinion; but I promise myfelf, that however this may be the Case on your first Visit, I shall be so much improved by the Benefits I shall reap from your Lessons and good Example, that whenever I shall be favoured with a second, you shall have fewer Faults to find with me; till, as I shall be more and more savoured, I shall in time be just what your Ladyship will with me to be, and of consequence, more worthy than I am of the Honour of styling myself,

Your Ladyship's most humble and obedient Servant,

P. B.

LETTER XXI.

From Miss Darnford. In Answer to Mrs. B.'s. p. 101.

My dear Mrs. B.

1

I

ic

10

Di

Y OU are highly obliging to me in expressing so warmly your Wishes to have me with you. I know not any body in this World, out of our own Family, in whose Company I shall be happier: But my Papa won't part with me, I think; tho' I have secur'd my Mamma in my Interest; and I know Nancy would be glad of my Absence, because the dear perversely Envious thinks me more valued than she is; and yet, foolish Girl, she don't consider, that if her Envy be well-grounded, I should return with more than double Advantages to what I now have, improv'd by your charming Conversation.

My Papa affects to be in a featful Pet at your lecturing of him so justly; for my Mamma would shew him the Letter; and he says he will positively

demand

demand Satisfaction of Mr. B. for your treating him to freely. And yet he shall hardly think him, he fays, on a Rank with him, unless Mr. B. will, on occasion of the new Commission, take out his Desirmus: And then if he will bring you down to Lincolnshire, and join with him to commit you Prisoner

for a Month at the Hall, all shall be well.

It is very obliging in Mr. B. to join in your kind Invitation: But—yet I am loth to fay it to you—the Character of your worthy Gentleman, I doubt, stands a little in the Way with my Papa: For he will have it, that he is just such a Rake as is to be liked by a Lady; one that saves common Appearances, and that's all; and is too handsome, too witty, and too enterprising, for any honest Man, that's Sir Simon's

Phrase, to trust his Daughter with.

My Mamma pleaded his being marry'd.—Adsdines, Madam, faid he, what of all that! What married Man, when a pretty Girl's in the Way, minds his Wife, except the has made him stand infear of her? and that's far from the Case here. Why I tell you, added his previth Highness, if our Poly should happen to slip, (I thank him for his Supposition) he'd make his Lady nurse both her and the Bastard, (another of his polite Expressions) if he has a mind to it, and she durst not resuse him. And would you trust such a sprightly Girl as Polly, in the House with such a Fellow as that!

These, it seems, were his Words and his Reasonings: I thank him for his Opinion of his Daughter. It becomes not me to say, by what Rules my Papa judges of Mankind; Rules, however, that are not much to the Credit of his Sex:—But it made me put on very grave Airs when I came to supper, (for after this Repulse, and the Reasons given for it, I pretended Indisposition, not to dine with my Papa, being half-vexed, and half-afraid of his Raillery) and he said, Why, how now Pally! What! in the Su-

lens,

lens, Girl: I faid I should have hoped, that I never gave my Papa cause to suspect my Conduct, and that he would have had a better Opinion of the Force which the Example and Precepts of my good Mamma had upon me.

Not your Papa's Example then --- Very well,

Saucebox: I understand you.

ľ

.

15

C

2

11

00

i's

5-

lat

114

111

hiv

01/4

00-

E ic

lı i

ind.

Lic

Oil-

. .t

lous

uch

t on

after

pre-

be-

and

Su -

lens,

But, Sir, said I, I hope, if I may not go to Bed-fordshire, you'll permit me to go to London, when Mrs. B. goes.

No, faid he, positively no!

Well, Sir, I have done. I could hope, however, you would enable me to give a better Reason to good Mrs. B. why I am not permitted to accept of the kind Invitation, than that which I understand you

have been pleafed to affign.

He stuck his Hands in his Sides, with his usual humorous Positiveness, Why then tell her, she is a very faucy Lady, for her last Letter to you; and her Lord and Master is not to be trusted; and it is my absolute Will and Pleasure that you ask me no more Questions about it.

I will very faithfully make this Report, Sir. Do fo.—And fo I have.—And your poor Polly Darnford is disappointed of one of the greatest Pleasures

the could have had.

I can't help it.—And if you truly pity me, I can put you in a Way to make me easier under the Difappointment, than otherwise I can possibly be; and that is, to favour me with an Epistolary Conversation, since I am deny'd a Personal one; and this my Mamma joins with me to request of you; and particularly, to let us know how Lady Davers's first Visit passes; which Mrs. Peters and Mrs. Jones, who know my Lady so well, likewise long to hear. And this will make us the best Amends in your Power for the loss of your good Neighbourhood, which we had all promis'd to ourselves.

5

This Denial of my Papa comes out, fince I wrote the above, to be principally owing to a Proposal made him of an humble Servant to one of his Daughters: He won't say which, he tells us, in his usual humorous Way, lest we should fall out about it.

I suppose, I tell him, the young Gentleman is to pick and choose, which of the two he likes best. But be he a Duke, 'tis all one to Polly, if he be not something above our common Lincolnshire Class of

Fox-hunters.

I have thewn Mr. and Mrs. Peters your Letter. They admire you beyond Expression; and Mr. Peters says, He does not know, that ever he did any thing in all his Life, that gave him so much inward Reproach, as his denying you the Protection of his Family, which Mr. Williams * sought to move him to afford you, when you were confined at the Hall, before Mr. B. came down to you, with his Heart bent on Mischies; and all he comforts himself with is, that that very Denial, as well as the other Hardships you met with, were necessary to bring about that Work of Providence which was to reward your unexampled Virtue.

Yet, he fays he doubts he shall not be thought excusable by you, who are so exact in your own Duty, since he had the Unhappiness to lose such an Opportunity to have done Honour to his Function, had he had the Fortitude to have done bis; and he begg'd of me, some how or other, and at some time or other, to hint his Concern to you on this Head, and to express his Hopes, that neither Religion nor his Cloth may suffer in your Opinion, for the Fault of one of its Professors, who never was wanting in

his Duty fo much before.

He had it often upon his Mind, he fays, to write to you on this very Subject: but he had not the

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 175.

Courage; and besides, did not know how Mr. B. might take it, if he should see that Letter, as the Case had such delicate Circumstances in it, that in blaming himself, as he should very freely have done, he must, by implication, have cast still greater Blame

upon him.

Mr. Peters is certainly a very good Man, and my Favourite for that Reason; and I hope you, who could so easily forgive the late wicked, but now penitent Jewkes, will overlook with Kindness a Fault in a good Man, which proceeded more from Pusullanimity and Constitution, than from want of Principle: For once, talking of it to my Mamma, before me, he accused himself on this Score, to her, with Tears in his Eyes. She, good Lady, would have given you this Protection at Mr. Williams's Desire; but wanted the * Power to do it.

So you see, my dear Mrs. B. how your Virtue has shamed every one into such a Sense of what they ought to have done, that Good, Bad and Indifferent are seeking to make Excuses for past Misbehaviour, and to promise suture Amendment, like penitent Subjects returning to their Duty to their conquering Sovereign, after some unworthy Desection.

Happy, happy Lady! May you ever be so! May you always convert your Enemies, invigorate the Lukewarm, and every Day multiply your Friends,

wishes,

Your most affectionate POLLY DARNFORD.

P. S. How I rejoice in the Joy of your honest Parents! God bless 'em! I am glad Lady Davers is so wife. Every one I have named desire their best Respects. Let me hear from you oftener, and omit not the minutest Thing: For every Line of yours carries Instruction with it.

Vol. III. G LET-* See Vol. I. p. 174.

LETTER XXII.

From Sir SIMON DARNFORD to Mr. B.

SIR,

ITTLE did I think I should ever have Occafion to make a formal Complaint against a Perton very dear to you, and who I believe deserves to be so; but don't let her be so proud and so vain of obliging and pleasing you, as to make her not care how she affronts every-body else.

The Person is no other than the Wise of your Bosom, who has taken such Liberties with me, as ought not to be taken, and sought to turn my own Child against me, and make a dutiful Girl a Rebel.

If People will fet up for Virtue, and all that, let 'em be uniformly virtuous, or I would not give a

Farthing for their Pretences.

Here I have been plagued with Gouts, Rheumatisms, and nameless Disorders, ever since you left us, which have made me call for a little more Attendance than ordinary; and I had Reason to think myself flighted, where an indulgent Father can leaft bear to be for that is, where he most loves; and that by young Upstarts who are growing up to the Enjoyment of those Pleasures which have run away from me, fleeting Rafcals as they are! before I was willing to part with them. And I rung and rung, and Where's Pelly? (for I honour the Slut with too much of my Notice,) Where's Polly? was all my Cry, to every one who came up to ask what I rung for. And, at last, in burst the pert Baggage, with an Air of Assurance, as if she thought all must be well the Moment the appear'd, with, Do you want me, Papa !

Do I want you, Confidence! Yes, I do. Where have you been these two Hours, that you never came

rear me, when you knew 'twas my Time to have my Foot rubb'd, which gives me mortal Pain? For you must understand, Mr. B. that nobody's Hand's so soft

as Polly's.

She gave me a faucy Answer, as I was disposed to think it, because I had just then a Twinge, that I could scarce bear; for Pain is a plaguy thing to a Man of my lively Spirits. Why with a Pox to it, cannot it go and rouse up some stupid lethargick Rascal, whose Blood is ready to stagnate? There it might do some Good; and not make an honest Man miterable as it does me, who want none of its pungent Helps to Feeling.

She gave me, I fay, a careless Answer, and turn'd upon her Heel; and not coming to me at my first Word, I flung a Book, which I had in my Hand, at

her Head.

e

t

C

This the Boldface (Girls now-a-days make nothing of exposing their indulgent Parents) has mentioned in a Letter to your Lady: and she has abused me upon it in such a Manner!—Well, if you don't take some Course with her, I must with you, that's positive; and, young as you are, and a Cripple as I am, I'll stump to an appointed Place, to procure to myself the Satisfaction of a Man of Honour.

Your Lady has written to Polly what she would have said to me on this Occasion. She has reflected upon me for not reading a Book of Mortification, when I was labouring under so great a Sense of it, and confin'd to my Elbow-Chair in one Room, whom lately half a Dozen Counties could hardly have contain'd: She has put it into Polly's Head to sling this very Book at her Sister's Head, in imitation of my Example, and hopes Nancy will sling it at somebody's else, till it goes all round the House: She reproaches me for making no better Use of a good Book, as she calls Rabelais's Pantagrael, which I in-

G 2 nocently

nocently was reading, to make me the more cheerfully bear my Misfortune; and runs on a Pack of Stuff about my Polly's Eyes, and Skin, and I don't know what, on purpose to fill the Girl with Notions of what don't belong to her, in order to make her proud and faucy; and then, to inspire her with Insolence to me, runs on with Suppositions of what Harm I might have done her, had the Book bruifed her Face, or put out her Eyes, and fo forth: As if our Daughters Eyes were not our own Eyes, their brazen Faces our brazen Faces; at least till we can find somebody to take them, and all the rest of their Trumpery, off our Hands.—Saucy Baggages! who have neither Souls nor Senses but what they have borrowed from us; and whose very Bones, and the Shin that covers them, fo much their Pride and their Ornament, are to many Parts of our own undervalued Skin and Bones; for our Skins are only more wrinkled, by taking Pains to make theirs imooth.

Nay, this fine Lady of yours, this Paragon of Mechae's and Humility, in its many Words, bias me, or, which is worfe, tells my own Daughter to bid me, never to take a Book in my Hands again, if I won't make a better Use of it:—And yet, what better Use can an offended Father make of the best Books, than to correct a rebellious Child with them, and oblige a laucy Daughter to jump into her Duty all at once?

Then, Pray, Sir, do you allow your Lady to beg Prefents from Gentlemen? —— This is a tender Point to touch upon: But you shall know all, I am refolv'd. For here she fends to desire me to make her a Present of this very Book, and promises to send me another as good.

Come, come, Sir, these are no jesting Matters; for is it not a sad Thing to think of, that Ladies, let them be young or old, well-marry'd or ill-marry'd, cannot live without Intrigue? And here, if I were

not a very honest Man, and your Friend, and resolved to be a virtuous Man too, in spite of Temptation, one does not know what might be the Consequence of such a Correspondence as is here begun, or rather desired to be begun; for I have too much Honour to give into it for your take; and I hope you'll think yourself much obliged to me.—I know the Time that I have improved a more mysterious Hint than this, into all that I had a mind to make of it. And it may be very happy for you, Neighbour, that I must and would be virtuous, let the Temptation be from whom it will: For the finest Lady in the World is nothing to me now—in this my Reserved State.

But this is not all: Mrs. B. goes on to reflect upon me for making her blush formerly, and saying Things before my Daughters, that, truly, I ought to be ashamed to far; and then avows Malice and Revenge, and all that. Why, Sir, why Neighbour, are these Things to be borne?—Do you allow your Lady to set a general Corrector of every body's Morel of a general Corrector of every body's Morel of the sear polite Double Entendre, which keeps alive the Atlantion, and quickens the Apprehension, of the best Companies in the World, and is the Salt, the Sauce, which gives a Poignancy to all our genteeler Entertainments?

Very fine, truly! that more than half the World shall be shut out of Society, shall be precluded their Share of Conversation amongst the Gay and Polite of both Sexes, were your Lady to have her Will! Let her first find People who can support a Conversation with Wit and good Sense like her own, and then something may be said: But till then, I positively say, and will swear upon Occasion, that Double Entendre shall not be banished from our Tables; and where this won't raise a Blush, or create a Laugh, we will

be at Liberty, if we please, for all Mrs. B. and her new-sangled Notions, to force the one and the other by still plainer Hints; and let her help herself how she can.

Thus, Sir, you find my Complaints are of a high Nature, regarding the Quiet of a Family, the Duty of a Child to a Parent, the Advances of a married Lady to a Gentleman who is resolved to be virtuous, and the Freedom and Politeness of Convertation; in all which Points your Lady has greatly offended; and I insist upon Satisfaction from you, or such a Correction of the fair Transgressor, as is in your Power to inslict, and which may prevent worse Consequences from

Your offended Friend and Servant,

SIMON DARNFORD.

LETTER XXIII.

From Mr. B. In Answer to the preceding one.

Dear Sir SIMON,

Y OU cannot but believe, that I was much furprifed at your Letter, complaining of the Behaviour of my Wife. I could no more have expected fuch a Complaint from fuch a Gentleman, than I could, that she would have deserved it: And I am very forry on both Accounts. I have talked to her in such a Manner, that, I dare say, she will never give you like Cause to appeal to me.

It happened, that the Criminal herself received your Letter from her Servant, and brought it to me in my Closet; and, making her Honours, (for I can't say but she is very obliging to me, tho' she takes such saucy Freedoms with my Friends) away she tript; and I, enquiring for her, when, with Surprise, as you may believe, I had read your Charge,

found

found fhe was gone to visit a poor sick Neighbour; of which indeed she had before appris'd me, because the took the Chariot; but I had forgot it in my Wrath.

"Twas well for her, that she was not in the Way: a perhaps I should have taken more severe Methods with her in my first Emotions; and I longed for her Return: And there is another Well for-her too, in her Case; for one would be loth to spoil a Son and Heir, you know, Sir Simon, before we see whether the little Varlet may deserve one's Consideration.

I mention these Things, that you may observe it was not owing to any Regard for the Offender herself that I did not punish her as much as injur'd

Friendship requir'd at my Hands.

At last, in the came, with that fweet Composure in her Face which refults from a Consciousness of doing generally just and generous Things, altho' in this Instance, she has so egregiously err'd, that it behoves me (as well in justice to my Friend, as in policy to myfelf; for who knows whither first Faults may lead, if not check'd in Time?) to nip fuch Boldness in the Bud. And indeed the Moment I beheld the Charmer of my Heart (for I do love her too well, that's certain) all my Anger was disarm'd; and had the Offence regarded myself, I must have forgiven her, in spite of all my meditated Wrath. But it behoved me in a Friend's Cafe not to be foon fubdu'd by a too partial Fondness: I refumed therefore that Sternness and Displeasure which her Entrance had almost dissipated. I took her Hand: Her charming Eye (you know what an Eye she has, Sir Simon) quiver'd at my over-clouded Afpect; and her Lips, halfdrawn to a Smile, trembled with Apprehension of a Countenance fo chang'd from what the left it.

And then, all stiff and stately as I could look, did I accost her; Come along with me Pamela, to

my Closet. I want to talk with you.

G 4

Dear

Dear Sir! good Sir! What's the Matter! what

We enter'd. I sat down still holding her unsteady Hand, and her Pulse sluttering under my Finger like

a dying Bird.

Fis well, faid I, 'tis well your prefent Condition pleads for you; and I must not carry what I have to say too far, for Considerations less in your Favour, than for one unseen: But I have great Complaints against you.

Against me, Sir!—What have I done? Let me know, dear good Sir! looking round, with her half-affrighted Eyes, this way and that, on the Books,

and Pictures, and on me, by Turns.

You shall know soon, said I, the Crime you have

been guilty of.

Grine, Sir! Pray let me!—This Closet, I hoped, would not be a fecend Time Witness to the Flutter you put me in.

There hangs a Tale, Sir Simon, which I am not very fond of relating, fince it gave Beginning to the

Triumphs of this little * Sorcerefs.

I still held one Hand, and she stood before me, as Criminals ought to do before their Judge; but said, I see, Sir, sure I do, or what else will become of me! less Severity in your Eyes, than you affect to put on in your Countenance. Dear Sir, let me know my Fault: I will repent, acknowledge, and amend: Let me but know it.

You must have great Presence of Mind, Pamela, such is the Nature of your Fault, if you can look

me in the Face, when I tell it you.

Then let me, faid the irrefistible Charmer, hiding her Face in my Bosom, and putting her other Arm about my Neck, let me thus, my dear Mr. B. hide this guilty Face, while I hear my Fault told; and I

will not feek to extenuate it, but by my Tears, and

my Penitence.

I could hardly hold out. What infatuating Creatures are these Women, when they can think it thus worth their while to soothe and calm the Tumults of an angry Heart! When, instead of segraful Looks darted in Return for angry ones, Words of Desiance for Words of Peevishness, persisting to defend one Error by another, and returning vehement Wrath for slight Indignation, and all the hostile Provocations of the Marriage Warsare; they can thus hide their dear Faces in our Bosoms, and wish but to know their Faults to amend them!

I could hardly, I fay, refift the fweet Girl's Behaviour; nay, I believe I did, unawares to myfelf, and in Defiance of my refolv'd Displeasure, press her Forehead with my Lips, as the rest of her Face was hid on my Breast: But, confidering it was the Cause of my Friend that I was to affert, my injured Friend, wounded and insulted in so various a Manner, by the fair Offender, thus haughtily spoke I to the trembling Mischief, in a Pomp of Style thea-

trically tragick:

I will not, too unadvertent and undiffinguishing Pamela, keep you long in Suspense, for the sake of a Circumstance, that, on this Occasion, ought to give you as much Joy, as it has, till now, given me—Since it becomes an Advocate in your Favour, when otherwise you might expect very severe Treatment. Know then, that the Letter you gave me before you went out, is a Letter from a Friend, a Neighbour, a worthy Neighbour, complaining of your Behaviour to him;—no other than Sir Simon Darnford (for I would not amuse her too much;) a Gentleman I must always respect, and whom, as my Friend, I expected you should. Since by the Value a Wife expresses for one esteemed by her Husband, whether she thinks so

well of him herself, or not, a Man ought always to judge of the Sincerity of her Regards to himself.

She raised her Head at once on this: Thank Heaven, said she, it is no worse!——I was at my Wits End almost, in Apprehension: But I know how this must be.—Dear Sir, how could you frighten me so?—I know how all this is!—I can now look you in the Face, and hear all that Sir Simon can charge me with! For I am sure, I have not so affronted him, as to make him angry indeed. And truly, (ran she on, secure of Pardon, as she seemed to think) I should respect Sir Simon not only as your Friend, but on his own Account, if he was not so sad a Rake at a Time of Life—

Then I interrupted her, you must needs think, Sir, Simon; for how could I bear to hear my worthy Friend so freely treated?—How now, Pamela! said I; and is it thus, by repeating your Fault, that you atone for it? Do you think I can bear to hear my

Friend fo freely treated?

Indeed, said she, I do respect Sir Simon very much as your Friend, permit me to repeat; but cannot for his wilful Failings. Would it not be, in some can hear it, and not discourage it, when the Occasion comes in so pat?—And, indeed, I was glad of an Opportunity, continued she, to give him a little Rub; I must needs own it: But if it displeases you, or has made him angry in earnest, I am sorry for it, and will be less bold for the suture.

Read then, faid I, the heavy Charge, and I'll return inflantly to hear your Answer to it. So I went

from her, for a few Minutes.

But, would you believe it, Sir Simon? The feem'd on my Return, very little concern'd at your just Complaints—What felf-justifying Minds have the meekest of these Women!—Instead of finding her in repentant Tears, as one might have expected, the took your angry Letter for a jocular one; and I had

had great Difficulty to convince her of the Heinoufness of her Fault, or the Reality of your Resentment. Upon which, being determined to have Justice done to my Friend, and a due Sense of her own great Error impress'd upon her, I began thus:

Pamela, Pamela, take heed that you do not fuffer the Purity of your own Mind, in breach of your Charity to make you too rigorous a Censurer of other People's Actions: Don't be so puff'd up with your own Persections, as to imagine, that, because other Persons allow themselves Liberties you cannot take, therefore they must be wicked. Sir Simon is a Gentleman who indulges himself in a pleasant Vein, and, I believe, as well as you, has been a great Rake and Libertine (you'll excuse me, Sir Simon, because I am taking your Part:) But what then? You see it is all over with him now: You see, he says himself, that he must, and therefore he will be virtuous: And is a Man for ever to hear of the Faults of his Youth, when he himself is so willing to forget them?

Ah! but, Sir, Sir, faid the bold Slut, can you fay he is willing to forget them?—Does he not repine here in this very Letter, that he must forsake them; and does he not plainly cherish the Inclination, when he owns—She hesitated—Owns what?—You know what I mean, Sir, and I need not speak it: And can there well be a more censurable Character?—Then, dear Sir, before his Maiden Daughters! before his virtuous Lady! before Any-body!
—What a sad Thing is this, at a Time of Life,

which should afford a better Example!

But, dear Sir, continued the bold Prattler, (taking Advantage of a Silence that was more owing to Displeasure than Approbation) let me, for I would not be censorious, (No, not she! in the very Act of Censoriousness to say this!) let me offer but one Thing: Don't you think Sir Simon himself would be both to be thought a reform'd Gentleman!

G 6

Don't you see the Delight he takes, when he speaks of his former Pranks, as if he was forry he could not play them over again? See but how he simpers, and enjoys, as one may say, the Relations of his own rakith Actions, when he tells a bad Story!—And have you not seen how often he has been forc'd to take his Handkerchief to wipe the Outside of his Mouth, though the Inside was least cleanly when he has wounded a Lady's Ears, and turn'd, as it were, his own faulty Heart inside out?—Indeed, Sir, I am afraid, so bad in this way is your worthy Neighbour, that he would account it a Disgrace to him to be thought reform'd. And, how then can I abuse the Gentleman, by representing him in a Light in which he loves to be consider'd?

But, faid I, were this the Case, (for I profess, Sir Simon, I was at a grievous Loss to defend you) for you to write all these free Things against a Father

to his Daughter, is that right, Pamela?

O Sir! the good Gentleman himself has taken care that fuch a Character as I prefum'd to draw to Mils of her Papa, was no strange one to her. You have feen yourfelf, Mr. B. whenever his arch Leers, and the humorous Attitude in which he puts himself on those Occasions, have taught us to expect fome flocking Story, how his Lady and Daughters (us'd to him as they are) have fuffer'd in their Apprehentions of what he would fay, before he spoke it: How, particularly, dear Miss Darnford has look'd at me with Concern, defirous, as it were, if possible, to save her Papa from the Censure, which his faulty Expressions must naturally bring upon And, dear Sir, is it not a fad Thing for a young Lady, who loves and honours her Papa, to observe, that he is discrediting himself, and wants the Example he ought to give? And pardon me, Sir, for fmiling on fo ferious an Occasion; but is it not a fine Sight, do you think, to fee a Gentleman, as

we have more than once feen Sir Simon, when he has thought proper to read a Passage or so, in some bad Book, pulling off his Spectacles, to talk filthily upon it? Methinks I see him now, added the bold Slut, splitting his arch Face with a broad Laugh, shewing a Mouth, with hardly a Tooth in it, while he is making obscene Remarks upon what he has read.

And then the dear Saucy-face laugh'd out, to bear me Company; for I could not, for the Soul of me, avoid laughing heartily at the Figure she brought to my Mind, which I have seen my old Friend make, on two or three Occasions of this Sort, with his dismounted Spectacles, his arch Mouth, and Gums of shining Jet, succeeding those of polish'd Ivory, of which he often boasts, as one Ornament of his youthful Days.—And I the rather in my Heart, Sir Simon, gave you up, because, when I was a sad Fellow, it was always a Maxim with me, to endeavour to touch a Lady's Heart without wounding her Ears. And, indeed, I found my Account sometimes in observing it.

But, resuming my Gravity, Hussy, said I, do you think I will have my old Friend thus made the Subject of your Ridicule?—Suppose a Challenge should have enfued between us on your Account - What might have been the Islue of it? To see an old Gentleman, stumping, as he fays, on Crutches, to fight a Duel in Defence of his wounded Honour? A pretty Sight this would have afforded, would it not? And what (had any one met him on the Way) could he have faid he was going to do? Don't you confider, that a Man is answerable for the Faults of his Wife? And, if my Fondness for you would have made me deny doing Justice to my Friend, and, on the contrary, to refolve in your behalf to give him a Meeting, and he had flung his Crutch at my Head, as he did the Book at his Daughter's, what might have been the Consequence, think you?

Very

Very bad, Sir, to be fure; I fee that, and am forry for it: For had you carry'd off Sir Simon's Crutch, as a Trophy, the poor Gentleman must have lain fighing and groaning like a wounded Soldier in the Field of Battle, till another had been

brought to him, to have flump'd home with.

But, dear Sir Simon, I have brought this Matter to an Issue, that will, I hope, make all easy: And that is this-Miss Polly, and my Pamela, shall both be punished as they deserve, if it be not your own Fault. I am told, that the Sins of your Youth don't fit so heavily upon your Limbs, as they do in your Imagination; and I believe Change of Air, and the Gratification of your Revenge, a fine Help to fuch lively Spirits as yours will fet you up. You shall then take Coach, and bring your pretty Criminal to mine; and when we have them together, they shall humble themselves before us, and it shall be in your Power to absolve or punish them, as you shall fee proper. For I cannot bear to have my worthy Friend infulted in fo heinous a Manner, by a Couple of faucy Girls, who, if not taken down in time, may proceed from Fault to Fault, till there will be no living with them.

If (to be still more serious) your Lady and you will lend Miss Darnford to my Pamela's Wishes, whose Heart is set upon the Hope of her wintering with us in Town, you will lay an Obligation upon us both, which will be acknowledged with great

Gratitude by, Dear Sir,

Your affectionate and humble Servant.

LETTER XXIV.

From Sir SIMON DARNFORD, in Reply.

ARK ye me, Mr. B.—A Word in your Ear:

—I like neither you nor your Wife, to be plain with you, well enough to trust my Pally with you. What I you are to shew her, in your Lady's Case, all the Game of a Lying-in, I suppose; and, at least, set the Girl a longing to make one in the Dance, before I have sound out the proper Man for her Partner.

But here's War declar'd against my poor Gums, it feems. Well, I will never open my Mouth before your Lady as long as I live, if I can help it. I have for these Ten Years avoided to put on my Cravat; and for what Reason, do you think?—Why, because I could not bear to fee what Ruins a few Years have made in a Visage, that us'd to inspire Love and Terror as it pleas'd .- And here your-What-shall-Icall-her of a Wife, with all the Infolence of Youth and Beauty on her Side, follows me with a Glass, and would make me look in it, whether I will or not, I'm a plaguy good-hu nour'd old Fellow-If I am an old Fellow - or I should not bear the Insults contain'd in your Letter. Between you and your Lady, you make a wretched Figure of me, that's certain-And yet, 'tis taking my Part, with a P-x to you, Mr. B. I would have faid; but on your Lady's Account.— You see I have as much more Charity than the, as the has Purity than me: or I thould not have put in that Saving Claufe in her Behalf.

But, what a D—I must I do?—I'd be glad at any Rate to stand in your Lady's Graces, that I would: Nor would I be the last Rake and Libertine unreform'd by her Example, which I suppose will

make Virtue the Fashion, if she goes on as she does. But here I have been us'd to cut a Joke, and toss the Squib about; and, as far as I know, it has help'd to keep me alive in the midst of Pains and Aches, and with two Women-grown Girls, and the rest of the Mortifications that will attend on advanced Years; for I won't (hang me if I will) give it up as abso-

lute Old Age!

I love, I own it, to make a pretty Woman blush; it is double-damasking a fine Rose, as it were; and till I faw your-[Do, let me call her some free Name or other! I always loved to be free with pretty Women!—Till I faw, your-Methinks I like her Arcadian Name, tho' I'm to old a Swain, as not to merit any thing but Rebuke at her Hands-Well then, till I saw your]—Pamela—I thought all Ladies, in their Hearts, lov'd a little Squib of that kind. For why should they not, when it adds so much Grace to their Features, and improves their native Charms?—And often have I tols'd the loke about, as much, in my Intention, to oblige them, as myfelf. -Yet no one can fay, but that I always wrapt it up in clean Linen, as the Saying is-Only fuiting myfelf to my Company, till I had made the dear Rogues sensible, and thew they could apprehend.

But now, it seems, I must leave all this off, or I must be mortify'd with a Looking-glass held before me, and every Wrinkle must be made as conspicuous as a Furrow.—And what, pray, is to succeed to this Reformation?—I can neither fast nor pray, I doubt.—And besides, if my Stomach and my Jest depart

from me, farewel, Sir Simon Darnford!

But cannot I pass as one necessary Character, do you think; as a Foil (as, by-the-bye, some of your own Actions have been to your Lady's Virtue) to set off some more edifying Example, where Variety of Characters make up a Feast in Convertation?

her

I befeech you, Mr. B.'s Pamela, stick me into some Posy among your finer Flowers—And if you won't put me into your Bosom, let me stand in some gay Flower-pot in your Chimney-corner: I may serve for Shew, if not for smell. Or, let me be the Bass in your Musick, or permit my humorous Humdrum to serve as a pardonable kind of Discord to set off your own Harmony.—I verily think, I cannot be so good as you'd have me to be: So pray let your poor Anacreon go off with what he loves. It will be

very cruel, if you won't.

Well but, after all, I believe I might have trufted you with my Daughter, under your Lady's Eye, Rake as you have been yourfelf: And Fame fays wrong, if you have not been, for your Time, a bolder Sinner than ever I was, (with your Maxim of touching Ladies Hearts, without wounding their Ears, which made furer Work with them, that was all) tho' 'tis to be hoped you are now reform'd: and if you are, the whole Country round you, East, West, North and South, owe great Obligations to your fair Reclaimer. But here is a fine prim young Fellow coming out of Norfolk, with one Estate in one County, another in another, and Jointures and Settlements in his Hands, and more Wit in his Head, as well as more Money in his Pocket, than he can tell what to do with, to vifit our Polly; though I tell her I much question the former Quality, his Wit, if he is for marrying.-And would you have her be attending your Wife's Nursery, when she may possibly be put into a Way to have a Raree-shew of her own?

Here then is the Reason I cannot comply with your kind Mrs. B.'s Request. But if this Matter should go off; if he should not like her, or she him; or if I should not like his Terms, or he mine;—or still another Or, if he should like Nancy better—why, then, perhaps, if Polly be a good Girl, I may trust to

her Virtue, and to your Honour, and let her go for a Month or two: for the Devil's in you, if you attempt to abuse such a generous Confidence.—As to the Superiority of Beauty in your own Lady, I depend nothing on that; for, with you young Fellows,

Variety has generally greater Charms.

Now, when I have faid this, and when I fay further, that I can forgive your fevere Lady, and yourself too, (who, however, are less to be excus'd in the Airs you assume, which looks like one Chimney-sweeper calling another sooty Rascal) I give a Proof of my Charity, which I hope with Mrs. B. will cover a Multitude of Faults; and the rather, since, though I cannot be a Follower of her Virtue in the strictest Sense, I can be an Admirer of it; and that is some little Merit: And indeed all that can be at present pleaded by yourself, I doubt, any more than

Your bumble Servant,

SIMON DARNFORD

LETTER XXV.

My honoured and dear Parents,

I Hope you will excuse my long Silence, which has been owing to several Causes, and having had nothing new to entertain you with: And yet this last is but a poor Excuse neither to you, who think every tristing Subject agreeable from your Daughter.

I daily expect here my Lord and Lady Davers. This gives me no small Pleasure, and yet it is mingled with some Uneasiness at Times; lest I should not, when viewed so intimately near, behave myself answerably to her Ladyship's Expectations. But this I resolve upon, I will not endeavour to move out of the Sphere of my own Capacity, in order to emulate

her Ladyship. She has, and must have, Advantages, by Conversation, as well as Education, which it would be Arrogance in me to assume, or to think of

imitating.

All that I will to attempt to do, therefore, shall be, to shew such a respectful Obligingness to my Lady, as shall be consistent with the Condition to which I am raised; that so her Ladyship may not have Reafon to reproach me of Pride in my Exaltation, nor her dear Brother to rebuke me for Meanness in condescending: And, as to my Family Management, I am the less asraid of Inspection, because by the natural Bias of my own Mind, I bless God, I am above dark Reserves, and have not one selfish or fordid View, that should make me wish to avoid the

most scrutinizing Eye.

I have begun a Correspondence with Miss Darnford, a young Lady of uncommon Merit. But you know her Character from my former Writings. She is very folicitous to hear of every thing that concerns me, and particularly how Lady Davers and I agree together. I loved her from the Moment I faw her first; for she has the least Pride, and the most Benevolence and solid Thought I ever knew in a young Lady, and knows not what it is to envy any one. I shall write to her often: And as I shall have so many Avocations besides to fill up my Time, I know you will excuse me, if I procure from this Lady, as I hope to do, the Return of my Letters to her, for your Perusal, and for the Entertainment of your Leifure-hours. This will give you from time to time, the Accounts you defire of all that happens here. But as to what relates to our own Particulars, I beg you will never spare writing, as I shall not answering; for it is one of my greatest Delights, that I have fuch dear, fuch worthy Parents, (as, I hope in God, I long shall) to bless me, and to correspond with me.

The

The Papers I fend herewith will afford you fome Diversion; particularly, those relating to Sir Simon Darnford; and I must desire, that when you have perused them, (as well as what I shall fend for the

future) you will return them to me.

Mr. Longman gave me great Pleasure, on his last Return from you, in his Account of your Health, and the Satisfaction you take in your happy Lot; and I must recite to you a brief Convertation on this Occasion, which, I dare say, will please you as much as it did me.

After he had been adjusting some Affairs with his dear Principal, which took them up two Hours, my Best-loved fent for me.-My Dear, faid he, taking my Hand, and feating me by him, and making the good old Gentleman fit down, (for he will always rife at my Approach) Mr. Longman and I have fettled in two Hours fome Accounts, which would have taken up as many Months with fome Perfons. For never was there an exacter or more methodical Accomptant than Mr. Longman: He gives me (greatly to my Satisfaction, because I know it will delight you) an Account of the Kentifb Concern, and of the Pleasure your Father and Mother take in it.-Now, my Charmer, faid he, I fee your fweet Eyes begin to gliften: O how this Subject raifes your whole Soul to the Windows of it!-Never was so dutiful a Daughter, Mr. Longman, and never did Parents better deserve a Daughter's Duty!

I endeavour'd before Mr. Longman to rein-in a Gratitude, that my throbbing Heart confessed thro' my Handkerchief, as I could perceive: But the good old Gentleman could not hinder his from shewing itself at his worthy Eyes, to see how much I was favour'd—oppress'd, I should say—with the tenderest Goodness to me, and kind Expressions.—Excuse me, Sir, excuse me, Madam, said he, wiping his Cheeks: My delight to see such Merit so justly rewarded,

Wil

will not be contained, I think.—And so he arose, and walked to the Window.

Well, good Mr. Longman, faid I, as he returned towards us, you give me the Pleafure to know, that my Father and Mother are well; and happy then they must be, in a Goodness and bounty, that I, and

many more, rejoice in.

Well and happy, Madam! --- Ay, that they are, indeed! and a worthier Couple never lived, I affure you. Most nobly do they go on, in the Farm. Your Honour is one of the happiest Gentlemen in the World. All the Good you do, returns upon you in a Trice. It may well be faid, You cast your Bread upon the Waters; for it presently comes to you again, ticher and heavier than when you threw it in. All the Kentish Tenants, Madam, are hugely delighted with their good Steward: Every thing profpers under his Management: The Gentry love both him and my Dame; and the poor People adore them. Indeed they do a Power of Good, in viliting their poor Neighbours, and giving them Cordials, and fuch like; infomuch that Cholicks, Agues, and twenty Distempers, nipp'd in the Bud, fly before them. And yet the Doctors themselves can have nothing to fay against them; for they administer Help to those only who cannot be at the Charge either of Skill or Phylick.

In this Manner ran on Mr. Longman, to my inexprefible Delight, you may believe; and when he withdrew, 'T is an honest Soul, said my dear Mr. B. I love him for his respectful Love to my Angel, and his Value for the worthy Pair. Very glad I am, that every Thing answers their Wishes. May

they long live, and be happy!

The dear Man makes me fpring to his Arms, whenever he touches this String: For he fpeaks always thus generously and kindly of you; and is glad to hear, he says, that you don't live only to yourselves:

yourselves: And now-and-then adds, That he is as much satisfy'd with your Prudence, as he is with mine; that Parents and Daughter do Credit to one another; and that the Praises he hears of you from every Mouth make him take as great Pleasure in you, as if you were his own Relations. How delighting, how transporting, rather, my dear Parents, must this Goodness be to your happy Daughter! And how could I forbear repeating these kind Things to you, that you may see how well every Thing is taken that you do.

When the expected Visit from Lord and Lady Davers is over, the approaching Winter will call us to London; and as I shall then be nearer to you, we may more frequently hear from one another, which, to be fure, will be a great Heightening to my Pleasures.

But I have fuch an Account given me of the Immoralities which Persons may observe there, along with the publick Diversions, that it takes off a little from the Satisfaction I should otherwise have in the Thought of going thither. For, they say, Quarrels, and Duels, and Gallantries, as they are called, so often happen in London, that those Enormities are heard of without the least Wonder or Surprise.

This makes me very thoughtful at times. But God, I hope, will preserve our dearest Benefactor, and continue to me his Affection, and then I shall be always happy; especially while your Healths and

Felicity confirm and crown the Delights of

Your ever dutiful Daughter, P. B.

LETTER XXVI.

My dearest Child,

I T may not be improper to mention ourselves, what the Nature of the Kindnesses is, which we confer on our poor Neighbours, and the labouring People,

People, left it should be surmised by any Body, that we are lavishing away Wealth that is not our own. Not that we sear either your honoured Husband or you will suspect any such Matter, or that the worthy Mr. Langman would infinuate as much; for he saw what we did, and was highly pleased with it, and said he would make such a Report of it, as you write he did. What we do is in small Things, though the Good we hope from them is not small perhaps: And if a very distressful Case should happen among our poor Neighbours, that would require any thing considerable, and the Objects be deserving, we would acquaint you with it, and leave it to you to do as

God should direct you.

But this, indeed, we have done, and continue to do: We have furnished ourselves with Simple Waters and Cordials of feveral Sorts; and when in a hot fultry Day I fee poor labouring Creatures ready to faint and drop down, if they are only fatigued, I order them a Mouthful of Bread or fo, and a Cup of good Ale or Beer; and this makes them go about their Bulinefs with new Spirits; and when they bless me for it, I tell them they must bless the good 'Squire, from whose Bounty, next to God, it all proceeds. If they are ill, I give them a Cordial; and we have been the Means of fetting up feveral poor Creatures who have laboured under Cholicky and Aguish Disorders, or have been taken with flight Stomach Ailments. And nothing is loft by it, my dear Child; for poor People have as grateful Souls as any Body; and it would delight your dear Heart to fee how many drooping Spirits we have raised, and how, in an Hour or two, some of them, after a little Cordial Refreshment, from languishing under a Hedge, or behind a Hay-stack, have skipped about as nimble as Deer, whistling and finging, and pursuing with Alacrity their several Employments; and inftead of Curing and Swearing, as is

the Manner of fome wicked Wretches, nothing but Bleffings and Praifes poured out of their glad Hearts upon his Honour and you; calling me their Father and Friend, and telling me, they will live and die for me, and my Wife; and that we shall never want an industrious Servant to do his Honour's Business, or to cultivate the Farm I am bleffed in. And in like fort, we communicate to our sick or wanting Neighbours, even although they be not Tenants to the Estate.

Come, my dear Child, you are happy, very happy, to be fure you are; and, if it can be, may you be yet happier and happier! But still I verily think you cannot be more happy than your Father and Mother, except in this one Thing, That all our Happiness under God, proceeds from you; and, as other Parents bless their Children with Plenty and Benefits, you have blessed your Parents (or your honoured Husband rather for your sake) with all the good Things

this World can afford.

The Papers you fend us are the Joy of our Leifurehours; and you are kind beyond all Expression, in taking care to oblige us with them. We know how your Time is taken up, and ought to be very well contented, if but now-and-then you let us hear of your Health and Welfare. But it is not enough with fuch a good Daughter, that you have made our Lives comfortable, but you will make them joyful too, by communicating to us all that befals you: And then you write so piously, and with such a sense of God's Goodness to you, and intermix such good Reflections in your Writings, that, whether it be our partial Love or not, I cannot tell, but, truly, we think nobody comes up to you: And you make our Hearts and our Eyes fo often overflow, as we read, that we join Hand in Hand together; and I fay to her, Bleffed be God, and bleffed be you, my Dear; and she, in the same Breath, Blessed be God, and you, my Love -For fuch a Daughter, fays the one-For fuch a Daughter,

Daughter, fays the other.—And fhe has your own fweet Temper, cry I.—And fhe has your own honest Heart, cries she: And so we go on, blessing God, and blessing you, and blessing your Spouse, and blessing ourselves!—Is any Happiness like our Hap-

pinels, my dear Daughter!

Really and indeed we are so inraptur'd with your Writings, that when our Spirits flag through the Infirmity of Years which hath begun to take hold of us, we have recourse to some of your Papers: Come, my Dear, cry I, what say you to a Banquet now!— She knows what I mean. With all my heart, says she.—So I read, although it be on a Sunday, so good are your Letters; and you must know, I have Copies of a many of them: And after a little while we are as much alive and brisk, as if we had no Flagging at all, and return to the Duties of the Day with

double Delight.

Confider then, my dear Child, what Joy your Writings give us: And yet we are afraid of oppreffing you, who have fo much to do of other Kinds; and we are heartily glad you have found out a way to fave Trouble to yourfelf, and rejoice us, and oblige to worthy a young Lady as Miss Darnford, all at one time. I never should forget her dear Goodness to me, and the Notice she took of me at the Hall *, kindly preffing my rough hands with her fine Hands, and looking in my Face with so much Kindness in her Eyes!—to be fure I never shall—What good People, as well as bad, there are in high Stations!— Thank God there are; elfe our poor Child would have had a fad Time of it too often, when she was obliged to step out of herself, as once I heard you phrase it, into Company you could not live with.

Well, but what shall I say more? And yet how shall I end?—Only, with my Prayers, that God Vol. III.

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 107.

will continue to you the Bleffings and Comforts you are in possession of !—And pray now, be not over-thoughtful about what may happen at London; for why should you let the Dread of suture Evils lessen your present Joys? There is no absolute Perfection in this Life, that's true; but one would make one's self as easy as one could. This time enough to be troubled when Troubles come.—Sufficient unto the

Day is the Evil thereof.

Rejoice then, my dear Child, as you have often faid you would, in your prefent Bleshings, and leave the Event of Things to the Supreme Disposer of all Events. And what have you to do but rejoice? You, who cannot see a Sun rise, but it is to bles you, and to raise up from their Beds Numbers to join in the Bleshing! You, who can bless your high-born Friends, and your low-born Parents, and objective Relations who can bless the Rich by your heample, and the Poor by your Bounty; and biess tendes to good and so brave a Hutband!—O my sear Child, when, let me repeat it, have you to do but rejoice?——Fermany Daughters have done teistly, but you have excelled them all.

I will only add, that every thing the 'Squire erder'd, is just upon the point of being finish'd. And when the good time comes, that we shall be ag in favour'd with her freezee and yours, what a tail greater Joy was this about to the already overflowing Hearts of

Tour ever loving Father and Mother,
Journ and Elit, Ambrewi's

LETTER XXVII.

My Lord Mis DARWEORD,

THE Lacron I take in every thing that concerns you, makes me very importunate to know no a you approve the Gentlemen, whom some of his best

Friends and Well-wishers have recommended to your Favour. I hope he will deferve your good Opinion, and then he must excel most of the unmarried Gen-

tlemen in England.

Your Papa, in his humorous Manner, mentions his large Poffessions and Riches: But, indeed, were he as rich as C. asfus, he should not have my Confent, if he has no greater Merit; tho' that is what the Generality of Parents look out for first: And indeed an easy Fortune is so far from being to be difregarded, that, when attend I wish equal Merit, I think it ought to have a Preference given to it, toppoling Affections difengaged. For tis certain, that a Man or Woman may Hand as good a Chance for Happiness in Marriage with a Person of Fortune, es with one who has not that Advantage, and notwithstanding I had neither Riches nor Descent to boult of, I must be of Opinion with these who say, that they never knew any body despise either, that I ad them. But to permit Riches to be the principal Inducement, to the Neglect of Superior Merit, that is the Fault which many a one finarts for, whether the Choice he their own, or imposed upon them by those who have a Title to their Obedience.

Here is a faucy Body, might fome, who have not Mifs Danibard's kind Confideration for her Friend, be apt to fry, who being thus meanly defeended, nevertheless prefumes to give her Opinion, in thefe high Cases, unafked. But I have one thing, my dear Mils, to fay; and that is, that I think myfelf so intirely divested of Partiality to my own Case, that, as far as my judgment thall permit, I will never have that in View, when I am prefuming to hint my Opinion of general Rules. For, most furely, the Honours I have received, and the Debalement to which my best Friend has subjected himself, have, for their principal Excuse, that the Gentleman was intirely independant, had no Questions to ask, and

had a Fortune fufficient to make himself, as well as the Person he chose, happy, though the brought him nothing at all; and that he had, moreover, fuch a Character for good Sense, and Knowledge of the World, that nobody could impute to him any other Inducement, but that of a noble Refolution to reward a Virtue he had fo frequently, and I will fay, fo wickedly, try'd, and could not subdue.

But why do I thus run on to Miss Darnford, whose partial Friendship attributes to me Merits I cannot claim? I will, therefore, quit this Subject, as a needless one to her, and proceed to what was principally in my View, when I began to write; and that is, to complain of your Papa, who has, let me fay it, done his Endeavours to fet at Variance a Gentleman and

his Wire.

I will not enter into the Particulars, because the Appeal is to Casfar, and it would look like invading his Prerogative, to take it into my own Hands. But I can tell Sir Simon, that he is the only Gentleman, I hope, who, when a young Person of my Sex asked him to make her a Prefent of a Book, would put fuch a mischievous Turn as he has done upon it, to her Husband -Indeed, from the Beginning, I had Reafon to call him a * Tell-tale-But, no more of that-Yet I must say, I had rather he should have flung this Book at my Head too, than to have made a fo much worse Use of it. But I came off tolerably, no Thanks to Sir Simon, however !- And but tolerably neither: For Mr. B. kept me in Suspense a good while, and put me in great Flutters, before he let me into the Matter.

But I was much concerned, my dear Miss Darnford, at first, till you gave a Reason I better liked afterwards, for Sir Simon's denying your Company to me, after I had obtained the Favour of your Mamma's Confent, and you were kindly inclin'd yourfelf to oblige me: And that was, that Sir Simon had a bad Opinion of the Honour of my dear Mr. B. For, as to that Part of his Doubt, which reflected Dishonour upon his dear Daughter, it was all but the Effect of his strange free Humour, on purpose to vex you.

That Gentleman must be the most abandon'd of Men, who would attempt any thing against the Virtue of a Lady intrusted to his Protection: And I am grieved, methinks, that the dear Man, who is the better Part of myself, and has, to his own Debasement, acted so honourably by me, should be thought capable of so much Vileness. But, forgive me, Miss; it is only Sir Simon, I dare say, who could think so hardly of him: And I am in great Hope, for the Honour of the present Age, (quite contrary to the Aspersion, that every Age grows worse and worse) that the last, if it produc'd People capable

of fuch Attempts, was wickeder than this.

Bad as Mr. B.'s Defigns and Attempts were upon me, I can, now I am let above fearing them, and am enabled to reflect upon them with less Terror and Apprehension, be earnest, for his own dear sake, to think him not, even then, the worst of Men, tho' bad enough in all Conscience: For have we not heard of those who have had no Remorie or Compunction at all, and have actually executed all their vile Purposes, when a poor Creature was in their Power? -Yet (indeed, after fore Trials, that's true!) did not God turn his Heart? And altho' I was still helplefs, and without any Friend in the World, and in the Hands of a poor vile Woman, who, to be fure, was worfe than he, provoking him to ruin me, and fo wholly in his Power, that I durit not disobey him, whether he bad me come to him, or be gone from him, as he was pleafed or displeafed with me; yet, I fay, for all this, did he not overcome his criminal Passion, and entertain an honourable one, though to H 3

his poor Servant Girl; and brave the World, and

the World's Cenfores, and marry me?

And does not this show, that the Seeds of Honour were kept alive in his Heart, the choak'd or kept from spreading forth, for a Time, by the Weeds of Sensuality, wride, and youthful Imperiority? And by cutting down the latter, have not the former taken Root, have they not that out, and, in their torn, sept down, at haft, the deprened Weeds? And who

now have more virguously than Mr. 2.2

Let me tell you, my dear Mifs, that I have not heard of many infrances of Gentlemen, who, having delighed there, have floot thort, and acted to honourably; and who continue to act to nobly: And I have great Commence, that he will, in time, be as pious, as he is now moral; for tho' he has a few bad Notions, which he talks of now and then, as Polyganiy, and tuch-like, which indeed, give me a little ferious Thought formetimes, because a Man is too apt to practine what he has perfuaded himself to believe is no Crime; yet, I hope, they are owing more to the Liveline's of his Wit, (a wild Quality, which does not always comme itleft to proper Exercises) than to his Judgment. And if I can but fee the first three or four Months Relidence over in that wicked Londan, (which, they fay, is so seducing a Place) without adding to my Apprehentions, how happy fhail I be?

So much, flightly have I thought proper to fay in behalf of my dear Mr. B. For a good Wife cannot but hope for a fweeter and more elevated Companionship, (if her presumptuous Heart makes her look upward with Hope herself) than this transfer. State can afford us. And what a sad Case is her who being as exemplary as human Frairry will permit her to be, looks forward upon the Partner of her adverse, and of her prosperous Estate, the Husband of her Bosom, the Pather of her Children, the Head of her Family, as a poor unhappy Soul, de-

Hin'd

flin'd to a separate and a miserable Existence for ever!

O my dear Friend!—How can such a Thought be supportable!—But what high Consolation, what Transport ruther, at Times, must here be, who shall be bless d with the Hope of being an humble Instrument to reclaim such a dear, dear, thrice dear Partner!

—And that, It art in Figure, and Hand in Fland, they shall one Day issue forth from this incumber d State into a plessed Eternity, benefited by each other's Example!—I will have down my Pen, and enjoy the rich Thought for a sew Moments.

Now, my that Miss Darnford, let me, as a Subical very planting to me, touch upon your kind alternation of the weathy Mr. Peters's Sentiments in the later to that Part of his Conduct to me, which (outputs distance Parter and Apprehensions to which I was furfacted) once indeed I confured; and so much the radier, as I had ever so great an Honour for his Cloth, that I thought, to be a Clergyman, and all that was compassionate, good, and virtuous,

was the fame thing.

But when I came to know Mr. Peters, I had a high Opinion of his Worthiness; and as no one can be perfect in this Life, thus I thought to myself: How hard was then my Lot, to be a Cause of Stumbling to so worthy a Heart! To be sure, a Gentleman, who knows so well, and practises so well, his Duty, in every other Instance, and preaches it so efficaciously to others, must have been one Day sensible, that it would not have misbecome his Function and Character to have afforded that Protection to oppressed Imagence, which was requested of him; and how would it have grieved his considerate Mind, had my Ruin been completed, that he did not!

But as he had once a Name-lake, as one may fig, that failed in a much greater Instance, let not my Want of Charity exceed bis Fault; but let me look upon it as an Instrmicy, to which the most perfect

are liable: I was a Stranger to him; a Servant Girl carry'd off by her Maiter, a young Gentleman of violent and lawless Passions; who, in this very Instruce, shew'd how much in Earnest he was set upon effecting all his vile Purposes; and whose Heart altho' God might touch, it was not probable any lefter Influence could.

Then he was not fure, that tho' he might affift my Ecape, I might not afterwards fall again into the Hands of to determin'd a Violator; and that Difficulty would not, with fuch a one, inhance his

Resolution to overcome all Obstacles.

Moreover, he might think, that the Person, who was moving him to this worthy Measure, might possibly be seeking to gratify a View of his own; and that while he was endeavouring to save, to outward Appearance, a Virtue in Danger, he was, in reality, only helping another to a Wife, at the Hazard of exposing himself to the Vindictiveness of a violent Temper, and a rich Neighbour, who had Power as well as Will to refent; for such was his * Apprehension, groundless, entirely groundless as it was, tho' not improbable, as it might seem to him.

Then again, the fad Examples set by too many European Sovereigns, in whom the Royal and Priestly Offices are united (for are not Kings the Lord's Anciented?); and the little Scruple which many Persons Right Reverend by their Functions and Characters, too generally make, to pay fordid Court and Visits (far from bearing their Testimony against such Practices) even to Concubines, who have Interest to promote them §, are no small Discouragements to a private Clergyman to do his Duty, and to make himself Enemies among his powerful Neighbours, for the

* See Vol. I. p. 175. l. 4.

§ That these Arguments were pleaded by Mr. Peters,
see Vol. I. p. 175. l. 12. See

the

the Cause of Virtue. And especially (forgive me, dear Sir Simon Darnford, if you should see this) when an eminent Magistrate, one of the principal Gentlemen of the County, of an independent Fortune, who had fine young Ladies to his Daughters, (who had nothing but their fuperior Conditions, not their Sex, to exempt them from like Attempts) a Justice of Peace, and of the Quorum; refused to BE a * Juffice, tho' fuch a Breach of the Peace was made, and fuch a Violation of Morals plainly intended. This, I fav, must add to the Discouragement of a Gentleman a little too diffident and timorous of himfelf: And who having no one to fecond him, had he afforded me his Protection, must have stood alone in the Gap, and made to himself, in an active Gentleman, an Enemy who had a thousand defirable Qualities to make one wish him for a Friend.

For all these Considerations I think myself obliged to pity, rather than too rigorously to censure, the worthy Gentleman. And I must and will always respect him: And thank him a thousand times, my Dear, in my Name, for his Goodness in condescending to acknowledge, by your Hand, his Infirmity, as fuch: For this gives an excellent Proof of the natural Worthiness of his Heart; and that it is beneath him to feek to extenuate a Fault, when he thinks he has committed one.

Indeed, my dear Friend, I have so much Honour for the Clergy of all Degrees, that I never forget in my Prayers one Article, That God will make them shining Lights to the World; fince so much depends on their Ministry and Examples, as well with respect to our publick as private Duties. Nor shall the Faults of a Few make Impression upon me to the Diladvantage of the Order. For I am afraid a very cenforious l'emper, in this respect, is too generally H 5

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 174. 1. 26.

the Indication of an uncharitable and perhaps a profligate Heart, levelling Characters, in order to cover fome inward Pride, or fecret Enormities, which they are assumed to avow, and will not be instructed to amend.

Forgive, my Dear, this tedious Scribble; I cannot for my Life write thort Letters to those I love. And let me hope, that you will favour me with an Account of your new Affair, and how you proceed in it; and with fuch of your Convertations, as may give me some Notion of a polite Courtship. For, alas! your poor Friend knows nothing of this. All her Courtship was sometimes a hasty Snatch of the Hand, a black and blue Gripe of the Arm, and, Whither now!—Come to me, when I bid you! -And Saucy-face, and Creature, and fuch like, on his Part—with Fear and Trembling on mine; and -- I will, I will!-Good Sir, have Mercy! At other Times a Scream, and nobody to hear or mind me; and with uplift Hands, bent Knees, and tearful Eyes-For God's fake, pity your poor Ser-Vant!

This, my dear Miss Darnford, was the hard Treatment that attended my Courtship—Pray, then, let me know, how Gentlemen court their Equals in Degree; how they look when they address you, with their Knees bent, lighing, supplicating, and all that as Sir Simon says, with the Words Slave, Servant, Admirer, continually at their Tongues Ends.

But after all, it will be found, I believe, that, be the Language and Behaviour ever to obsequious, it is all defign d to end alike.—The English, the plain English, of the politest Address, is, I am now, dear Madam, your han ble Servant: Pray be to good as to let me be your Master. Yes, and thank you too, says the Lady's Heart, tho' not her Lips, if the likes him. And to they go to Church together: And, in Con-

Conclusion, it will be happy, if these obsequious Courtships end no worse than my frighted one.

But I am convine'd, that with a Man of Sense,

a Woman of tolerable Prudence muft be happy.

That whenever you marry, it may be to fuch a Man, who then must value you as you deserve, and make you as happy as I now am, notwithstanding all that's past, wishes and prays

Your obliged Friend and Servant,

P. B.

N. B. Altho' Miss Darnford could not receive the above Letter so soon as to answer it before others were sent to her by her fair Correspondent; yet we think it not amiss to dispense with the Order of Time, that the Reader may have the Letter and Answer at one View: And shall on other Occasions take the like Liberty.

LETTER XXVIII.

In Answer to the Preceding.

My dear Mrs. B.

fays he will never go to bed, nor rife, but he will pray for you, and defires I will return his thankful Acknowlegements for your favourable Opinion of him, and kind Allowances. If there be an Angel on Earth, he fays you are one. My Papa, altho' he has feen your stinging Research upon his Return to protect you, is delighted with you too; and fays, when you come down to Lincolnshire again, he will be undertaken by you in good Earness; for he thinks it was wrong in him, to deny you his Protection.

We are pleas'd with your Apology for Mr. E. 'Tis fo much the Part of a good Wife to extenuate her Husband's Faults, and make the best of his bad Qualities, in order to give the World a good Opinion of him; that, together with the affecting Instances of your Humility, in looking back with so much true Greatness of Mind, to what you were, make us all join to admire you, and own, that nobody can de-

lerve what you deferve.

Yet I am forry, my dear Friend, to find, notwith-flanding your Defence of Mr. B. that you have any Apprehensions about London. 'I is pity any thing should give you Concern. As to Mr. B.'s talking in favour of Polygamy, you cannot expect, that he can shake off all his bad Notions at once. And it must be a great Comfort to you, that his Actions do not correspond, and that his Liberties have been reduced to Notions only. In time, we hope that he will be every thing you wish him. If not, with such an Example before him, he will be the more culpable.

We all smiled at the Description of your own uncommon Courtship. And, as they say, the Days of Courtship are the happiest Part of Life, if we had not known, that your Days of Marriage are happier by far than any other body's Courtship, we must needs have pitied you. But as the one were Days of Trial and Temptation, the other are Days of Reward and Happiness: May the last always continue to be so, and you'll have no Occasion to think

any body happier than Mrs. B.

I thank you heartily for your good Wishes as to the Man of Sense. Mr. Murray has been here, and continues his Visits. He is a lively Gentleman, well enough in his Person, has a tolerable Character, yet loves Company, and will take his Bottle freely; my Papa likes him ne'er the worse for that: He talks a good deal; dresses gay, and even richly, and seems to like his own Person very well: No great Pleasure this for a Lady to look forward to; yet he falls far short of that genteel Ease, and graceful Behaviour, which distinguish your Mr. B. from any-body I know.

I wish Mr. Murray would apply to my Sister. She is an ill-natur'd Girl; but would make a good Wise, I hope; and fancy she'd like him well enough. I can't say I do. He laughs too much; has something boisterous in his Conversation; his Complaisance is not a pretty Complaisance: He is, however, well vers'd in Country Sports; and my Papa loves him for that too, and says, He is a most accomplish'd Gentleman: Yes, Sir, cry I, as Gentlemen go.—You must be saucy, says Sir Simon, because the Man offers himself to your Acceptance. A few Years hence, perhaps, if you remain single, you'll alter your Note, Pally, and be willing to jump at a much less worthy Tender.

I could not help answering, That although I paid due Honour to every-thing that my Papa was pleased to say, I could not but hope he would be mistaken in this.

But I have broken my Mind to my dear, my indulgent Mamma, who tells me, she will do me all the Pleasure she can; but would be loth the youngest Daughter should go first, as she calls it. But if I could come and live with you a little now-and-then, I did not care who marry'd, unless such an one offer'd, as I never expect.

I have great Hope, the Gentleman will be eafily perfuaded to quit me for Nancy; for I fee he has not Delicacy enough to love with any great Distinction. He says, as my Mamma tells me by-the-bye, that I am the handsomest, and best humour'd; and he has found out, as he thinks, that I have some Wit, and have Ease and Freedom (and he tacks Innocence to them) in my Address and Convertation. 'Tis well

well for me, he is of this Opinion; for if he thinks justly, which I must question, any-body may think so still much more; for I have been far from taking Pains to engage his good Word, having been under more Reserve to him, than ever I was before to any-body.

Indeed, I can't help it; for the Gentleman is forward without Delicacy; and (pardon me, Sir Simon,) my Papa has not one Bit of it neither: But is for pushing Matters on, with his rough Raillery, that puts me out of Countenance, and has already a ljusted the fordid Part of the Preliminaries, as he tells me.

Yet I hope Nancy's 3000/. Fortune, more than I am likely to have * will give her the with'd-for Preference with Mr. Murray; and then, as to a Brother-in-law, in project, I can put off all Restraint,

and return to my ufual Freedom.

This is all that occurs worthy of Notice from Us: But from You, we expect an Account of Lady Devers's Vifits, and of the Convertations that offer among you; and you have to delightful a Way of anking every-thing momentous, either by your Subject or Reflections, or both, that we long for every Pott-day, in hopes of the Plature of a Letter.—And yours I will always carefully preferve, as to many Testimonies of the Honour I receive in this Correspondence: Which will be always effected as it deferves, by my dear Mrs. B.

Your obliged and faithful

POLLY DARREORD.

Mrs. Peters, Mrs. Jones, my Papa, Maniera, and Sifter, prefent their Respects. Let Peters I mentioned before. He continues to give a very good Account of poor Jowkes; and is much pleased with her.

LET-

LETTER XXIX.

My dear Mifs DARNFORD,

T your Defire, and to oblige your honoured Mamma, and your good Neighbours, I will now acquaint you with the Arrival of Lady Davers, and will occasionally write what passes among us: I will not fay worthy of Notice; for were I only to do fo, I thould be more brief, perhaps, by much, than you feem to expect. But as my Time is pretty much taken up, and I find I shall be obliged to write a Bit now and a Bit then, you must excuse me, if I dispense with fome Forms, which I ought to observe, when I write to one I to dearly love; and to I will give it Journal-wife, as it were, and have no Regard, when it would fetter or break in upon my Freedom of Narration, to Inteription or Subscription; but fend it as I have Opportunity: And if you please to favour me fo far, as to lend it me, after you have read the Stuff, for the Perulal of my Father and Mother, to whom my Duty and Promife require me to give an Account of my Proceedings, it will fave me Transcription, for which I thall have no Time; and then you will excuse Blots and Blurs, and I will trouble myfelf no farther for Apologies on that Score, but this once for all.

If you think it worth while, when they have read it, you shall have it again.

Wednelday Morning, Six o'Clock.

FOR my dear Friend permits me to tile an Hour foribble; for he is always pleased to the me to employ'd, or in reading; often saying, when I am at my Needle, (as his Sufer once wrote) * Your Maids can do this, Palyala; but they cannot write as you

can. And yet, as he tells me, when I choose to sollow my Needle, as a Diversion from too intense Study, as he is pleased to call it, (but, alas! I know not what Study is, as may be easily guessed by my hasty writing, putting down every thing as it comes) I shall then do as I please. But you must understand I promised at setting out, what a good Wife I'd endeavour to make *: And every honest body should try to be as good as her Word, you know; and such Particulars as I then mentioned, I think I ought to dispense with as little as possible; especially as I promised no more than what was my Duty to perform, if I had not promised.—But what a Preamble is here?—Judge by it what Impertinencies you may expect as I proceed.

Yesterday about Six in the Evening arrived here my Lord and Lady Davers, their Nephew, and the Countess of C. Mother of Lady Betty, whom we did not expect, but took it for the greater Favour. It seems her Ladyship long'd, as she said, to see me; and this was her principal Inducement. The two Ladies, and their two Women, were in Lord Davers's Coach and Six, and my Lord and his Nephow rode on horse-back, attended with a Train of Servants.

We had expected them to Dinner; but they could not reach Time enough; for the Countess being a little incommoded with her Journey, the Coach travelled slowly. My Lady would not suffer her Lord, nor his Nephew, to come hither before her, tho' on horseback, because she would be present, she said, when his Lordship first saw me, he having quite forgot ber Mother's Pamela; that was her Word.

It rained when they came in; so the Coach drove directly to the Door, and Mr. B. received them there: But I was in a little Sort of Flutter, which Mr. B. observing, made me sit down in the Parlour to com-

pole

pose myself. Where's Pamela? said my Lady, as

foon as the alighted.

0

I stept out, lest she should take it amis; and she took my Hand, and kissed me: Here, my Lady Counters, said she, presenting me to her—Here's the Girl: See if I said too much in praise of her Person.

The Countess saluted me with a visible Pleasure in her Eye, and said, Indeed, Lady Davers, you have not. Twould have been strange, (excuse me, Mrs. B. for I know your Story) if such a fine Flower had not been transplanted from the Field to the Garden.

I made no return, but by a low Curt'iy, to her Ladyship's Compliment. Then Lady Davers, taking my Hand again, presented me to her Lord: See here, my Lord, my Mother's Pamela.—And see here, my Lord, said her generous Brother, taking my other Hand most kindly, see here your Brother's Pamela too!

My Lord faluted me: I do, faid he to his Lady: I do, faid he to his Brother; and I fee the first Perfon in her, that has exceeded my Expectation, when every Mouth had prepared me to expect a Wonder.

Mr. H. whom every-one calls Lord Jackey, after his Aunt's Example when the is in good Humour with him, and who is a very young Gentleman, tho' about as old as my best Friend, came to me next, and faid, Lovelier and lovelier, by my Life!—I never faw your Peer, Madam.

Will you excuse me, my Dear, all this seeming Vanity, for the sake of repeating exactly what passed?

Well, but, faid my Lady, taking my Hand, in her free Quality Way, which quite dashed me, and holding it at a Distance, and turning me half round, her Eye fixed to my Waist, Let me observe you a little, my sweet-fac'd Girl!—I hope I am right: I hope you will do Credit to my Brother, as he has done you Credit.—Why do you let her lace so tight, Mr. B.?

I was

I was unable to look up, as you may believe, Mifs: My Face, all over Scarlet, was hid in my Bosom,

and I look'd fo filly !---

Av, faid my naughty Lady, you may well look down, my good Girl: For Works of this Nature will not be long hidden. And, O! my Lac, fro the Counters) fee how like a pretty Thief the loo !

Dear my Laly! find I-for fill the kept looking at me: And her and Brother, feeing my Confufrom, in pity to me, prefs'd my blufhing Face a 2 foment to his generally Breaff; and faid, Lady Druce, you should not be thus hard upon my dear Girl, the Moment you lee her, and before to many Without .: But look up, my beft L. ve, take your Reversed my Sitter, and tell her, you with her in the hand Way.

- It is fo then, faid my Lady! I'm glad of it with all my Heart. I will now love you better and better; but I almost doubted it, seeing her still so slender. But if, my good Child, you lace too tight, I'll never forgive you. And so the gave me a Riss

of Congratulation, as the field.

Do you think I did not look very filly?-My Lord finiling, and gazing at me from Head to Foot, Lord Fackey grinning and laughing, like an Oaf, as I then, in my Spite, thought. Indeed the Counter's faid, encouragingly to me, but feverely on Perfons of Birth, Lady Davers, you are as much too teizing, as Mrs. B. is too balhful. But you are a happy Man, Mr. B. that your Lady's Bathfulness is the principal Mark by which we can judge fire is not of Quality. Lord fackey in the Language of some Character in a Play, cry'd out, A palpable Hit, by Jupiter! and laugh'd egregiously, running about from one to another, repeating the same Words.

We talk'd only upon common Topics till Suppertime, and I was all Ear, as I thought it became me to be; for the Counters had by her first Compliment,

and by an Afpect as noble as intelligent, over-aw d me, as I may lay, into a respectful Silence, to which Lady Davers's tree, tho' pleafant Railery, (which the could not help carrying on now-and-then) contributed. Befides, Lady Davers's Letters had given me still gre ter Reason to revere her Wit and Judgment than I had before, when I reflected on her paffionate 1 emper, and fuch Parts of the Convertition I had had with her Ladvinip in your Neighbourhood; which (however to be admired) fell thart of her Letters.

When we were to fit down at Table, I locked, I suppose, a little diffidential, for I result in a thought. of my Lady's Anger at the real, when the would not have permitted me to lit at the Table with her *; and Mr. B. taying, Take your Place, my Dear; vou keep our Friends standing; I sat down in my unual Seat. And my Lady faid, None of your reproaching Eye, Pamela; I know what you hat at by it: And every Letter I have received from you, has help'd to make me centure myteli for my Lady-Airs, as you call 'em, you Saucebox you: I told you, I'd Lady-Airs you when I faw you; and you thall have it all in good Time.

I'm fure, faid I, I shall have nothing from your Ladyship, but what will be very agreeable: But, indeed, I never meant any-thing particular by that, or any other Word that I wrote; nor could I think of any thing but what was highly respectful to your

Ladythip.

-0

-C

Lord Davers was pleased to say, that it was imposible I should either write or speak any-thing that

could be taken amifs.

Lady Davers, after Supper, and the Servants were withdrawn, began a Discourse on Titles, and said, Brother, I think you fhould held yourfelf obliged to

my Lord Davers; for he has spoken to Lord S. who made him a Visit a few Days ago, to procure you a Baronet's Patent. Your Estate, and the Figure you make in the World, are so considerable, and your Family besides is so ancient, that, methinks, you should wish for some Distinction of that Sort.

Yes, Brother, faid my Lord, I did mention it to Lord S. and told him, withal, That it was without your Knowledge or Defire, that I spoke about it; and I was not very sure you would accept of it: But 'tis a Thing your Sister has wish'd for a good while.

What Answer did my Lord S. make to it? faid

Mr. B.

He faid, We, meaning the Ministers, I suppose, should be glad to oblige a Man of Mr. B. s I gure in the World; but you mention it so slightly, that you can hardly expect Courtiers will tender it to any Gentleman that is so indifferent about it; for, Lord Davers, we seldom grant Honours without a

View, I tell you that, added he, fmiling.

My Lord S. might mention this as a Jest, return'd Mr. B. but he spoke the Truth. But your Lordship faid well, that I was indifferent about it. 'Tis true, 'tis an hereditary Title: But the rich Citizens, who used to be fatisfied with the Title of Knight, (till they made it so common, that it is brought into as great Contempt almost as that of the * French Knights of St. Michael, and nobody cares to accept of it) now are ambitious of this; and, as I apprehend, it is haftening apace into like Difrepute. Besides, 'tis a novel Honour, and what the Ancestors of our Family, who lived at its Inflitution, would never accept of. But were it a Peerage they would give me, which has fome effential Privileges and Splendors annex'd to it, that would make it defirable

^{*} This Order was become fo feardalizely common in France, thu, in order to suppress his the Hangman was result with the Enforce of us week efficiently abelished in

defirable to fome Men, I would not enter into Conditions for it. Titles at best, added he, are but Shadows, and he that has the Substance, should be above valuing them; for who that has the whole Bird, would pride himself upon a single Feather?

But, faid my Lady, altho' I acknowledge, that the Institution is of late Date, yet as abroad, as well as at home, it is regarded as a Title of Dignity, and it is supposed that the best Families among the Gentry are distinguished by it, I should be glad you would accept of it. And as to Citizens who have it, they are not many; and some of this Class of People, or their immediate Descendants however, have brought themselves into the Peerage itself of the

one Kingdom or the other.

-

2

t

S

- 79

As to what it is looked upon abroad, faid Mr. B. this is of no Weight at all; for when an Englishman travels, be he of what Degree he will, if he has an Equipage, and squanders his Money away, he is a Lord of course with Foreigners: And therefore, Sir Such-a-one is rather a Diminution to him, as it fixes him down to a lower Title than his Vanity would perhaps make him aspire to be thought in the Pos-session of. Then, as to Citizens, in a trading Nation like this, I am not displeased in the main, with seeing the overgrown ones, creeping into nominal Honours; and we have so many of our first Titled Families who have ally'd themselves to Trade, (whose Inducements were Money only) that it ceases to be either a Wonder as to the Fact, or a Disgrace to the Honour.

Well, Brother, faid my Lady, I will tell you farther, the Thing may be had for asking for: If you will but go to Court, and defire to kis the King's Hand, that will be all the Trouble you'll have:

And pray now oblige me in it.

If a Title would make me either a better or a wifer Man, reply'd Mr. B. I would embrace it with Pleafure. Besides, I am not so entirely satisfied with

some of the Measures now pursuing, as to owe any Obligation to the Ministers. Accepting of a finall Title from them, is but like putting on their Badge, or lifting under their Banners; like a certain Lord we all know, who accepted of one Degree more of Title to shew he was theirs, and would not have an higher, left it should be thought a Satisfaction tantamount to half the Penfion he demanded: And could I be easy to have it supposed, that I was an ungrateful Man for voting as I pleafed, because they gave me the Title of a Baronet?

The Counters faid, The World always thought Mr. B. to be a Man of fleady Principles, and not attached to any Party; but it was her Opinion, that it as far from being inconfiftent with any Gentleman's Honour and Independency, to accept of a Title from a Prince he acknowledged as his Sovereign.

'Tis very true, Madam, reply'd Mr. B. that I am attached to no Farty, nor ever will; and I have a mean Opinion of many of the Heads of both: Nav, I will fay further, that I wish at my Heart, the Gentlemen in the Administration would purfue fuch Measures, that I could give them every Vote; as I always will every one that I can; and I have no very high Opinion of those who, right or wrong, would diffress or embarrais a Government. For this is certain, that our Governors cannot be always in the wrong; and he therefore who never gives them a Vote, must fornetimes be in the wrong, as well as they, and must, moreover, have some View he will not own. But in a Country like ours, where each of the Legislative Powers is in a manner independent, and where they are defigned as mutual Checks upon one another, I have, notwithstanding, so great an Opinion of the Necessity of an Opposition formetimes, that I am convinced it is that which must preserve our Constitution. I will therefore be a Country Gentleman, in the true Sense of the Word, and will accept accept of no Favour that shall make any-one think I would not be of the Opposition when I think it a necessary one; as, on the other hand, I should scorn to make myself a Round to any Man's Ladder of Preferment, or a Caballer for the sake of my own.

You fay well, Brother, return'd Lady Davers; but you may undoubtedly keep your own Principles and Independency, and yet pay your Duty to the King, and accept of this Title; for your Family and Portune will be a greater Ornament to the Title that the Title to you.

Then what Occasion have I for it, if that be the

C.F. Madam?

.

e

a

S

11

36

i,

11

111

. ,

1 =

11

102

Why, I can't fay, but I should be glad you had it, for your Family's sake, as it is an hereditary Honour. Then it would mend the Style of your Spouse here; tor the good Girl is at such a Loss for an Epithet when she writes, that I see the Contraint she lies under. It is, My dear Gentleman, My best Eriend, My Benefactor, My dear Mr. B.; whereas Sir Willen would turn off her Periods more roundly, and no other softer Epithets would be wanting.

To me, reply'd he, who always delire to be distinguished as my Pamela's best Friend, and think it an Honour to be called ber dear Mr. B. and ber dear Max, this Reason weighs very little, unless there were no other Sir William in the Kingdom than ber Sir William; for I am very emulous of her Favour, I can tell you, and think it no small Distinction.

I blushed at this too great Honour, before such Company, and was afraid my Lady would be a little piqu'd at it. But, after a Pause, she said, Well then, Brother, will you let Pamela decide upon this Point?

B. choose for you, Sir. My Lacy has he the Laing. Very good, very good, by my Soul, fays Lord Jackey; let my young Aunt, that was his Word,

choose for you, Sir.

Well then, Pamela, faid Mr. B. give us your

Opinion, as to this Point.

But, first, said Lady Davers, say you will be determin'd by it; or else she will be laid under a Difficulty.

Well then, replied he, be it so. I will be determined by your Opinion, my Dear: Give it me

freely.

Lord Jackey rubb'd his Hands together, Charming, charming, as I hope to live! By Jove, this is just as I wish'd!

Well, now Pamela, faid my Lady, speak your true

Heart without Difguise: I charge you do.

Why then, Gentlemen and Ladies, faid I, if I must be so bold as to speak on a Subject, upon which, on several Accounts, it would become me to be silent, I should be against the Title; but perhaps my Reason is of too private a Nature to weigh any-thing; and if so, it would not become me to have any Choice at all.

They all called upon me for my Reason; and I faid, looking down a little abash'd, It is this: Here my dear Mr. B. has disparaged himself by distinguishing, as he has done, fuch a low Creature as I; and the World will be apt to fay, he is feeking to repair one way the Honour he has loft another; and then, perhaps, it will be attributed to my Pride and Ambition: Here, they will perhaps fay, the proud Cottager will needs be a Lady, in hopes to conceal her Descent; whereas, had I fuch a vain Thought, it would be but making it the more remember'd against both Mr. B. and myfelf. And indeed, as to my own Part, I take too much Pride in having been lifted up into this Distinction, for the Causes to which I owe it, your Brother's Bounty and Generofity, than to be ashamed of what I was: Only now-and-then I am concerned for his own fake, left he should be too much censur'd. But this would not be prevented, but rather be promoted

moted by the Title. So I am humbly of Opinion

against the Title.

Mr. B. had hardly Patience to hear me out, but came to me, and folding his Arms about me, faid, Just as I with'd, have you answer'd, my beloved Pamela: I was never yet deceiv'd in you; no, not once.

Madam, faid he to the Countefs, Lord Davers, Lady Davers, do we want any Titles, think you, to make us happy, but what we can confer upon ourfelves? And he press'd my Hand to his Lips, as he always honours me most in Company; and went to his Place highly pleas'd; while his fine Manner drew Tears from my Eyes, and made his noble

Sifter's and the Countes's gliften too.

Well, for my part, faid Lady Davers, thou art a strange Girl: Where, as my Brother once said *, gottest thou all this? Then, pleasantly humourous, as if she was angry, she chang'd her tone. What signify thy meek Words and humble Speeches, when by thy Actions, as well as Sentiments, thou reslectest upon us all? Pamela, said she, have less Merit, or take care to conceal it better: I shall otherwise have no more Patience with thee, than thy Monarch has just now shewn.

The Countess was pleased to say, You're a happy Couple indeed! And I must needs repeat to you, Mr. B. sour Lines of Sir William Davenant upon a Lady, who could not possibly deserve them so much

as yours does:

She ne'er faw Courts; but Courts cou'd have outdone, With untaught Looks, and an unpractis'd Heart; Her Nets, the most prepar'd could never shun; For Nature spread them in the Scorn of Art.

But, my dear Miss Darnford, how lucky one fometimes is, in having what one says well accepted!

Vol. III.

Ay,

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 40.

Ay, that is all in all. Since the Reason for the Answer I gave was so obvious, that one in my Circumstances could not have missed it. Yet what Compliments had I upon it! 'Tis a Sign they were prepar'd to think well of me; and that's my great Pleasure and Happiness.

Such Sort of Entertainment as this you are to expect from your Correspondent. I cannot do better than I can; and it may appear fuch a Mixture of Self-praise, Vanity and Impertinence, that I expect you will tell me freely, as foon as this comes to your Hand, whether it be tolerable to you. Yet I must write on, for my dear Father and Mother's fake, who require it of me, and are prepared to approve of every thing that comes from me, for no other Reason but that: And I think you ought to leave me to write to them only, as I cannot hope it will be entertaining to any body elfe, without expecting as much Partiality and Favour from others, as I have from my dear Parents. Meantime I conclude here my first Converfation-piece; and am, and will be,

Always Yours, &c.

P. B.

LETTER XXX.

Thursday Morning, Six o'Clock.

OUR Breakfast Conversation Yesterday, (at which only Mrs. Worden, my Lady's Woman, and my Polly attended) was so whimsically particular, (though I doubt some of it, at least, will appear too trisling) that I cannot help acquainting my dear Miss Darnford with it, who is desirous of knowing all that relates to Lady Davers's Conduct towards me.

You must know then, that I have the Honour to stand very high in the Graces of Lord Davers; who

on every Occasion is pleased to call me his good Sijter, his dear Sister, and sometimes his charming Sister; and he tells me, he will not be out of my Company for an Hour together, while he stays here, if he can help it.

My Lady feems to relish this very well in the main, tho' the cannot quite so readily, yet, frame her Mouth to the Sound of the Word Sister, as my Lord does; of which this that follows is one Instance.

His Lordthip had called me by that tender Name twice before, and faying, I will drink another Difh, I think, my good Sifter; my Lady faid, Your Lordfhip has got a Word by the End, that you feem mighty fond of: I have taken Notice, that you have called Pamela, Sifter, Sifter, Sifter, no less than Three Times, in a Quarter of an Hour.

My Lord looked a little ferious: I shall one Day, said he, be allow'd to choose my own Words and Phrases, I hope: Your Sister, Mr. B. added he, often questions whether I am at age or not, tho' the House of Peers made no Scruple of admitting me among them some Years ago.

Mr. B. faid, feverely, but with a smiling Air, 'Tis well she has such a Gentleman as your Lordship for a Husband, whose affectionate Indulgence to her makes you overlook all her saucy Sallies! I am sure, when you took her out of our Family into your own, we all thought ourselves, I in particular, bound to pray for you.

I thought this a great Trial of my Lady's Patience: But it was from Mr. B. And she faid, with a half-pleasant, half-serious Air, How now, Considence!—None but my Brother could have faid this, whose violent Spirit was always much more intolerable than mine: But I can tell you, Mr. B. I was always thought very good humour'd and obliging to every-body, till your Impudence came from College, and from your Travels; and then, I own,

your provoking Ways made me now-and-then a little

out of the Way.

Well, well, Sister, we'll have no more of this Subject; only let us see, that my Lord Davers wants not his proper Authority with you, altho' you

used to keep me in awe formerly.

Keep you in awe!—That nobody could ever do yet, Boy or Man.—But, my Lord, I beg your Pardon; for this Brother will make Mischief betwixt us if he can—I only took Notice of the Word Sifter so often used, which looked more like Affectation than Affection.

Perhaps, Lady Davers, faid my Lord, gravely, I have Two Reasons for using the Word so frequently.

I'd be glad to hear them, faid the dear taunting Lady; for I don't doubt they're mighty good ones. What are they, my Lord?

One is, because I love, and am fond of my new Relation: The other, that you are so sparing of the

Word, that I call her fo for us both.

Your Ladyship says well, reply'd Mr. B. smiling; and Lady Davers can give Two Reasons why she does not.

Well, faid my Lady, now we are in for't, let us hear your Two Reasons likewise, I doubt not they're

wife ones too.

If they are yours, Lady Davers, they must be so: One is, That every Condescension (to speak in a proud Lady's Dialect) comes with as much Difficulty from her, as a Favour from the House of Austria to the petty Princes of Germany. The second, Because those of your Sex, (excuse me, Madam, to the Countess) who having once made Scruples, think it inconsistent with themselves to be over hasty to alter their own Conduct, choosing rather to persist in an Error, than own it to be one.

This proceeded from his Impatience to see me in the least slighted by my Lady; and I said to Lord

Davers,

Davers, to fosten Matters, Never, my Lord, were Brother and Sister so loving in Earnest, and yet so satirical upon each other in Jest, as my good Lady and Mr. B. But your Lordship knows their Way.

My Lady frown'd at her Brother, but turn'd it off with an Air: I love the Mistress of this House, said she, very well: and am quite reconcil'd to her: But methinks there is such a hissing Sound in the Word Sister, that I cannot abide it. 'Tis a true English Word, but a Word I have not been used to, having never had a Sis-s-f-ster before, as you know. Speaking the first Syllable of the Word with an emphatical Hiss.

Mr. B. said, Observe you not, Lady Davers, that you used a Word (to avoid that) which had twice the Hissing in it, that Sister has?—And that was, Mis-s-f-tress, with two other hissing Words to accompany it, of this-s- Hous-s-e: But to what childish Follies does not Pride make one stoop!— Excuse, Madam, (to the Counters) such poor low

Conversation as we are dwindled into.

O Sir, said her Ladyship, the Conversation is very agreeable; and I think, Lady Davers, you're fairly caught.

Well, said my Lady, then help me, good Sister, —there's for you!—to a little Sugar. Will that

please you, Sir?

I am always pleas'd, reply'd her Brother, smiling, when Lady Davers acts up to her own Character,

and the good Sense she is Mistress of.

Ay, ay, return'd she, my good Brother, like other wise Men, takes it for granted, that it is a Mark of good Sense to approve of whatever he does.—And so, for this one Time, I am a very sensible Body with him.—And I'll leave off while I have his good Word. Only one thing I must say to you, my Dear, turning to me, That tho' I call you Pamela, and Pamela, as I please.

please, I do assure you, I love you as well as if I called you Sister, Sister, as Lord Davers does at every Word.

Your Ladyship gives me great Pleasure, said I, in this kind Assurance; and I don't doubt but I shall have the Honour of being called by that tender Name, if I can be so happy as to deserve it; and I'll lose no Opportunity that shall be afforded me, to shew how sincerely I will endeavour to do so.

She was pleafed to rife from her Seat: Give me a Kill, my dear Girl: you deferve every thing: And permit me to fay Pameia fometimes, as the Word occurs; for I am not used to speak in Print; and I will call you Sifter when I think of it, and love you

as well as ever Sifter loved another.

These proud and passionate Folks, said Mr. B. how good they can be, when they restect a little on

what becomes their characters!

So then, rejoin'd my Lady, I am to have no Merit of my own, I see, do what I will. This is not quite so generous in my Brother as one might expect.

Why, you faucy Sifter, excuse me, Lord Davers, what Merit would you assume? Can People merit by doing their Duty? And is it so great a Praise that you think fit to own for a Sifter so deserving a Girl as this, whom I take Pride in calling my Wise?

Thou art what thou always wert, return'd my Lady; and were I in this my imputed Pride to want an Excuse, I know not the Creature living that

ought so soon to make one for me as you.

I do excuse you, said he, for that very Reason, if you please: But it little becomes either your Pride or

mine, to do any thing that wants excuse.

Mighty moral! mighty grave, truly!—Pamela, Friend, Sister,—there's for you!—thou art a happy Girl to have made such a Reformation in thy honeit Man's way of Thinking as well as Acting. But now we are upon this Topick, and none but Friends

about

about us, I am refolved to be even with thee, Brother. Jackey, if you are not for another Dish, I with you'd withdraw. Polly Barlow, we don't want you. Beck, you may stay. Mr. H. obeyed; and Polly went out: For you must know, Mis, that my Lady Davers will have none of the Men-Fellows, as she calls them, to attend upon us at Tea. And I cannot say but I think her entirely in the right, for

feveral Reasons that might be given.

When they were withdrawn, my Lady repeated, Now we are upon this Topick of Reclaiming and Reformation, tell me, thou bold Wretch; for you know I have feen all your Rogueries in Pamela's Papers; tell me, if ever Rake but thyfelf made such an Attempt as thou didst, on this dear good Girl, in presence of a virtuous Woman, as Mrs. Jervis always was noted to be?—As to the other vile Creature Jewkes, 'tis less Wonder, altho' in that thou hadst the Impudence of him who set thee to work: But to make thy Attempt before Mrs. Jervis, and in spite of her Struggles and Reproaches, was the very Stretch of shameless Wickedness.

Mr. B. seem'd a little disconcerted, and said, Surely, surely, Lady Daniers, this is going too far! Look at Pamela's blushing Face, and downcast Eye, and wonder at yourself for this Question as much as you do at me for the Action you speak of.

The Countess said to me, My dear Mrs. B. I wonder not at this sweet Consussion on so affecting a Question; but, indeed, since it has come in so naturally, I must say, Mr. B. that we have all, and my Daughters too, wonder'd at this more than at any Part of your Attempts; because Sir, we thought you one of the most civiliz'd Men in England, and that you could not but wish to have saved Appearances at least.

Though this, said Mr. B. is to you, my Pamela, the Renewal of Griefs, yet hold up your dear Face.

-You may—The Triumph was yours—The Shainc and the Blushes ought to be mine—And I will humour my faucy Sifter in all she would have me say.

Nay, faid Lady Davers, you know the Question;

I cannot put it stronger.

That's very true, reply'd he.—But would you expect I should give you a Reason for an Attempt that appears to you so very shocking?

Nay, Sir, faid the Counters, don't fay Appears to Lady Davers; for (excuse me) it will appear to to

every one who hears of it.

I think my Brother is too hardly used, said Lord Davers: He has made all the Amends he could make: and you, my Sister, who were the Person offended,

forgive him now, I hope; don't you?

I could not answer; for I was quite consounded; and made a Motion to withdraw: But Mr. B. said, Don't go, my Dear: Tho' I ought to be asham'd of an Action set before me in so full a Glare, in presence of Lord Davers and the Countess; yet I will not have you stir, because I forget how you represented it, and you must tell me.

Indeed, Sir, I cannot, faid I: Pray my dear Ladies, pray, my good Lord, and dear Sir, don't thus renew my Griefs, as you were pleas'd justly to phrase it.

I have the Representation of that Scene in my Pocket, said my Lady; for I was resolved, as I told Lady Betty, to shame the wicked Wretch with it the first Opportunity I had; and I'll read it to you! Or, rather, you shall read it yourself, Bold-sace, if you can.

So the pulled those Leaves out of her Pocket, wrapp'd up carefully in a Paper.—Here,—I believe he who could act thus, must read it; and, to spare Pamela's Confusion, read it to yourself; for we all

know how it was.

I think, faid he, taking the Papers, I can fay fomething that will abate the Heinousness of this heavy Charge, Charge, or elfe I should not stand thus at the Infolent Bar of my Sister answering her Interrogatories.

I fend you, my dear Mils Darnford, a Transcript of the Charge, as follows:—To be sure, you'll say, he was a very wicked Man.

[See Vol. I. p. 74, & Seq.]

Mr. B. read this to himself, and said, This is a dark Affair, as it is here stated; and I can't say, but Pamela, and Mrs. Jervis too, had a great deal of Reason to apprehend the worst: But surely Readers of it, who were less Parties in the supposed Attempt, and who were not determined at all Events to condemn me, might have made a more favourable Construction for me, than you, Lady Davers have done in the strong Light in which you have set this heinous Matter before us.

However, fince my Lady, bowing to the Countefs, and Lord Davers, feem to expect, that I shall particularly answer to this black Charge, I will at a proper Time, if it will be agreeable, give you a brief History of my Passion, for this dear Girl, how it commenc'd and increas'd, and my own Struggles with it: And this will introduce with some little Advantage to myself perhaps, what I have to say, as to this supposed Attempt; and at the same time enable you the better to account for some Facts which you have read in my pretty Accuser's Papers.

This pleased every one, and they begged him to begin then: But he said, It was Time we should think of drossing, the Morning being far advanc'd; and if no Company came in, he would in the Afternoon, give them the Particulars they desired to hear.

The three Gentlemen rode out, and returned just Time enough to dress before Dinner; and my Lady and the Countess also took an Airing in the Chariot. Just as they returned, Compliments came from several of the neighbouring Ladies to our noble Guests, on their Arrival in these Parts; and, to as many as fent,

1 5

Lady Davers desir'd their Companies for To-morrow in the Afternoon, to Tea: But Mr. B. having fallen in with some of the Gentlemen likewise, he told me, we should have most of our visiting Neighbours at Dinner, and desired Mrs. Fervis might prepare

accordingly for them.

After Dinner Mr. H. took a Ride out, attended by Mr. Colbrand, of whom he is very fond, ever fince he frighten'd Lady Davers's Footmen at the Hall, threatening * to chine them, if they offer'd to ftop his Lady; for, he says, he loves a Man of Courage; very probably knowing his own Defects that way; for my Lady often calls him a Chickenhearted Fellow. And then Lord and Lady Davers, and the Counters, reviv'd the Subject of the Morning; and Mr. B. was pleased to begin in the Manner I shall mention by-and-bye. For here I am obliged to break off.

Now, my dear Mils Darnford, I will proceed.

'I need not, faid Mr. B. observe to any body who knows what Love is, (or rather that violent Passion

which we mad young Fellows are apt to miscal

Love) what mean Things it puts one upon; how it unmans, and levels with the Duft, the proudest

Spirit. In the Sequel of my Story you will ob-

' ferve several Instances of this Truth.

'I began very early to take notice of this lovely Girl, even when she was hardly Thirteen Years

old; for her Charms increased every Day, not on-

beheld her. My Mother, as you, Lady Davers,

know, took the greatest Delight in her, always

calling her, her Pamela, her good Child: And her Waiting-maid, and her Cabinet of Rarities, were

her Boafts, and equally shewn to every Visitor:

For besides the Beauty of her Figure, and the geneed Air of her Person, the dear Girl had a surpri-

fing Memory, a Solidity of Judgment above her Years, and a Docility fo unequall'd, that she took

all Parts of Learning which her Lady, as fond of instructing her, as the of improving by Instruction,

crowded upon her; infomuch that the had Mafters

to teach her to dance, to fing, and to play on the Spinnet, whom she every Day surpris'd by the

Readinels wherewith the took every thing.

Le l'emember once, my Mother praising her Girl before me, and my Aunt B. (who is fince dead) I

could not but take notice to her of her Fondness for her, and said, What do you design, Madam, to

do with, or to do for, this Pamela of yours? The

' Accomplishments you give her will do her more

' Hare than Good: For they will fet her fo much above her Degree, that what you intend as a Kind-

ness may prove her Ruin.

'My Aunt join'd with me, and spoke in a still stronger Manner against giving her such an Educa-

tion; and added, as I well remember, Surely, Sifter,

'you do wrong. One would think, if one knew not my Nephew's discreet Pride, that you defign her for

' fomething more than your own Waiting-maid.
' Ah! Sifter, faid the old Lady, there is no Fear

of what you hint at: His Family Pride, and stately Temper, will secure my Son: He has too much of

his Father in him—And as for Pamela, you know not the Girl. She has always in her Thoughts,

and in her Mouth too, her Parents mean Condition;

and I shall do nothing for them, at least at present,

' though they are honest Folks, and deserve well,

because I will keep the Girl humble.

5

r

e

r

'But what can I do with the little Baggage, continued my Mother; the conquers every thing to faft,

and has fuch a Thirst after Knowledge; and the

more the knows, I verily think, the humbler the is,

that I cannot help letting go, as my Son, when a little Boy, used to do to his Kite, as fast as she pulls: and to what Height she'll foar I can't tell.

pulls: and to what Height she'll foar I can't tell.

I intended, proceeded the good Lady, at first, only to make her Mistress of some sine Needle-works, to qualify her (as she has a Delicacy in her Person, that makes it a pity she should ever be put to hard Work) for a genteel Place: but she masters that so fast, that now, as my Daughter is marry'd, and gone from me, I am desirous to qualify her to divert and entertain me in my thoughtful Hours: and were you, Sister, to know what she is capable of, and how diverting her innocent Prattle is to me, and her natural Simplicity, which I encourage her to preserve amidst all she learns, you would not, nor my Son neither, wonder at the Pleasure I take in her—Shall I call her in?

I don't want, said I, to have the Girl call'd in:
If you, Madam, are diverted with her, that is
enough.—To be sure Pamela is a better Companion for a Lady, than a Monkey or a Harlequin:
But I sear you'll set her above hersels, and make
her vain and pert; and that, at last, in order to sup-

port her Pride, she may fall into Temptations which may be fatal to herself, and others too.

'I'm glad to hear this from my Son, reply'd the good Lady. But the Moment I see my Favour

· puffs her up, I shall take other Measures.

Well, thought I to myfelf, I only want to conceal my Views from your penetrating Eye, my good Mother; and I shall one day take as much Delight in your Girl, and her Accomplishments, as you now do: So, go on, and improve her as fast as you will, I'll only now and then talk against her, to blind you; and doubt not that all you bestow upon her, will qualify her the better for my Purpose.—Only, thought I, sty swiftly on, two or three more tardy Years, and I'll nip this Bud by the Time it begins to

open, and place it in my Bosom for a Year or two at least; for so long if the Girl behaves worthy of

' her Education, I doubt not, she'll be new to me.

Excuse me, Ladies; excuse me, Lord Davers: If

I am not ingenuous I had better be filent.'

I will, as little as possible, interrupt this affecting Narration, by mentioning my own alternate Blushes, Contusions and Exclamations, as the naughty Man went on; nor the Censures, and many Out-upon-you's of the attentive Ladies, and Fie, Brother's, of Lord Davers; nor yet with Apologies for the Praises on myself, so frequently intermingled—contenting myself to give you, as near as I can recollect, the very Sentences of the dear Relator. And as to our occasional Exclaimings and Observations, you may suppose what they were.

· So, continued Mr. B. I went on dropping Hints against her now-and-then; and whenever I met her, in the Pattages about the House, or in the Garden, avoiding to look at her, or to speak to her, as the patied me, curt'lying, and putting on a thousand bewitching Airs of Obligingness and Reverence; while I (who thought that the best way to demolish the Influence of fuch an Educa-' tion, would be to avoid alarming her Fears on one hand, or to familiarize myfelf to her on the other, till I came to ffrike the Blow) looked haughty and referved, and passed by her with a stiff Nod, at ' most. Or, if I spoke, how does your Lady this ' Morning, Girl? hope the rested well last ' Night: Then, covered with Blushes, and curt'fy-' ing at every Word, as if the thought herself unworthy of answering my Questions, the'd trip away in a kind of Hurry and Confunon, as foon as she had fpoken. And once I heard her fay to Mrs.

' Fervis, Dear Sirs, my young Master spoke to me, and called me by my Name, saying, How steps

your Lady last Night, Pamela? Was not that

very good, Mrs. Fervis, was it not! Ay, thought I, I'm in the right way, I find: This will do in proper Time. Go on, my dear Mother, improving

as fast as you will: I'll engage to pull down in three

· Hours what you'll be building up in as many Years,

in spite of all the Lessons you can teach her.

'Tis enough for me, that I am establishing in you, Ladies, and in you, my Lord, a higher Esteem

for my Pamela (I am but too fentible I shall lose a good deal of my own Reputation) in the Relation

I am now giving you. Every-one but my Mother, who, however, had no high Opinion of her Son's

Virtue, used to look upon me as a Rake; and I

' got the Name, not very much to my Credit, you'll

tay, as well abroad as in England, of The folier Rake; —fome would fay, The genteel Rake; nay,

for that matter, some pretty Hearts, that have

finarted for their good Opinion, have called me

· The handsome Rake: - But whatever other Epithet

I was diffinguished by, it all concluded in Rake or

Libertine: Nor was I very much offended at the Character; for, thought I, if a Lady knows this,

and will come into my Company, half the Cere-

mony between us is over; and if the calls me fo, I

fhall have an excellent Excuse to punish her Free-

dom, by greater of my own.

'So I drefs'd, grew more and more confident, and became as infolent withal, as if, though I had not

Lady Davers's Wit and Virtue, I had all her Spirit

(excuse me, Lady Davers;) and having a pretty

bold Heart, which rather put me upon courting
 than avoiding a Danger or Difficulty, I had but too

much my Way with every-body; and many a me-

" nac'd Complaint have I look'd down with a haughty

- Air, and a Promptitude, like that of Colbrand's to
- 'your Footman at the Hall, to clap my Hand to my Side: Which was of the greater Service to my bold
- Literprizes, as two or three Gentlemen had found
- "I knew how to be in Earnest."

Ha! faid my Lady, thou wast ever an impudent Fellow; and many a vile Roguery have I kept from my poor Mother——Yet, to my Knowledge she thought you no Saint.

- Ay, poor Lady, continued he, she used now-
- and-then to catechize me; and was fure I was not fo good as I ought to be: For, Son, she would
- cry, these late Hours, these all-night Works, and
- to come home fo fober, cannot be right. I'm not
- ' fure, if I were to know all, (and yet I'm afraid of
- ' inquiring after your Ways) whether I fhould not
- have Reason to wish you were brought home in
- Wine, rather than to come in fo fober, and fo late,
- ' as you do.
 ' Once, I remember, in the Summer-time, I came
- ' home about Six in the Morning, and met the good
- Lady unexpectedly by the Garden Back-door, of
- which I had a Key to let myfelf in at all Hours.
- I started, and would have avoided her, as soon as I saw her: But she called me to her, and then I
- 'approach'd her, with an Air. What brings you,
- ' Madam, into the Garden at fo early an Hour?
- turning my Face from her; for I had a few
- Scratches on my Forehead, -with a Thorn, or fo,
- · -which I feared she would be more inquisitive
- about than I cared she should.
 - ' And what makes you, faid she, so early here,
- Billy?—What a rakish Figure dost thou make!—
- 'One Time or other these Courses will yield you
- but little Comfort on Reflection: would to God
- thou wast but happily marry'd!

So, Madam, the old Wish !- I'm not so bad as · you think me: - I hope I have not merited fo great a Punithment.

'Thefe Hints I give, not as Matter of Glory, but Shame: Yet I ought to tell you all the Truth, or

onothing. Meantime, thought I, (for I used, as I mentioned in the Morning, to have fome Com-

punction for my vile Practices, when cool Reflection, brought on by Satiety, had taken hold of me)

· I with this fweet Girl was grown to Years of Sufceptibility, that I might reform this wicked Course

of Life, and not prowl about, diffurbing honest

Folks Peace, and endangering myfelf. And as I

had by a certain very daring and wicked Attempt, in which however I did not fucceed, fet a Hornet's

Neft about my Ears, which I began to apprehend

would fling me to Death; having once escaped an

Ambuth, by Dint of mere good Luck; I thought it was better to remove the Seat of my Warfare

into another Kingdom, and to be a little more discreet for the future in my Amours. So I went

to France a fecond Time, as you know, Sifter; and

' passed a Twelvemonth there in the best of Com-

pany, and with some Improvement both to my

· Morals and Understanding; and had a very few-

· Sallies confidering my Love of Intrigue, and the

ample Means I had to profecute fuccessfully all-

the Defires of my Heart.

· When I return'd feveral Matches were proposed to me, and my good Mother often requested me

to make her fo happy as the called it, as to fee me

marry'd before flie dy'd: But I could not endure the Thoughts of that State; for I never faw a Lady

· whose Temper and Education I liked, or with whom

I thought I could live tolerably *. She used in vain

therefore to plead Family Reasons to me: Like

See for his particular Reasons against marrying, Vol. II. p. 312, &c.

' most young Fellows, I was too much a Self-lover

to pay so great a Regard to Posterity; and, to say

Truth, had very little Solicitude at that Time,

whether my Name were continued or not, in my own Descendants. However, upon my Return,

I look'd upon my Mother's Pamela with no finall

· Pleafure, and I found her fo much improved, as

well in Person as Behaviour, that I had the less

Inducement either to renew my intriguing Life,

or to think of a marry'd State.

'Yet, as my Mother had all her Eyes about her, as the Phrase is, I affected great Shyness, both before her, and to the Girl; for I doubted not, my very

Looks would be watched by them both; and what the one discovered would not be a Secret to the

other; and laying myself open to too early a Suf-

picion, I thought would but ice the Girl over, and

· make her Lady more watchful.

'So I used to go into my Mother's Apartment, and come out of it, without taking the least Notice of her, but put on stiff Airs; and, as she always withdrew when I came in, I never made

any Pretence to keep her there.

'Once indeed, my Mother, on my looking after her, when her Back was turn'd, faid, My dear Son, I don't like your Eye following my Girl fo intently. Only I know that sparkling Lustre natural to it, or I should have some Fear for my

· Pamela, as she grows older.

'I look after her, Madam?—My Eyes sparkle at fuch a Girl as that! No indeed!—She may be your Favourite as a Waiting-maid; but I see no-

'thing but clumfy Curt'fies in her, and aukward Airs about her. A little Rustic Affectation of

Innocence, that, to fuch as cannot fee into her,

may pass well enough.

'Nay, my Dear, reply'd my Mother, don't fay that of all Things, She has no Affectation, I am fure.

· Yes,

' Yes, the has in my Eye, Madam; and I'll tell vou how it comes about: You have taught her to affume the Airs of a Gentlewoman, to dance, and to enter a Room with a Grace; and yet bid her keep her low Birth and Family in view: And between the one Character, which she wants to get into, and the other she dares not get out of, she trips up and down mincingly, and knows not how to fet her Feet: So 'tis the fame in every Gesture; her Arms she knows not whether to swim with, or to hold before her; nor whether to hold her Head up, or down; and so does neither, but hangs it on one Side: A little aukward Piece of One and 't'other, I think her. - And indeed, Madam, you'd do the Girl more Kindness to put her into your Dairy, than to keep her about your Person, for ' fhe'll be utterly fpoil'd, I doubt, for any useful · Purpofe.

Ah, Son! faid she, I fear, by your Description, you have minded her too much in one Sense, tho' not enough in another. 'Tis not my Intention to recommend her to your Notice, of all Men: And I doubt not, if it please God I live, and she continues to be a good Girl, but she will make a Man of some middling, genteel Business, very happy.

* Pamela came in just then, with an Air so natural, so humble, and yet so much above herself, that I was forc'd to turn my Head from her, lest my Mother should watch my Eye again, and lest I should be inclin'd to do her that Justice, which my Heart affented to, but which my Lips had just before deny'd her.

All my Difficulty, in Apprehension, was, my good Mother: The Effect of whose Lessons to her Girl, I was not, however, so much asraid of, as her Vigilance. For, thought I, I see by the De-

blicacy of her Person, the Brilliancy of her Eye, and the sweet Apprehensiveness that plays about every

Feature

· Feature of her Face, that the must have Tinder enough in her Conflitution, to catch a well-flruck

' Spark; and I'll warrant I shall know how to set

her in a Blaze, in a few Months more.

'Yet I wanted, as I pass'd, to catch her Attention, too: I expected her to turn after me, and look to, ' as to flew a beginning Liking towards me; for, ' you must know, I had a great Opinion of my Perfon and Air, which had been fortunately diffinguished by Ladies, whom, of course, my Vanity ' made me allow to be very good Judges of these

outward Advantages. 'I'll give your Ladyships an Instance of this my Vanity, in a Catch I made extempore, to a Lady whom I had been urging to give me some Proofs of a Love, that I had the Confidence to tell her, 'I was fure she had in her Heart for me: She was a lively Lady; and laughing faid, Whoever ad-' mir'd me, it must be for my Confidence, and onothing else: But urging her farther, Why, faid ' fhe, brazen Man, (for fhe call'd Names, like Lady · Davers) what would you have me fay? I would love you, If I could :- But-Here interrupting ' her, and putting on a free Air, I half faid, and half fung,

You'd love me, you fay, if you cou'd! Why, thou mak'st me a very odd Creature; I pr'ythee survey me again; What can'ft thou object to my Feature?

· This shew'd my Vanity: And I answer'd for ' the Lady;

Why nothing-Very well. - Then I am fure you'll admit, That the Choice I have made, is a Sign of my WIT.

But, to my great Disappointment, Pamela never, by any savourable Glance, gave the least Encouragement to my Vanity. Well, thought I, this Girl has certainly nothing ethereal in her Mould: All unanimated Clay!—But the dancing and singing Airs my Mother is teaching her, will make her better qualify'd in time, and another Year will ripen her into my Arms, no doubt of it. Let me only go on in my present Way, and make her fear me: That will inhance in her Mind, every Favour I shall afterwards vouchsafe to shew her; and never question, old humdrum Virtue, thought I, but the Tempter without and the Tempter within, will be too many for the perversest Nicety that ever the Sex boasted.

'Yet, though I could not once attract her Eye

towards me, she never fail'd to draw mine after her, whenever she went by me, or where-ever I saw her, except, as I said, in my Mother's Presence; and particularly, when she had passed me, and could not see me look at her, without turning her Head, as I expected so often from her in vain.

'You will wonder, Lord Davers, who, I suppose, was once in love, or you'd never have marry'd

· fuch an hostile Spirit, as my Sister there-

Go on, Sauce-box, faid fhe, I won't interrupt you.

You will wonder how I could behave fo coolly, as to escape all Discovery so long from a Lady so watchful as my Mother; and from the Apprehensiveness of the Girl; for, high or low, every Individual of the Sex is quick as Lightning to Imaginations of this Kind: And besides, well says the Poet:

Men without Love, have oft so cunning grown, That something like it, they have shown; But none who had it, e'er seem'd to have none. Love's of a strangely open, simple Kind, Can no Arts or Disguises find; But thinks none sees it, 'cause itself is blind.

But to say nothing of her tender Years, and that my Love was not of this bashful Sort, I was not absolutely determined, so great was my Pride, that I ought to think her worthy of being my Mistress, when I had not much Reason, as I thought, to despair of prevailing upon Persons of higher Birth (were I disposed to try) to live with me upon my own Terms. My Pride therefore kept my Passion at bay, as I may say: So sar was I from imagining I should ever be brought to what has since happen'd! But to proceed:

'Hitherto my Mind was taken up with the Beauties of her Person only. My Eye had drawn my Heart after it, without giving myself any Trouble about that Sense and Judgment, which my Mother was always praising in her Pamela, as exceeding her Years and Opportunities: But an Occasion happened, which, though slight in itself, took the Head into the Party, and made me think of her, young as she was, with a Distinction, that before

I had not for her. It was this:
Being with my Mother, in her Closet, who was talking to me on the old Subject, Matrimony, I saw Pamela's Common-place Book, as I may call it: In which, by her Lady's Direction, from time to time, she had transcrib'd from the Bible, and other good Books, such Passages as made most Impression upon her, as she read. A Method, I take it, my Dear, turning to me, that was of great Service to you, as it initiated you into Writing with that Freedom and Ease, which shine in your saucy Letters and Journals; and to which my present Fetters are not a little owing: Just as Pediars catch Monkeys in the Baboon Kingdoms, provoking the attentive Fools,

by their own Example, to put on Shoes and Stock-

ings, till the Apes of Imitation, trying to do the like, intangle their Feet, and fo cannot escape

upon the Boughs of the Tree of Liberty, on

which before they were wont to hop, and fkip

about, and play a thousand puggish Tricks.

'I observ'd the Girl wrote a pretty Hand, and very fwift and free; and affix'd her Points or Stops with so much Judgment, (her Years considered) that I

- began to have an high Opinion of her Understand-
- ing. Some Observations likewise upon several of the Passages were so just and solid, that I could not

help being tacitly furprifed at them.

'My Mother watched my Eye, and was filent: I feemed not to observe that she did; and after a

while, laid down the Book, shutting it with great

· Indifference, and talking of another Subject.

' Upon this, my Mother faid, Don't you think

· Pamela writes a pretty Hand, Son?

I did not mind it much, faid I, with a careless

· Air. This is her Writing, is it? Taking the Book and opening it again, at a Place of Scrip-

ture. The Girl is mighty pious! faid I.

I wish you were so, Child.

I wish so too, Madam, if it would please you.

· I wish so, for your own sake, Child.

'So do I, Madam; and down I laid the Book again very carelefsly.

Look once more in it, faid fhe, and fee if you can't open it upon some Place that may strike you.

'I open'd it at, Train up a Child in the Way it flould go, &c. I fancy, faid I, when I was at Pamela's Age, I was pretty near as good as she.

Never, never, faid my Mother; I'm fure I took great Pains with you; but, alas! to very little Pur-

o poie. You had always a violent headstrong Will!

o Some Allowances for Boys and Girls, I hope,

o Madam: But you see I am as good for a Man as

my Sister for a Woman. No

· No indeed you are not, I do affure you.

'I am forry for that, Madam: You give me a fad'
Opinion of myfelf.

Brazen Wretch! faid my Lady: But go on:

' Turn to one of the Girls observations on some

' Text, faid my Mother.

'I did; and was pleased with it more than I would own. The Girl's well enough, said I, for what she is; but let's see what she'll be a few Years hence. Then will be the Trial.

' She'll be always good, I doubt not.

'So much the better for her.—But can't we talk of any other Subject? You complain how feldon I attend you, Madam, and indeed, when you are always talking of Matrimony, or of this low-born raw Girl, it must needs lessen the Pleasure of ap-

' proaching you.

But now, as I hinted to you, Ladies, and my Lord, I had a still higher Opinion of Pamela; and esteem'd her more worthy of my Attempts: For, thought I, the Girl has good Sense, and it will be some Pleasure to watch by what Gradations she may be made to rise into Love, and into an higher Life, than that to which she was born. And so I began to think she would be worthy in time of being my Mistress, which, till now, as I said before, I had been a little scrupulous about.

of fome Friends, with whom I had contracted an Intimacy abroad, into Scotland and Ireland, they having a Curiofity to fee those Countries, and we spent Six or Eight Months on this Expedition; and when I had landed them in France, I returned home, and found my good Mother in a very indifferent State of Health; but her Pamela arrived to a Height of Beauty and Perfection, which exceeded all my Expectations. I was so much taken

with her Charms the first Time I saw her, after

my Return, which was in the Garden with a Book in her Hand, just come out of a little Summer-

house, that I then thought of obliging her to go

back again, in order to begin a Parley with her:
But while I was refolving, she tript away, with

her Curt'sies and Reverences, and was out of my.

· Sight before I could determine.

'I was refolved, however, not to be long without her; and Mrs. Jewkes having been recommended

to me a little before, by a Brother-rake, as a Woman of try'd Fidelity, I ask'd her, If she would be

faithful, if I should have Occasion to commit a

' pretty Girl to her Care?

'She hop'd, fhe faid, it would be with the Lady's own Confent, and the fhould make no Scruple in

· obeying me.

' So I thought I would way-lay the Girl, and carry her first to a little Village in Northamptonshire, to

an Acquaintance of Mrs. Jewkes's. And when I had brought her to be easy and pacify'd a little, I

design'd that Fewkes should attend her to * Lincoln-

hire: For I knew, there was no coming at her here, under my Mother's Wing, by her own Con-

fent, and that to offer Terms to her, would be to blow up my Project all at once. Befides, I was

· sensible, that Mrs. Jervis would stand in the Way

of my Proceedings, as well as my Mother.

'The Method I had contriv'd, was quite easy, as I imagined, and such as could not have failed to

answer my Purpose, as to carrying her off; and I doubted not of making her well fatisfy'd in her

good Fortune very quickly; for, having a Notion

of her affectionate Duty to her Parents, I was not displeased, that I could make the Terms very easy

and happy to them all.

· What

Well .

What most stood in my way, was my Mother's Fondness for her: But on the Supposition, that I had got her Favourite in my Hands, which appeared to me, as I said, a Task very easy to be conquered, I had actually form'd a Letter for her to transcribe, acknowledging a Love-Affair, and laying her withdrawing herself so privately, to the implicit Obedience she ow'd to her Husband's Command, to whom she was marry'd that Morning, and who, being a young Gentleman of a genteel Family, and dependent on his Friends, was defirous of keeping it all a prosound Secret; and begging, on that Account, her Lady not to divulge it, so much as to Mrs. Fervis.

And to prepare for this, and make her Escape the more probable, when Matters were ripe for my Plot, I came in one Night and examin'd all the Servants, and Mrs. Jervis, the latter in my Mother's Hewing, about a genteel young Man, whom I pretended to find with a Pillion on the Horse he rode upon, waiting about the Back-door of the Garden, for somebody to come to him; and who rode off, when I came up to the Door, as fast as he could.

'Nobody knew any thing of the Matter, and they were much surprised at what I told them: But I begg'd Pamela might be watched, and that no one would say any thing to her about it.

My Mother faid, she had two Reasons not to speak of it to Pamela; one to oblige me; the other, and chief, because it would break the poor innocent Girl's Heart, to be suspected. Poor dear Child! said she, whither can she go, to be so happy as with me? Would it not be inevitable. Ruin to her to leave me? There is nobody comes after her: she receives no Letters, but now-and-then one from her Father and Mother, and those she shews me.

Vol. III.

Well, reply'd I, I hope she can have no Design; 'twould be strange if she had formed any to leave so good a Mistress: But you can't be fure

all the Letters she receives are from her Father:

and her shewing to you, Madam, those he writes, looks like a Cloak to others, she may receive from

another Hand. But it can be no Harm to have an Eye upon her. You don't know, Madam, what

'Tricks there are in the World.

'Not I, indeed; but only this I know, that the Girl shall be under no Restraint, if she is resolv'd

to leave me, well as I love her.

Mrs. Jervis faid, the would have an Eye upon Panela, in obedience to my Command; but the was fure there was no need; nor would the to

much wound the poor Child's Peace, as to men-

tion the Matter to her.

'This I suffered to blow off, and seem'd to my Mother to have so good an Opinion of her Pamela,

that I was forry, as I told her, I had fuch a Sur-

mise; saying, that the fellow and the Pillion were odd Circumstances, yet I dared to say,

there could be nothing in it: for I doubted not,

the Girl's Duty and Gratitude would hinder her

from doing a foolish or a rash Thing.

This my Mother heard with Pleasure; altho' my Motive to it, was but to lay her Pamela on the thicker to her, when she was to be told she had

· escaped.

She faid, She was glad I was not an Enemy to the poor Child. Pamela has no Friend but me,

continued the good Lady; and if I don't provide for her, I shall have done her more Harm than

Good, (as you and your Aunt B. have often faid)

in the Accomplishments I have given her: And vet the poor Girl, I fee that, added she, would not

be backward to turn her Hand to any thing for

the fake of an honest Livelihood, were she put to

it; which, if it please God to spare me, and she

continues good, the never thall be. I wonder not, Pamela, at your Tears on this Occasion. Your Lady was an excellent Woman, and deserved this Tribute to her Memory. All my Pleafure now is, that the knew not half my wicked Pranks, and that I did not vex her worthy · Heart in the Profecution of this Scheme; which would have given me a fevere Sting, inafmuch as I might have apprehended, with too much Reason,

that I had shorten'd her Days by the Knowledge

of the one and the other.

' I had thus in readiness every thing necessary for the Execution of my Project: But my Mother's ill State of Health gave me too much Concern, to permit me to proceed. And, now and then, as my frequent Attendance upon her in her Illness gave me an Opportunity of observing more and more of the Girl, and her affectionate Duty, and continual Tears, (finding her frequently on her Knees praying for her Miffress) I was moved to pity her: And often did I, while those Scenes of my Mother's Illness and Decline were before me, refolve to conquer, if possible, my guilty Passion, as those Scenes taught me, while their Impressions held, juftly to call it; and I was much concerned I found it a more difficult Task than I imagin'd: For, till now, I thought it principally owing to my usual enterprising Temper, and a Love of Intrigue; and that I had nothing to do but to refolve · against it, and to subdue it.

But I found I was greatly mistaken; for I had infenfibly brought myfelf to admire her in every thing fhe faid or did; and there was fo much Gracefulness, Humility, and Innocence in her whole Behaviour, and I faw fo many melting · Scenes between her Lady and her, that I found I

· could not mafter my Esteem for her.

My Mother's Illness increasing beyond Hopes of Recovery, and having fettled all her greater Affairs, ' fhe talked to me of her Servants: I asked her What ' she would have done for Pamela and Mrs. Fervis? ' Make Mrs. Jervis, my dear Son faid she, as happy as you can: She is a Gentlewoman born, vou know; let her always be treated as fuch: But, for your own fake, don't make her independent; for then you'll want a faithful Manager. ' Yet, if you marry, and your Lady should not va-· lue her as the deferves, allow her a Competency for the rest of her Life, and let her live as she pleases. ' As for Pamela, I hope you will be her Protector; I hope you will!—She is a good Girl: I · love her next to you and your dear Sifter: She is ' just arrived at a trying Time of Life. I don't know · what to fay for her. What I had defign'd was, that if any Man of a genteel Calling should offer, I · would have given her a little pretty Portion, had God spared my Life till then. But if she should be · made independent, some idle Fellow perhaps might ' fnap her up; for the is very pretty: Or if the should carry what you give her to her poor Parents, as her · Duty would lead her to do, they are fo unhappily ' involv'd, that a little Matter would be nothing to them, and the poor Girl might be to feek again. · Perhaps Lady Davers will take her. But I wish she was not fo pretty! She will be likely to be the · Bird for which fome wicked Fowler will spread his Snares; or, it may be, every Lady will not choose to have fuch a Waiting-maid. You are a young Gentleman, and, I am forry to fay it, not better ' than I wish you to be. Tho' I hope my Pamela would not be in danger from her Mafter, who owes to all his Servants Protection, as much as a King does to his Subjects. Yet I don't know how to wish her to flay with you, for your own Reputation's

fake, my dear Son; - For the World will censure

as it lifts.—Would to God! faid she, the dear Girl ' had the Small-pox in a mortifying manner: She'd be lovely enough in the Genteelness of her Perfon, and the Excellencies of her Mind; and more out of danger of fuffering from the transient Beauties of Countenance. Yet I think, added the, the ' might be fafe and happy under Mrs. Fervis's Care; and if you marry, and your Lady parts with Mrs. fervis, let 'em go together, and live as they like. ' -I think that will be the best for both. --- And ' you have a generous Spirit enough: I will not ' direct you in the Quantum. But, my dear Son, remember that I am the less concerned, that I have not done for the poor Girl myfelf, because 'I depend upon you: The manner how fitly to provide for her, has made me defer it till now, that I have fo much more important Concerns on ' my Hands: Life and Strength ebbing fo fast, that " I am hardly fit for any thing, or to wish for any ' thing, but to receive the last releasing Stroke.'

Here he stopp'd, being under some Concern himfelf, and we in much more. At last he resum'd the Subject:

You will too naturally think, my Lord, and you, my good Ladies, that the Mind must be truly diabolical, that could break thro' the Regard due to the solemn Injunctions and Recommendations of a dying Parent. They did hold me a good while indeed; and as fast as I found any Emotions of a contrary Nature rise in my Breast, I endeavoured for some time to suppress them, and to think and act as I ought: But the dear bewitching Girl every Day rose in her Charms upon me: And, finding she still continued the Use of her Pen and Ink, I could not help entertaining a Jealousy, that she was writing to somebody who stood well in her Opinion; and my Love for her, and my own Spirit K 3

of Intrigue, made it a tweetheart of courfe. And · I could not help watching her Motions; and feeing her once putting a Letter she had just folded up, into her Bosom, at my Entrance into my · Mother's Dreffing-room, I made no doubt of de-· tecting her, and her Correspondent; and so I took the Letter from her * Stays, the trembling and · curt'fying with a fweet Confusion: and highly · pleafed I was to find it contained nothing but Innocence and Duty to the deceased Mistress, and the loving Parents, expressing her Joy, that in the midst of her Grief for losing the one, she was onot obliged to return to be a Burden to the other: · And I gave it her again, with Words of Encouragement, and went down much better fatisfied, than I had been with her Correspondents.

But when I reflected upon the innocent Simplicity of her Style, I was still more in love with
her, and form'd a Stratagem, and succeeded in it,
to come at her other Letters, + which I sent forward, after I had read them, all but three or four,
which I kept back then my Plot began to ripen for
Execution: and the little Slut was most abomihably free with my Character, to her Father and

' You will censure me, no doubt, that my Mo-

· Mother.

ther's Injunctions made not a more lasting Impression upon me. But really I struggled hard with myself to give them their due Force; and the dear Girl, as I said, every Day grew lovelier, and more accomplish'd. Her Letters were but so many Links to the Chains in which she had bound me; and tho' once I had resolv'd to part with her ‡ to Lady Davers, and you, Madam, had an Intention to take her, I could not for my Life give her up; and thinking at that time more honourably of the state of a Missression than

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 3. + See Vol. I. p. 104, 115. ‡ See Vol. I. p. 8.

· throw

than I have done fince, I could not persuade myself, since I intended to do as handsomely by her as ever Man did to a Lady in that Situation) but that I should do better for her than my Mother had wished me to do, and so more than answer all her Injunctions, as to the providing for her: And I could not imagine I should have met with a Resistance from her, that I had seldom encounter'd from Persons much her Superiors as to Descent; and was amaz'd at it; for it consounded me in all the Notions I had of her Sex, which, like a true Libertine, I supposed wanted nothing but Importunity and Opportunity, a

bold Attempter, and a Mind not ungenerous.

Sometimes I admired her for her Virtue; at other times, impetuous in my Temper, and unus'd to Controul, I could have beat her. She well, I remember, describes the Tumults of my Soul, when she repeats what once passed between us, in Words like these: "* Take the little Witch from me, Mrs. 'Yervis.—I can neither bear, nor sorbear her.—

But stay—you shan't go!—Yet begone!—No, come back again."—'She thought I was mad, I remember she says in her Papers. Indeed I was little less.

"She fays, "I took her Arm, and grip'd it black and blue, to bring her back again; and then fat down and look'd at her as filly as fuch a poor Girl as fhe!"

Well did the dear Slut describe the Passion I struggled with; and no one can conceive how much my Pride made me despise myself at times for the little Actions my Love for her put me upon, and yet to find that Love increasing every Day, as her Charms and her Resistance increased. I have caught myself in a raging Fit, sometimes vowing I would have her; and, at others jealous, that, to secure herself from my Attempts, she would

K 4

* See Vol. I. p. 67.

throw herfelf into the Arms of some Menial or Infe-

rior, whom otherwise she would not have thought of.
Sometimes I soothed her, sometimes threaten'd

her; but never was fuch Courage, when she apprehended her Virtue was in Danger, mix'd with

fo much Humility, when her Fears gave way to her

· Hopes of a juster Treatment.

Then I would think it impossible, (fo slight an
Opinion had I of Woman's Virtue) that such a Girl
as this, Cottage-born, who owed every thing to my

Family, and had an absolute Dependance upon my Pleasure; myself not despicable in Person or Mind,

as I supposed; the unprejudiced in any Man's Fa-

vour; at an Age fusceptible of Impressions; and a
 Frame and Constitution not Ice nor Snow: Surely,

thought I, all this Frost must be owing to the Want

of Fire in my Att_mpts to thaw it: I used to dare

' more, and fucceed better. Shall fuch a Girl as this awe me by her rigid Virtue? No, she shall not.

'Then I would refolve to be more in Earnest. Yet

my Love was a Traitor to me: That was more

faithful to her than to me: it had more Honour in it

at Bottom than I had designed it should have. Aw'd

by her unaffected Innocence, and a Virtue I had ne-

ver before encounter'd, fo uniform and immove-

able, the Moment I faw her I was half difarm'd;

and I courted her Confent to that, which the I was

onot likely to obtain, yet it went against me to think

of extorting by Violence. Yet Marriage was never

'in my Thoughts; I scorn'd so much as to promise it.
'To what numberless mean Things did not this

unmanly Passion subject me?—I used to watch for

her Letters, tho' mere Prittle-prattle and Chit-

chat, receiv'd them with burning Impatience, and

' read them with Delight, tho' myself was accused

in them, and fligmatiz'd as I deferv'd.

'I would liften meanly at her Chamber-door; try
to over-hear her little Conversations; in vain at-

' tempted

tempted to suborn Mrs. Jervis to my Purposes, inconsistently talking of Honour, when no one Step I took, or Action I attempted, shewed any thing like it; lost my Dignity among my Servants; made a Party in her Favour against me, of every body, but whom my Money corrupted, and that hardly fusficient to keep my Partisans steady to my Interest; so greatly did the Virtue of the Servants tri-

' umph over the Vice of the Mafter, when con-

firmed by fuch an Example!

'I have been very tedious, Ladies, and my Lord 'Davers, in my Narration: But I am come within 'View of the Point for which I now am upon my Trial at your dread Tribunal (heaving to us all)

'Trial at your dread Tribunal (bowing to us all.) 'After several Endeavours of a smooth and a ' rough Nature, in which my Devil constantly fail'd ' me, and her good Angel prevail'd, I had talk'd to ' Mrs. Fervis to induce the Girl (to whom, in hopes of frightening her, I had given Warning, but which ' fhe rejoiced to take, to my great Disappointment) to ' defire to flay *; and suspecting Mrs. fervis play'd ' me Booty, and rather confirm'd her in her Coyness, and her Defire of leaving me, I was mean enough to ' conceal myself in the Closet in Mrs. Fervis's Room, 'in order to hear their private Conversation: But ' really not defigning to make any other Use of ' my Concealment, than to teaze her a little, if she ' should fay any thing I did not like; which would ' give me a Pretence to treat her with greater Free-' doms than I had ever yet done, and would be an Introduction to take off from her unprecedented 'Apprehensiveness another Time: And I had the ' less Scruple as to Mrs. Jervis's Presence, because ' I was fentible, the knew as bad of me as the could know, from Pamela's Apprehenfions, as well as her own; and would find me, if I kept within any · decent K 5

decent Bounds, better than either of them expected. But I had no Defign of proceeding to Extremities, altho' I had little Hope of making any Impression

' upon her by Gentlenefs.

So, like a benighted Traveller, who having fraved out of his Knowledge, and despairing to find his Way, throws the Reins upon the Horse's Neck, to be guided at its uncertain Direction, I refolv'd to take my Chance for the Issue which the Adventure should produce.

· But the dear Prattler, not knowing I was there, as fhe undress'd herself, began such a bewitching Chitchat with Mrs. Fervis, who I found but ill kept my Secret, that I never was at fuch a Loss in my Life what to refolve upon. One while I wish'd myfelf unknown to them, out of the Closet into which my inconfiderate Paffion had meanly led me; another time I was incens'd at the Freedom with which I heard myfelf treated: But then, rightly confidering, that I had no Business to hearken to their private Conversation, and that it was such as became them, while I ought to have been asham'd to give Occasion for it, I excus'd them both and admir'd ftill more and more the dear Prattler.

In this Suspense the undefigued Rustling of my Night-gown, from changing my Posture as I stood, giving alarm to the watchful Pamela, the in a Fright came towards the Closet to see who was there, fo that I could be no longer conceal'd.

 What could I then do, but bolt out upon the Apprehensive Charmer; and having so done, and she ' running to the Bed, screaming to Mrs. Fervis, would not any Man have followed her thither, detected as I was? But yet I faid, if the forbore

· her Screaming, I would do her no Harm; but it

not, the should take the Confequence.

1 found by their Exclamations, that this would · pass with both for an Attempt of the worst Kind; · but but really I had not fuch Intentions as they feared. -When, indeed, I found myfelf detected; when the dear frighten'd Girl ran to the Bed; when Mrs. Fervis threw herself about her; when they would onot give over their hideous Squallings; when I was charg'd by Mrs. Fervis with the worst Designs; it was enough to make me go farther than I delign'd; and could I have prevailed upon Mrs. Fervis to go up, and quiet the Maids, who were rifing, as I ' heard by the Noise they made over-head, upon the other Screaming, I believe, had Pamela kept out of her Fit, I should have been a little freer with her, than ever I had been: But as it was, I had on Thought but of making as honourable a Retreat as I could, and to fave myfelf from being ex-' pos'd to my whole Family; and I was not guilty of any Freedoms, that her Modesty, unaffrighted, could reproach itself with having suffered; and the dear Creature's fainting Fits gave me almost as great Apprehensions, as I could give ber.

'Thus, Ladies, and my Lord, have I tediously and little enough to my own Reputation, given you a Character of myfelt, and told you more against myself than any one Person could accuse me of. Whatever redounds to the Credit of my Pamela, * redounds in Part to my own; and fo I have the less Regret to accuse myself, fince it exalts her. But as to a form'd Intention to hide myself in the Closet, in order to attempt the Girl by Violence, and in the Presence of a good Woman, as Mrs. Tervis is, which you impute to me, indeed, bad as I was, I was not fo vile, fo abandon'd as that. Love, as I faid before, subjects its inconfiderate Votaries to innumerable Meanneffes, and unlawful Paffion to many more. I could not live without this dear Girl. I hated the Thoughts of Matrimony with any body, and to be brought to the Stake

by my Mother's Waiting-maid, forbid it, Pride!

' thought

thought I; forbid it, Example | forbid it, all my past Sneers, and constant Ridicule, both on the

· Estate, and on those who descended to Inequalities

in it! and, lastly, forbid it, my Family Spirit, so visible in Lady Davers, as well as in myself, to

whose Insults, and those of all the World, I shall

' be obnoxious, if I make fuch a Step! · All this tends to demonstrate the Strength of my Paffion: I could not conquer my Love; fo I conquer'd a Pride, which every one thought unconquerable; and fince I could not make an innocent ' Heart vicious, I had the Happiness to follow so good ' an Example; and by this Means, a vicious Heart is become virtuous; and I have the Pleafure of re-' joicing in the Change, and hope I shall still more ' and more rejoice in it; for I really look back with ! Contempt upon my past Follies; and it is now a greater Wonder to me how I could act as I did, ' than that I should detest those Actions, which made " me a Curfe, instead of a Benefit to Society. In-' deed I am not, yet, so pious as my Pamela; but ' that is to come, and it is one good Sign, that I can truly fay, I delight in every Instance of her Piety and Virtue: And now I will conclude my tedious Narration with the Poet;

Our Passions gone, and, Reason in her Throne, Amaz'd we see the Mischiefs ze have done: After a Tempest, when the Winds are laid, The calm Sea wonders at the Wrecks it made.

Thus ended my dear Mr. B. his affecting Relation; which in the Course of it gave me a thousand different Emotions; and made me often pray for him, (as I constantly do) that God will entirely convert a Heart so generous and worthy, as his on most Occasions. And if I can but find him not deviate, when we go to London, I shall have great Hopes, that nothing will affect his Morals again.

I have

I have just read over again the foregoing Account of himself. As near as I remember, (and my Memory is the best Faculty I have) it is pretty exact; only he was fuller of beautiful Similitudes, and spoke in a more flowery Style, as I may say. Yet don't you think, Miss, (if I have not done Injustice to his Spirit) that the Beginning of it, especially, is in the saucy Air of a Man too much alive to such Notions? For so the Ladies observed in his Narration.—Is it very like the Style of a true Penitent?—But indeed he went on better, and concluded best of all.

But don't you observe what a dear good Lady I had? Bleffings, a thousand Bleffings, on her beloved Memory! Were I to live to see my Childrens Children, they should be all taught to list her Praises before they could speak. My Gratitude should always be renewd in their Mouths; and God, and my dear Father and Mother, my Lady, and my Master that was, my best Friend that is, but principally, as most due, the First, who inspired all the rest, should have their Morning, their Noon-tide, and

their Evening Praifes, as long as I lived !-

I will only observe farther, as to this my Third Conversation-piece, That my Lord Davers offer'd to extenuate some Parts of his dear Brother-in-Law's Conduct, which he did not himself vindicate; and Mr. B. was pleased to observe that my Lord was always very candid to him, and kind in his Allowances for the Sallies of an ungovernable Youth. Upon which my Lady said, a little tartly, Yes, and for a very good Reason, I doubt not. For who cares to condemn himself?

Nay, faid my Lord, pleafantly, don't put us upon a Foot neither: For what Sallies I made before I knew your Ladyship, were but like those of a Fox, which now-and-then runs away with a straggling Pullet, when nobody sees him: Whereas those of my Brother were like the Invasions of a Lion, breaking into

every Man's Fold, and driving the Shepherds, as well as the Sheep before him.—Ay, faid my Lady, but I can look around me, and have Reason perhaps to think the invading Lion has come off, little as he deserv'd it, better than the creeping Fox, who, with all his Cunning, sometimes suffers for his pilfering Thest.

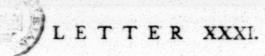
O, my Dear, these Gentlemen are strange Creatures!—What can they think of themselves?—for they say, there is not one virtuous Man in Five!—But I hope for our Sex's sake, as well as for the World's sake, all is not true that evil Fame reports; for, you know, every Man-trespasser must find or make a Woman-trespasser!—And if so, what a World is this?—And how must the Innocent suffer from the Guilty! Yet, how much better is it to suffer one's-self, than to be the Cause of another's Suffering?

I long to hear of you. And must shorten my future Accounts, or I shall do nothing but write, and tire you into the Bargain, tho' I cannot my dear Fa-

ther and Mother. I am, my dear Miss,

Always yours,

P. B.



From Mifs DARNFORD, to Mrs. B.

My dear Mrs. B.

PVERY Post you more and more oblige us to admire and love you: And let me tell you, I will gladly receive your Letters upon your own Terms*: Only when your worthy Parents have perused them, see that I have every Line of them again.

Your Account of the Arrival of your noble Guests, and their Behaviour to you, and yours to them; your Conversation, and wise Determination, on the offer'd

Title

Title of Baronet; the just Applauses conferred upon you by all, particularly the good Countes; your Breakfast Conversation, and the Narrative of your saucy abominable Master, the amiable Husband; all delight us beyond Expression.

Do, go on, dear excellent Lady, with your charm-

ing Journals, and let us know all that paffes.

As to the State of Matters with us, I have defired my Papa to allow me to decline Mr. Murray's Addreffes. The good Man lov'd me most violently, nay, he could not live without me; Life was no Life, unless I favour'd him: But yet, after a few more of these Flights, he is trying to fit down fatisfy'd without my Papa's foolish perverse Girl, as Sir Simon calls me, and to transpose his Affections to a worthier Object, my Sifter Nancy; and it would make you smile. to fee how, a little while before he directly applied to her, she screw'd up her Mouth to my Mamma, and Truly, the'd have none of Polly's Leavings; no, not the !- But no fooner did he declare himself in Form, than the gaudy Wretch, as he was before with her, became a well dress'd Gentleman; --- the chattering Magpie, (for he talks and laughs much) quite converfible-and has fomething agreeable to fay upon every Subject. Once, He would make a good Mafter of the Buck-hounds; but now, Really, the more one is in his Company, the more polite one finds him.

Then, on his Part,—Indeed, he happened to fee Miss Polly first! and, Truly he could have thought himself very happy in so agreeable a young Lady; yet there was always something of Majesty (what a stately Name is that for Ill-nature!) in Miss Nanny; something so aweful, that while Miss Polly engaged the Affections at first Sight, Miss Nanny struck a Man with Reverence; insomuch that the one might be loved as a Woman, but the other revered as some-

thing more: A Goddess, no doubt.

I do but think, that when he comes to be lifted up to her celeftial Sphere, as her Fellow Conftellation, what a Figure Nancy and her Urfus Major will make together; and how will they glitter and

shine to the Wonder of all Beholders!

Then the must make a brighter Appearance by far, and a more pleafing one too; for why; She has 3000 Satellites, or little Stars, in her Train more than poor Polly can pretend to. Won't there be a fine Twinkling and Sparkling, think you, when the Greater and Leffer Bear-stars are joined together.

But excuse me, dear Mrs. B.; this saucy Girl has vex'd me just now, by her ill-natur'd Tricks; and I am even with her, having thus vented my Spite, tho'

the knows nothing of the Matter.

So, fancy, my dear Friend, you see Polly Darnford abandon'd by her own Fault; her Papa angry at her; her Mamma pitying her, and calling her filly Girl; Mr. Murray, who is a rough Lover, growling over his Miffress, as a Dog over a Bone he fears to lose; Mils Nancy, putting on her prudifh Pleafantry, and fnarling out a kind Word, and breaking thro' her fullen Gloom, for a Smile now-and-then in return; and I laughing at both in my Sleeve, and thinking, that in a while I shall get leave to attend you in Town, and that will be better than twenty humble Servants of Mr. Murray's Calt: Or, if I can't, that I shall have the Pleasure of your Correspondence here, and thall enjoy, unrivalled, the Favour of my dear Papa and Mamma, which this ill-temper'd Girl is always envying me.

Forgive all this Nonfenfe. I was willing to write fomething, the' worle than nothing, to thew how defirous I would be to oblige you, had I Capacity or Subject, as you have. But nobody can love you better or admire you more, of this you may be affured,

(however unequal in all other respects) than

Your FOLLY DARNFORD.

I fend you up some of your Papers for the good Couple in Kent. Pay my Respects to them; and beg they'll let me have 'em again as soon as they can, by your Conveyance.

Our Stamford Friends defire their kindest Respects: They mention you with Delight in

every Letter.

LETTER XXXII.

The JOURNAL continued.

Thursday, Friday Evening.

My dear Mij DARNFORD,

I AM retir'd from a very bufy Day, having had no less than Fourteen of our Neighbours, Gentlemen and Ladies, to dinner with us: The Occafion, principally, to welcome our noble Guests into these Parts; Mr. B. having, as I mention'd in a former, turn'd the intended Visit into an Entertain-

ment, after his usual generous Manner.

Mr. B. and Lord Davers are gone Part of the Way with them home; and Lord Jackey mounted with his Favourite Colbrand as an Efcort to the Counters and Lady Davers who are gone to take an Airing in the Chariot. They offer'd to take the Coach, if I would have gone; but being fatigued, I defired to be excused. So I retired to my Closet, and Miss Darnford, who is seldom out of my Thoughts, coming into my Mind, I had a new Recruit of Spirits, which enabled me to resume my Pen, and thus I proceed with my Journal:

Our Company was §, the Earl and Countess of D, who are so fashionable a marry'd Couple, that

§ For the Characters of most of these Gentlemen and Ludies, see Vol. I. p. 59, 85, and Vol. II. p. 354 to 358, and 376 to 380.

the Earl made it his Boaft, and his Countefs bore it like one accultomed to such Treatment, that he had not been in his Lady's Company an Hour abroad before for seven Years. You know his Lordship's Character: Every-body does; and there is not a worse, as Report says, in the Peerage.

Sir Thomas Atkyns, a fingle Gentleman, not a little finical and ceremonious, and a mighty Beau, tho' of the tawdry Sort, and affecting foreign Airs; as if he was afraid it would not be judged by any other

Mark, that he had travelled.

Mr. Arthur, and his Lady, a moderately happy Couple, who feem always when together to behave as if they were upon a Compromife; that is, that each would take it in Turn to fay free Things of the other; tho' fome of their Freedoms are of fo cutting a Nature, that it looks as if they intended to divert the Company at their own Expence. The Lady, being of a noble Family, takes great Pains to let every one know, that she values herself not a little upon that Advantage: But otherwise has many good Qualities.

Mr. Brooks, and his Lady. The Gentleman is a free Joker on ferious Subjects, but a good-natur'd Man, and fays sprightly Things with no ill Grace: The Lady is a little reserved, and of a haughty Turn, tho' to-day she happened to be freer than

usual; as was observed at Table by

Lady Towers, who is a Maiden Lady of Family, noted for her Wit and Repartee, and who fays many good Things, with fo little Doubt, and really to good a Grace, that one cannot help being pleas'd with her. This Lady is generally gallanted by

Mr. Martin of the Grove, as he is called, to diffinguish him from a rich Citizen of that Name, who is settled in these Parts, but being covetous and proud, is seldom admitted among the Gentry in their Visits or Parties of Pleasure. Mr. Martin is a shrewd Gentleman, but has been a little too much of the Libertine

Calt,

Cast, and has lived freely as to Women; and for that Reason has not been received by Lady Towers, who hates free Actions, tho' she'll use free Words, modestly free, as she calls them; that is to say, the Double Entendre, in which Sir Simon Darnford, a Gentleman you are not unacquainted with, takes great Delight; tho' by the way, what that worthy Gentleman calls innocent, Lady Towers would blush at.

Mr. Dormer, a Gentleman of a very courteous. Demeanour, a Widower, was another, who always speaks well of his deceased Lady, and of all the Sex

for her fake.

Mr. Chapman, and his Lady, a well behaved Couple, who are not ashamed to be very tender and obferving to one-another, but without that censurable Fondness which sits so ill upon some married Folks

in Company.

-

6

e

at

S.

a

d

e :

ty

an

ny

ic

5'3

di-

vho

uc,

SOF

tle-

tine

24

Then there was the *Dean*, our good Minister, whom I name last, because I would close with one of the worthiest; and his *Daughter*, who came to supply her Mama's Place, who was indisposed; a well-behaved prudent young Lady. And here were our Fourteen Guests.

The Countess of C. Lady Davers, Lord Davers, Mr. H. my dear Mr. B. and your humble Servant, made up the rest of the Company. So we had a capacious and brilliant Circle, you may imagine; and all the Avenues to the House were crouded with

their Equipages.

The Subjects of Discourse at Dinner were various, as you may well suppose; and the Circle was too large to fall upon any regular or very remarkable Topics. A good deal of sprightly Wit, however, slew about, between the Earl of D. Lady Towers and Mr. Martin, in which that Lord suffer'd as he deserv'd: for he was by no means a Match for the Lady, especially as the Presence of the Dean was a very visible Restraint upon him, and upon Mr. Brooks too: So much Awe will

the Character of a good Clergyman always have upon even forward Spirits, where he is known to have had an inviolable Regard to it himfelf.

Befides, the good Gentleman has, naturally, a genteel and inoffensive Vein of Raillery, and so was

too hard for them at their own Weapons.

But after Dinner was over, and the Servants were withdrawn, Mr. Martin fingled me out, as he leves to do, for a Subject of Encomium, and made fonce high Compliments to my dear Mr. B. upon her Choice; and wish'd (as he often does) he could find just such another Person for himself.

Lady Towers told him, That it was a Thing as unaccountable as it was unreasonable, that every Rake who loved to destroy Virtue, should expect to be rewarded with it: And if his Brother B. had come off so well, she thought no one else ought to expect it.

Lady Davers faid, it was a very just Observation: and she thought it was Pity there was not a Law, that every Man who made a Harlot of an honest Woman, should be obliged to marry one of another's making.

That would be too fevere, Mr. B. faid; it would be Punishment enough, if he was to marry his own; and especially if he had not seduced her under Promise of Marriage.

Then you'd have a Man be obliged to fland to his Promife, I suppose, Mr. B. reply'd Lady Davers?

Yes, Madam.

But, faid she, the Proof would be difficult perhaps: and the most unguilty Heart of our Sex might be least able to make it out. But what say you, my Lord D. continued her Ladyship, will You, and my Lord Davers join to bring a Bill into the House of Peers, for the Purposes I mentioned? I fancy my Brother would give it all the Assistance he could in the Lower House.

Your Ladyship, said Mr. Martin, is highly unreasonable, I think, to propose that: It would be enough enough furely, that a Man should be obliged, as Mr. B. says, to marry the Woman he himself seduced.

The Earl faid, That he thought neither the one nor the other should be imposed upon any Man; for that when Women's Virtue was their Glory, and they were brought up with that Notion, and to avoid the Snares of Men, he thought, if they yielded, they ought to pay the Forseit, and take the Disgrace of it to themselves.

,

+

it

d

1;

)-

15

1-

ht

U,

nd

ile

in

11-

be

gh

1

May I ask your Lordship, said I, How it comes to pass, that a Woman's Virtue is her Glory, and that a Man's shall not be his?—Or, in other Words, Why you think Virtue in a Man is not as requisite as in a Woman?

Custom, Madam, reply'd the Earl, has made it very different; and those Things which are scandaous in a Lady, are not so in a Gentleman.

Will your Lordship argue, that it should be so, because it is so? Does not the Gentleman call himself the Head of his Family? Is it not incumbent upon him, then, to set a good Example? And will he plead it as a Fashion, that he may do by the dearest Relatives of another Man's Family, what, if any one should attempt to do by his, he would mortally resent?

Very well observ'd, Madam, said the Dean: There is not a Free-liver in the World, I believe, who can answer that Argument.

Mr. B. faid the Earl, pray speak to your Lady: she is too close upon us. And where Sentiments have been so well supported by a Conduct so uniform and exemplary, I choose not to enter the Lists with such an Antagonist.

Well, well, faid Mr. B. fince your Lordship will speak in the Plural Number US, let me say, We must not pretend to hold an Argument on this Subject—But, however, I think, my Lord, you should not call upon a Man to defend it, who, bad as he has been, never committed a Fault of this Nature, that

he was not forry for, though the Sorrow generally lasted too little a while.

Mr. B. (faid Lady Towers) has some Merit with me for that Answer: And he has still a greater on another Account; and that is, that he has seen his Error so early, and has left his Vices before they left him.

She looked, as every one did, on the Earl, who appear'd a little disconcerted, as one conscious, that he deserved the Reslection. And the Dean said, Lady Towers observes very well: For, altho' I presume not to make personal Applications, yet I must say, That the Gentleman who sees his Error in the Prime of Life, before he is overtaken by some awakening Missortune, may be called one of the happiest of those who have erred.

Ay, Mr. Dean, faid Lady Towers, I can tell you one Thing, that fuch another Buttress as you know who, taken away from Libertinism, and such another Example as a certain Lady every Day gives, would go near in a few Years to ruin the Devil's Kingdom

in Bedfordfbire.

The Gentlemen looked round upon one-another upon this home Push: And the Lady would not let them recover it. See, said she, how the Gentlemen look upon one-another, as who should say, each to his Companion, I'm not so bad as you.

Av, faid Lady Davers, I fee, my Lord Davers, and the Earl of D. and Mr. Martin, look most con-

cerned.

Faith, Ladies, faid Mr. Martin, this is too feverely personal: A Man who contends with a Lady has a fine Time of it; for we are under Restraint, while you say any-thing you please. But let me tell you, there's not a Man of us all, 'tis my Opinion, that could have attempted what a certain Renegado has attempted, tho' he is so readily acquitted.

Not so hasty, my good Friend, said Mr. B. You don't consider well what you say, nor of whom: For

did I take upon myself to censure you? But tho' I may challenge you to say the worst you can, because I always dealt upon my own Stock, while other People I could name, enter'd into a Society, and clubb'd for Mischief; yet I see you deal with a Brother Rake, when he reforms, as Highwaymen with one of their Gang, who would fain withdraw and be honest, but is kept among them by sear of an Impeachment.

But is not this, Ladies, faid Mrs. Arthur, a fad Thing, that fo many fine Gentlemen, as think themselves concerned in this Charge, should have no way to clear themselves but by Recrimination?

Egad, Gentlemen, faid Sir Thomas Atkyns, I know not what you're about? You make but forry Figures, by my Faith!—I have heard of many queer Pranks among my Bedfordshire Neighbours; but I blefs my Stars, I was in France and Italy all the Time.

Said Mr. Martin, Mrs. Arthur spoke the Words fine Gentlemen, and Sir Thomas thought himself ob-

Ay, faid the Earl; and the best of it is, Sir Tho-

Ay, faid the Earl; and the best of it is, Sir Thomas pleads not his Virtue neither, that he did not join in these queer Pranks with his Bedfordshire Neigh-

bours, but his Abjence.

)

9

V

2

C

1,

ıî

15

H

or

ud

Gad take me, returned he, taking a Pinch of Snuff with an Air, you're plaguy sharp, Gentlemen: I believe in my Conscience you're in a Consederacy, as Mr. B. says, and would swear an honest Man into the Plot, that would not care for such Company. What say you, Mr. H.? Which Side are you of?

Every Gentleman, reply'd he, who is not of the Ladies Side, is deem'd a Criminal; and I was always of the Side that had the Power of the Gallows.

That shews, return'd Lady Towers, that Mr. H. is more afraid of the Punishment, than of deferving it.

'Tis well, said Mr. B. that any Consideration deters a Man of Mr. H.'s Time of Life. What may be Fear now, may improve to Virtue in time.

Ay, faid Lady Davers, Jackey is one of his Uncle's Foxes. He'd be glad to fnap up a straggling Pullet, if he was not well look'd after, perhaps.

Pray, my Dear, faid Lord Davers, forbear: You ought not to introduce two different Conversations

into different Companies.

I think, truly, faid Mr. B. you should take the Dean's Hint, my good Friends; else you'll be less

polite than personal.

Well, but, Gentlemen, faid Lady Arthur, fince you feem to have been so hard put to it, as fingle Men, what's to be done with the marry'd Man who ruins an innocent Body? What Punishment, Lady Towers, shall we find out for such an one? and what Reparation to the Injur'd? This, it seems, was faid with a particular View to the Earl, on a late scandalous Occasion: But I knew it not till afterwards.

As to the Punishment of the Gentleman, reply'd Lady Towers, where the Law has not provided for it, it must be left, I believe to his Conscience. It will then one Day be heavy enough. But as to the Reparation to he Woman, so far as it can be made, it will be determinable as the unhappy Person, may or may not know, that her Seducer is a marry'd Man; If she knows he is, I think she neither deserves Redress nor Pity, tho' it alleviates not his Guilt. But if the Case be otherwise, and she had no means of informing herself, that he was marry'd, and he promised to make her his Wise, to be sure, tho' she cannot be acquitted, he deserves the severest Punishment that can be inflicted. What say you, Mrs. B.?

If I must speak my Mind, reply'd I, I think, that since Custom, as the Earl said just now, exacts so little Regard to Virtue from Men, and so much from Women, and since the Designs of the former upon the latter are so stagrantly avow'd and known, the poor Creature, who suffers herself to be seduced, either by a single or marry'd Man, with Promises, or with

we, has nothing to do, but to sequester herself from the World, and devote the Remainder of her Days to Penitence and Obscurity. As to the Gentleman, added I, he must, I doubt, be lest to his Conscience, as you say, Lady Trivers, which he will one Day

have enough to do to pacify.

Every young Lady has not your angelic Perfection, Madam, faid Mr. Dormer. And there are Cafes in which the Fair Sex deferve Compassion, ours Execution Love may insensibly steal upon a soft Heart: When once admitted, the Oaths, Vows, and Protestations of the favour'd Object, who perhaps, on all Occasions, declaims against the Deceivers of his Sex, confirm her good Opinion of him, till, having full'd asleep her Vigilance, in an unguarded Hour he takes Advantage of her unsuspecting Innocease. Is not such a poor Creature to be pity'd? And what Punishment does not such a Seducer deserve?

You have put, Sir, faid I, a moving Cafe, and in a generous Manner. What, indeed, does not

fuch a Deceiver deserve?

19

1

if

1-

d

ie

21

at

10

111

OIL

the

ier

th-

ui,

And the more, faid Mrs. Chapman, as the most

innocent Heart is generally the most credulous.

Very true, faid the Counters; for fach are one as would do no Harm to others, feldom futpects any from others: And her Loc is very unequally carl; admir'd for that very Innocence, which tempts fome brutal Ravager to ruin it.

Yet, what is that Virtue, faid the Dean, which

cannot frand the Test?

But, faid Lady Towers, very fatirically, Whither, Ladies, are we got? We are upon the Subject of Virtue and Honour. Let us take of footething, in which the Gentleman can join with us. This is such an one, you see, that none but the Dean and Mr. Dormer can discourse upon.

Let us then, retorted Mr. Martin, to be even with one Lady at least, find a Subject that will be

new to her. And that is CHARITY.

Vol. III. L Does

Does what I faid concern Mr. Martin more than any other Gentleman, returned Lady Towers, that he

is disposed to take Offence at it?

You must pardon me, Lady Towers, said Mr. B. but I think a Lady should never make a Motion to wave such Subjects as those of Virtue and Honour; and less still, in Company, where there is so much Occasion, as she seems to think, for enforcing them.

I defire not to wave the Subject, I'll affure you, replied she. And if Sir, you think, it may do good we will continue it, for the sakes of all you, Gentemen ('ooking round her archly) who are of Opinion you may be benefited by it.

We are going into Perfonals again, Gentlemen

and Ladies, faid the Earl.

And that won't bear, my Lord, you feem to

think? retorted Lady Davers.

A Health to the King and Royal Family brought on Public Affairs, and Politics; and the Ladies withdrawing to Coffee and Tea, I have no more to tay as to this Conversation, having repeated all that I remember was said to any Purpose; for such large Companies, you know, my Dear, don't always produce the most agreeable and edifying Talk. But this I was the more willing to recite, because I thought the Character of some of our Neighbours would be thereby made more familiar to you, if ever I should have the Happiness to see you in these Parts.

I will only add, that Miss L. the Dean's Daughter, is a very modest and agreeable young Lady, and a perfect Mistress of Music; in which the Dean takes great Delight also, and is a fine Judge of it. The Gentlemen coming in, to partake of our Cossee and Conversation, as they said, obtain'd of Miss to play several Tunes on the Harpsichord; and would have the play too. But really, Miss L so very much surpassed me, that had I regarded my Reputation for playing, above the Desire I had (as I said, and truly

faid) to fatisfy the good Company, I ought not to have pretended to touch a Key after fuch a Mistress of it. Miss has no Voice, which is great pity; and at the Request of every one, I sung to her Accompanyment, twice or thrice; as did Lady Towers, whose Voice exceeds her Taste. But here, Miss, will I end my Fourth Conversation-piece.

SATURDAY Morning.

THE Counters being a little indispos'd, Lady Davers and I took an Airing this Morning in the Chariot, and had a great deal of Discourse together. Her Ladyship was pleased to express great Favour and Tenderness towards me; gave me a great deal of good Advice, as to the Care the would have me take of myself; and told me, that her Hopes, as well as her Brother's, all centered in my Welfare; and that the Way I was in made her love me better and better.

She was pleafed to tell me, how much she approv'd of the domestic Management; and to say, that she never saw such Regularity and Method in any Kamily in her Life, where was the like Number of Servants: Every-one, she said, know their Duty, and did it without speaking to, in such Silence, and with so much apparent Cheertulness and Delight, without the least Hurry or Confusion, that it was her Surprise and Admiration: But kindly would have it, that I took too much Care upon me. Yet, said she, I don't see, but you are always fresh and lively, and never seem tir'd or satigu'd; and are always dress'd and casy, so that no Company find you unprepar'd, or unsit to receive them, come when they will, whether it be to Breakfast or Dinner.

1

e

r,

.1

e. he

nd.

av

11-

for ulv

DA.

I told her Ladyship, I owed all this, and most of the Conduct for which she was pleased to praise me, to her dear Brother, who at the Beginning of my

L 2 Happiness,

Happiness, gave me several Cautions * and Instructions for my Behaviour; which had always been the Rule of my Conduct ever since, and I hoped ever would be: To say nothing, added I, which yet would be very unjust, of the Assistance I receive from worthy Mrs. Fervis, who is an excellent Manager.

Good Creature, sweet Pamela, and charming Girl, were her common Words, and she was pleased to attribute to me a graceful and unaffected Ease, and would have it, that I have a natural Dignity in my Person and Behaviour, which command Love and Reverence at the same time; so that, my dear Miss Darnford, I am in danger of being as proud as any Thing. For you must believe, that her Ladyship's Approbation gives me great Pleasure; and the more, as I was asraid, before she came, I should not have come off near so well in her Opinion.

As the Chariot passed along, she took great notice of the Respects paid me by People of different Ranks, and of the Blessings bestowed upon me, by several, as we proceeded; and said, She should fare well, and be rich in good Wishes for being in my Company.

The good People, who know us, will do so, Madam, said I; but I had rather have their filent Prayers, than their audible ones; and I have caused

some of them to be told io.

What I apprehend, Madam, continued I, is that you will be more uneasy to-morrow, when at Church you'll see a good many people in the same Way. Indeed, added I, my Story, and your dear Brother's Tenderness to me, are so much talked of, that many Strangers are brought hither to see us: 'Tis the only Thing, continued I, (and so it is, Miss) that makes me desirous to go to Landon; for by the Time we return, the Novelty, I hope, will cease.

Then

Then I mentioned some Verses of Mr. Cowley, which had been laid under my Cushion in our Seat at Church, two Sundays ago, by some unknown Hand; and how uneasy they have made me. I will transcribe them, my Dear, and give you the Particulars of our Conversation on that Occasion. The Verses are these:

Thou robb'ft my Days of Bus'ness and Delights, Of Sleep thou roub'ft my Nights, An! lovely Thief, what will thou do? What! rob me of Hear'n too! Thou ex'n my Pray'rs doft Acal from me, And I, with wild Idolatry, Begin to GOD, and end them all to Thee.

No, to what Purpose should I speak, No, wretched Heart, fwell till you break. She cannot love me, if she would: And, to fay Truth, 'twere pity that she should. No, to the Grave thy Sorrows bear, As filent as they will be there: Since that lov'd Hand this mortal Wound does give. So handfomely the Thing contrive, That she may guiltless of it live: So perify, that her killing thee, May a Chance-medley, and no Murder be!

I had them in my Pocket, and read them to my Lady; who ask'd me, if her Brother had seen them? I told her. It was he that found them under the Cufluon I used to sit upon; but did not shew them to me, till I came home, and that I was fo vex'd at them, that I could not go to Church in the Afternoon.

What should you be vex'd at, my Dear? faid she; How could you help it ?-My Brother was not dif-

surb'd at them, was he?

13

L 3

No, indeed, replied I: He chid me for being so; and was pleased to make me a fine Compliment upon it; that he did not wonder, that every-body who saw me, lov'd me.—But I said, This was all that wicked Wit was good for, to inspire such Boldness in bad Hearts, which might otherwise not dare to

let Pen to Paper to affront any one

But pray, Madam, added I, don't own I have told you of them, left the least Shadow of a Thought should arife, that I was prompted by some vile, seems Vanity, to tell your Ladyship of them: When, I am have, they have vexed me more than enough. I or is it not a sad Thing, that the Church should be protected by such Actions, and such Thoughts,

as empht not to be brought into it?

than, of one with impure Notions! It gives me the less Optmon of mylelf, that I should be so much as thought of as the Object of any wicked Body's Wishes. I have called myself to account upon it, whether any Levity in my Looks, my Dress, my Appearance, could embolden such an affrontive Insolute. And I have thought upon this Occasion better of Insia Casjar's Delicacy, than I did, when I read of it, who, upon an attempt made on his Wise, to which, however, it does not appear she gave the least Encouragement, said, to those who pleaded for her against the Divorce he was resolved upon, That the Wise of Casiar ought not to be suspected.

Indeed, Madam, continued I, it would extremely flock me, but to know, that any wicked Heart had conceived a Defign upon me; Upon me, give me leave to repeat, whose only Glory and Merit is, that I have had the Grace to withstand the greatest of Trials and Temptations, from a Gentleman more worthy to be beloved, both for Person and Mind,

than any Man in England.

Your Observation, my Dear, is truly delicate, and such as becomes your Mind and Character. And I really think, if any Lady in the World is secure from vile Attempts, it must be you; not only from your Story so well known, and the Love you bear to your Man, and his Merit to you, but from the Prudence, and natural Dignity, I will say, of your Behaviour, which, tho' easy and cheerful, is what would strike dead the Hope of any Presumptuous Libertine, the Moment he sees you.

How can I enough, return'd I, and kissed her Hani, acknowledge your Ladyship's polite Goodness in this Compliment! But, my Lady, you see by the very Instance I have mentioned, that a Liberty is taken, which I cannot think of without Pain.

Tis fuch a Liberty, replied my Lady, as fliews more D pair than Hope, and is a Confirmation of my Sentiments on the Prudence and Dignity which not only I, but every-body attributes to you.

Kind, kind, Lady Davers! faid I, again preffing her Hand with my Lips. But, I think, I will turn my Quarrel, fince I know not, and hope I never shall, the vile Transcriber, upon the Author of the Verses; for had they not been written, I should not have been thus insulted, perhaps.

n

n

15

e

d

17.

·ly

ad

me

hat

ct

ore

ind,

our

Cowley, replied my Lady, is my favourite Poet. He has a beautiful Imagination, a vast deal of brilliant Wit, and a Chastity too in most of his Pieces, that hardly any of the Tribe can boast.

I once liked him better too, faid I, than I have done fince this; for he was one of the Poets that my Lady would permit me to read fometimes; and his Pieces in Praise of the Country life, and those charming Lines against Ambition, used to delight me much:

If e'er Ambition should my Fancy cheat With any Wish so mean, as to be great, Continue, Heav'n, still from me to remove, The humble Blessings of the Life I love!

I have

I have taken notice of these Lines often, said my Lady, and been pleased with them. But I think you have no Reason to be out of Conceit with Concey, for the ill Use made of his Verses. He but too naturally describes the Influence of Love; which frequently interferes with our best Duties. And there is something very natural, and easy, and witty, in the first Lines: and shews that the Poet laments the too engaging Impressions which Love made upon his Mind, even on the most solemn Occasions.—What?

The me of Heav'n too!—A bad Heart Pamela, could not have so lamented, or so written.

Ah! but Madam, returned I, I have feen in your dear Brother's Collection of Manuscripts, a Poem in which this very Point, nice as it is, is touched with

much greater Propriety.

Can you repeat it, my Dear?

The Lines I mean, I can. Your Ladyship must know it was upon a Quarrel between a beloved Couple, where the Gentleman had been wild, and the Lady's ill-natured Uncle, who wanted to break the Match, (altho' it was designed by her deceased Parents) had somented it, so that the would not look upon her Lover, nor see him, nor receive a Letter of Excuse from him, tho' they were betrothed, and the lov'd him dearly. This oblig'd him to throw himself in her Way at Church, and thus he writes:

But, O! forgive me, Heav'n, if oft my Fair Robs thee of my Devoir, difturbs my Pray'r, Confound's my best Resolves, and makes me prove, That she's too much a Rival in thy Love.

These now, Madam, continued I, are the Lines I admire.

But better Thoughts my happier Hopes suggest, When once this stormy Doubt's expell'd my Breast; When once this agitated Flame shall turn, To steadier Heat, and more intensely burn,

My

My dear Maria then, thought I, will join, And we, one Heart, one Soul, shall all be THINE!

Ay, Panela, these are very pretty Lines. But you must not think ill of my Favourite Cowley, however; for I say, with a Gentleman, whose Judgment, and good Heart, have hardly any Equal, That the Cowley was going out of Fashion with some, yet he should always suspect the Head, or the Heart, of him or her, who could not taste, and delight in, his Beauties.

The Words,

She cannot love me, if she would, And, to say Truth, 'twere pity that she should;

Shew the Goodness of the Poet's Heart; and even, that the Transcriber himself, be he who he will, had not the worst, that he could fingle out these; when, if he would be shining with borrow'd Rays, he might have chosen a much worse Poet to follow.

O Madam, ! replied I, fay not one Word in behalf of the wicked Transcriber. For a Wretch to entertain the Shadow of a Wish for a marry'd Person is a Degree of Impurity that ought not to be excus'd: But to commit fuch Thoughts to writing, to put that Writing under the Seat of the married Perion at Church, where her Heart should be engaged wholly in her first Duties; where too it might be more likely to be feen by the Pew-keepers than her, and fo be spread over the whole Parish, to the Propagation of bad Ideas, whenever I appeared; and, moreover, might come to the Hands of one's Husband, who from his own free Life formerly, and high Paffions, as far as the Transcriber knew, might be uncasy at, and angry with, the innocent Occasion of the Infult. -Besides the Apprehension it must give one, that the Man who could take this vile Step might proceed to greater Lengths, which my bufy Fears could improve to Duelling and Murder-Then the ConMind from my first Regards, when any-one looked at me wistfully, that he might be the Transcriber! which must always give me Consustion of Thought.—Dearest Madam, can one forbear being vex'd, when all these Imaginations dart in upon a Mind apprehensive as mine? Indeed this Action has given me great Uneasiness at Times, ever since, and I cannot help it.

I am pleased with your Delicacy, my Dear, as I said before—You can never err, while thus watchful over your Conduct: and I own you have the more Reason for it, as you have married a mere Julius Casar, an open-ey'd Rake, that was her Word, who would, on the least Surmises, tho' ever so causeless on your Part, have all his Passions up in Arms, in Apprehension of Liberties that might be offer'd

like those he has not scrupled to take.

O but, Madam, faid I, your dear Brother has given me great Satisfaction in one Point; for you must think I should not love him as I ought, if I had not a Concern for his suture Happiness, as well as for his present; and that is, he has assured me, that in all the Liberties he has taken, he never attempted a married Lady, but always abhorr'd the

Thought of fo great an Evil.

Tis pity, faid her Ladyship, that a Man who could conquer his Passions so far, could not subdue them entirely. This shews it was in his own Power to do so; and encreases his Crime: And what a Wretch is he, who scrupling, under Pretence of Conscience or Honour, to attempt Ladies within the Pale, boggles not to ruin a poor Creature within the Pale, boggles not to ruin a poor Creature without; altho' he knows, he thereby, most probably, for ever, deprives her of that Protection, by preventing her Marriage, which, even among such Rakes as himself is deemed, he owns, inviolable, and so casts the poor Creature headlong into the Jaws of Perdition? Ah!

Ah! Madam, replied I, this was the very Inference I made upon the Occasion.

And what could he fay?

He faid, my Inference was just; but call'd me pretty Preacher;—and once having cautioned me * not to be over-serious to him, so as to cast a Gloom as he said, over our innocent Enjoyments, I never dare to urge matters farther, when he calls me by that Name.

Well, faid my Lady, thou'rt an admirable Girl! God's Goodness was great to our Family, when it

gave thee to it.

No wonder, continued her Ladyship, as my Brother says, every-body that sees you, and has heard your Character, loves you. And this is some Excuse for the inconsiderate Folly even of this unknown Transcriber.

Ah! Madam, replied I, but is it not a fad Thing, that People, if they mult take upon them to like one's Behaviour in general, should have the worst, instead of the best Thoughts upon it? If I were as good as I sught to be, and as some think me, must they wish to make me bad for that Reason? And so to destroy the Cause of that Pleasure which they pretend to take in seeing a Body set a good Example? For what, my dear Lady, could a Wretch mean, even by the Words your Ladyship thinks most innocent?

She cannot love me, if she would;

And, to say Truth—(as if this Truth were extorted rather by his Fears than his Wishes)

——'twere pity that she should.

But then, if this be the Case, and that he would bear his Sorrows, as the Poet calls them, to the Grave, should he not keep them to himself?

Make that very Mind their Grave, which gave them

L 6 their

their Birth? If the bold Creature, whoever he be, had not thought this might be a Hint that might fome-how be improved, and a vile Foundation for fome viler Superstructure, would he have transcribed them, and caused them to be placed where they were found!—Then, in my humble Opinion, the Thought that is contained in these Lines:

Since that lov'd Hand this mortal Wound does give,
So handsomely the Thing contrive,
That she may guiltless of it live!
So perish, that her killing thee
May a Chance-medley, and no Murder be;

is rather a Conceit or Prettiness, that won't bear Examination, than that true Wit in which this fine Poet excels :- For if the cannot love him it the would, and if it were pity that the should love him, this implies fhe was a Lady under previous Obligation, whether Marriage or Betrothment is the fame Thing to him: Then, need the Thing to be so handsomely contrived, need any Pains be taken, (if her Repulse had killed, as poetical Licence makes him fay, this Invader of another's Right) to bring it in Chance-medley;fince no Jury could have brought it in Murder; except that Sort of Murder which is called Felo de le : You know, my Lady, what a Scholar your Brother has made me: So that I prefume to think, the Poet himself is not so blameless in this, as he has taken care to be in most of his Pieces. And permit me to make one Observation, my good Lady, That if the chaftest Writers (supposing Cowley meant ever so well) may have their Works, and their Thoughts, turn'd to be Panders and Promoters of the Wickedness of coarse Minds, whose groffer Ideas could not be clothed in a Dress fit to appear in decent Company, without their Assistance, how careful ought a good Author to be, whose Works are likely to live to the End of Time, how he propagates the worst of

of Mischiefs to such a Duration, when he himself is dead and gone, and incapable of antidoting the Poi-

fon he has fpread?

Her Ladyship was pleased to kiss me as we fat. My charming Pamela, my more than Sister, (did she say)—Yes, she did say so! and made my Eyes over-show with Joy to hear the sweet Epithet! How your Conversation charms me!—I charge you, when you get to Town, let me have your Remarks on the Diversions you will be carried to by my Brother. Now I know what to expect from you, and you know how acceptable every thing will be to me that comes from you. I promise great Pleasure, as well to myself as to my worthy Friends, particularly to Lady Betty,

in your unrestrained free Correspondence.

Indeed, Pamela, I must bring you acquainted with Lady Betty: She is one of the Worthies of our Sex, aud has a fine Understanding .- I'm sure you'll like her. - But (for the World fay it not to my Brother, nor let Lady Betty know I tell you fo, if ever you should be acquainted—) I had carry'd the Matter so far by my officious Zeal to have my Brother marry'd to fo fine a Lady, not doubting his joyful Approbation, that it was no small Disappointment to her, I can tell you, when he marry'd you: And this is the best Excuse I can make for my furious Behaviour to you at the Hall. For tho' I am naturally very hasty and paffionate, yet then I was almost mad-Indeed my Difappointment had given me fo much Indignation both against you and Him, that it is well I did not do some violent thing by you. * I believe you did feel the Weight of my Hand:—But what was that? -- 'Twas well I did not kill you dead-thefe were her Ladyship's Words-For how could I think the wild Libertine capable of being engag'd by

^{*} Compare this Part of the Conversation with Lady Davers's Behaviour to Pamela, Vol. 11. p. 222, to 250.

fuch noble Motives, or Thee what thou art?—So this will account to thee a little for my Violence then.

Your Ladyship, said I, all these things consider'd, had but too much Reason to be angry at your dear Brother's Proceedings, so well as you always lov'd him, so high a Concern as you always had to promote his Honour and Interest, and so far as you had

gone with Lady Betty.

I tell thee, Pamela, faid she, that the old Story of Eleanor and Rosamond ran in my Head all the Way of my Journey, and I almost wish'd for a Potion to force down thy Throat: And when I came, and found thy lewd Paramour absent, (for little did I think thou wast marry'd to him, tho' I expected thou wouldst endeavour to perfuade me to believe it) apprehending that his Intrigue with thee would effectually frustrate my Hopes as to Lady Betty and him; Now, thought I, all happens as I wish! - Now will I confront this brazen Girl!—Now will I try her Innocence, as I please, by offering to take her with me out of his Hands; if the refuses, take that Refufal for a Demonstration of her Guilt; and then, thought I, I will make the Creature provoke me, in the Presence of my Nephew and my Woman (and I hoped to have got that Woman Fetekes to testify for me too;) and I cannot tell what I might have done, if thou hadft not got out of the Window as thou didit, especially after thou hadft told me thou wast as much marry'd as I was, and hadft shewn me his tender Letter to thee, which had a quite different Effect upon me than thou hadft hoped for. But if I had committed any Act of Violence, what Remorfe should I have had, when I came to reflect, and had known what an Excellence I had injur'd! Thank God thou didft escape me! Thank God thou didft! And then her Ladyship folded her Arms about me, and kissed me.

This was a fad Story, you'll fay, my Dear: And I wonder what her Ladyship's Passion would have

made her do! Surely she would not have killed me dead indeed! surely she would not?—Let it not however, Miss Darnford, nor you, my dear Father and Mother, when you see it,—go out of your own Hands, nor be read, for my Lady Davers's sake, to any body else—No, not to your own Mamma.—It made me tremble a little, even at this Distance, to think what a sad thing Passion is, when way is given to its ungovernable Tumults, and how it deforms and debases the noblest Minds.

We returned from this agreeable Airing but just time enough to dress before Dinner, and then I attended my Lady, and we went together into the Countes's Apartment, where I received abundance of Compliments from both. As this brief Conversation will give you some Notion of that Management and Occonomy for which they heaped upon me their kind Praises, I will recite to you what passed in it, and hope you will not think me too vain; and the less, because what I underwent formerly from my Lady's Indignation, half intitles me to be

Lady Davers faid, Your Ladyship must excuse us, that we have lost so much of your Company; but here, this sweet Girl has entertain'd me in such a Manner, that I could have staid out with her all Day; and several times did I bid the Coachman prolong his Circuit.

proud of her present Kindness and Favour.

My good Lady Davers, Madam, faid I, has given me inexprefible Pleafure, and has been all Condescention and Favour, and made me as proud as proud can be.

You, my dear Mrs. B. faid she, may have given great Pleasure to Lady Davers; for it cannot be otherwise—But I have no great Notion of her Ladyship's Condescension, as you call it, (pardon me, Madam, said she to her, similing) when she cannot raise her Style above the Word Girl, coming off from a Tour you have made so delightful to her.

I protest

I protest to you, my Lady C. reply'd her Ladyship, with great Goodness, that that Word, which once indeed I used thro' Pride, as you'll call it, I now use for a very different Reason. I begin to doubt, whether to call her Sister, is not more Honour to myself than to her; and to this Hour am not quite convinc'd. When I am, I will call her so with Pleasure.

I was quite overcome with this fine Compliment, but could not answer a Word: And the Countess said, I could have spared you longer, had not the Time of Day compell'd your Return. For I have been very agreeably entertain'd, as well as you, altho' but with the Talk of your Woman and mine. For here they have been giving me such an Account of Mrs. B.'s Occonomy, and Family Management, as has highly delighted me. I never knew the like; and in so young a Lady too. We shall have strange Reformations to make in our Families, Lady Davers, when we go home, were we to follow so good an Example.

Why, my dear Mrs. B. continued her Ladyship, you out-do all your Neighbours. And indeed I am glad I live so far from you:—For were I to try to imitate you, it would still be but Imitation, and

you'd have the Honour of it.

Yet you hear, and you see by Yesterday's Converfation, said Lady Davers, how much her best Neighbours of both Sexes admire her. They all yield to

her the Palm, unenvying.

Then, my good Ladies, faid I, it is a Sign, I have most excellent Neighbours, full of Generosity, and willing to encourage a young Person in doing right things: So it makes, considering what I was, more for their Honour than my own. For what Censures should not such a one as I deserve, who have not been educated to fill up my Time like Ladies of Condition, were I not to employ myself as I do? I, who

who have so little other Merit, and who brought no Fortune at all?

Come, come, Pamela, none of your self-denying Ordinances—that was Lady Davers's Word—You must know something of your own Excellence:—If you do not, I'll tell it you, because there is no Fear you will be proud or vain upon it. I don't see then, that there is the Lady in your Neighbourhood, or any Neighbourhood, that behaves with more Decorum, or better keeps up the Port of a Lady, than you do. How you manage it, I can't tell; but you do as much by a Look, and a pleasant one too, that's the Rarity! as I do by high Words, and passionate Exclamations: I have often nothing but Blunder upon Blunder, as if the Wretches were in a Confederacy to try my Patience.

Perhaps, Madam, faid I, the Awe they have of your Ladyship, because of your high Qualities, makes them commit Blunders; for I myself have always been more afraid of appearing before your Ladyship, when you have visited your honour'd Mother, than of any body else, and have been the more sensibly aukward through that very awful Respect.

Psha, psha, Pamela, that is not it: 'Tis all in yourself. I used to think my Mamma, and my Brother too, had as aukward Servants as I ever saw any where—except Mrs. Jervis.—Well enough for a Bachelor, indeed!—But, here!—thou hast not parted with one Servant—Hast thou?

No, Madam.

How! faid the Countess; what Excellence is here! All of them, pardon me, Mrs. B. your Fellow-servants, as one may say, and all of them so respectful, so watchful of your Eye; and you, at the same Time, so gentle to them, so easy, so chearful!

Don't you think me, my Dear, insufferably vain?
But 'tis what they were pleased to say. 'Twas their
Goodness

Goodness to me, and shew'd how much they can excel in generous Politeness. So I will proceed.

Why this, continued the Counters, must be bern Dignity,—born Discretion.—Education cannot give

it:—If it could, why should not we have it?

The Ladies faid many more kind things of me then; and after Dinner they mentioned all over again, with Additions, before my best Friend, who was kindly delighted with the Encomiums given me by two Ladies of fuch diffinguishing Judgment in all other Cases. They told him, how much they admired my Family Management: Then would have it, that my Genius was univerfal, for the Employments and Accomplishments of my Sex, whether they confider'd it, they were pleafed to fay, as employ'd in Penmanthip, in Needle-work, in paying or receiving Vifits, in Mufick, and I can't tell how many other Qualifications, which their Goodness made them attribute to me, over and above the Family Management; faying, that I had an Understanding which comprehended every thing, and an Eye that penetrated into the very Bottom of Matters in a Moment, and never was at a loss for the Should be, the Why or Wherefore, and the How; these were their comprehensive Words-That I did every thing with Celerity, clearing all as I went, and left nothing, that was their Observation, to recur or come over again, that could be dispatched at once: By which Means they faid, every Hand was clear to undertake a new Work, as well as my own Head to direct it; and there was no Hurry nor Confusion; but every coming Hour was fresh and ready, and unincumber'd (fo they faid), for its new Employment; and to this they attributed that Ease and Pleasure with which every thing was performed, and that I could do, and cause to be done, so much Bufinels, without Hurry either to myself or Servants.

These things, they would have it, they observed in part themselves, and in part were beholden for to the

Observations.

Observations of their Women, who looked, they said, so narrowly into every Part of the Management, as if they were Spies upon it; but were such suithful ones, that it was like a good Cause brought to a strict Scrutiny, the brighter and fairer for it.

Thus, my dear Miss Darnford, did their Lady-ships praise me for what I sught to be; and I will endeavour to improve more and more by their kind Admonitions, which come clothed in the agreeable and flattering Shape of Praise; the noblest Incitement to the doing of one's Duty.

Judge you how pleafing this was to my best Beloved, who found, in their kind Approbation, such a Justification of his own Conduct, as could not fail of being pleafing to him, especially as Lady

Davers was one of the kind Praifers.

t

S

C

S.

11,

as

n

1-Y,

nnd

nd

u-

in

he

me

Lord Davers was to highly delighted, that he rofe once, begging his Brother's Excuse to falute me, and remained franding over my Chair, with a Pleafure in his Looks that cannot be expressed, now-andthen lifting up his Hands, and his good-natur'd Eye gliftening with Joy, which a pier-glass gave me the Opportunity of feeing, as fometimes I stole a bathful Glance towards it, not knowing how or which way to look. Even Mr. H. seem'd to be touch'd very tenfibly; and recollecting his Behaviour to me at the Hall, he once cry'd out, What a fad Whelp was I, to behave as I formerly did, to fo much Excellence !- Not, Mr. B. that I was any thing uncivil, neither; -but in unworthy Sneers, and Nonfenfe—You know me well enough.——P-x on me for a Jackanapes-You call'd me, * Tinfel'd Toy, the', Madain, don't you remember that? and faid Twenty or Thirty Leans bence, when I was at Age, you'd give me an Aufwer .- Lead! I shall never forget your Looks, nor your Words neither !- They were d-n'd severe Speeches, were they not, Sir? Oyou

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 237.

O you see, Mr. H. reply'd my dear Mr. B, Pamela is not quite persect.—We must not provoke her; for she'll call us both so, perhaps; for I wear a lac'd coat, sometimes, as well as you.

Nav, faith, I can't be angry, faid he, I deferv'd

it richly, that I did, had it been worfe.

Thy filly Tongue, faid my Lady, runs on with-

out Fear or Wit. What's past is past.

Why, i'faith, Madam, I was plaguily wrong; and I faid nothing of any body but myfelf:—And have been ready to hang myfelf fince, as often as I have thought of my Nonfense.

My Nephew, faid my Lord, must bring in Hanging, or the Gallows, in every Speech he makes, or

it will not be he.

Mr. B. finiling, faid, with Severity enough in his Meaning, as I could see by the Turn of his Countc-nance—Mr. H. knows, that his Birth and Family intitle him more to the Block, than the Rope, or he would not make so free with the latter.

Good! very good, by Jupiter! faid Mr. H. laughing. The Countess smil'd. Lady Davers shook her Head at her Brother, and said to her Nephew, Thou'rt

a good-natur'd foolish Fellow, that thou art.

For what, Madam? Why the Word foolish, Aunt? What have I faid now?

Nothing to any Purpose, indeed, said she; when

2

n

31

15

h

thou doft, I'll write it down.

Then, Madam, faid he, have your Pen and Ink always about you, when I'm present.—The Devil's in't if you won't put that down, to begin with!

This made every one laugh. What a happy thing is it, thought I, that Good-nature generally accompanies this Character; else, how would fome People be supportable?

But here I'll break off. 'Tis time, you'll fay. but you know to whom I write, as well as to yourfelf, and and they'll be pleafed with all my filly Scribble.—So excuse one Part for that, and another for Friend-ship's sake, and then I shall be wholly excusable to you.

Now the Trifler again resumes her Pen. I am in some Pain, Miss, for To-morrow, because of the Rules we observe of late in our Family on Sundays, and of going thro' a Croud to Church; which will afford new Scenes to our noble Visitors, either for Censure or otherwise: But I will sooner be censured for doing what I think my Duty, than for the Want of it; and so will omit nothing that we have been accustomed to do.

I hope I shall not be thought ridiculous, or as one who aims at Works of Supererogation, for what I think is very short of my Duty.—Some Order, surely, becomes the Heads of Families; and besides, it would be discrediting one's own Practice, if one did not appear at one Time what one does at another. For that which is a Reason for discontinuing a Practice for some Company, would seem to be a Reason for laying it aside for ever, especially in a Family visiting and visited as ours.

And I remember well a Hint given me by my dearest Friend once on another Subject*, That it is in every one's Power to prescribe Rules to himself, after a while, and Persons see what is one's Way, and that one is not to be put out of it.

But my only Doubt is, that to Ladies, who have not been accustomed perhaps to the necessary Strictness, I should make myself censurable, as if I aim'd at too much Perfection: For, however one's Duty is one's Duty, and ought not to be dispensed with; yet when a Person, who uses to be remiss, sees so hard a Task before them, and so many great Points to

r

-

y

e

1-

er

rt

. ?

en

nk

il's

ng

ac-

me

felt, and

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 209.

get over, all to be no more than tolerably regular, it is rather apt to frighten and difcourage, than to allure; and one must proceed, as I have read Soldiers do in a difficult Siege, Inch by Inch, and be more studious to intrench and fortify themselves as they go on gaining upon the Enemy, than by rushing all at once upon an Attack of the Place, be repulsed, and perhaps obliged with great Loss to abandon a hopeful Enterprize.

And permit me to add, that, young as I am, I have often observed, that over-great Strictnesses all at once injoin'd and insisted upon, are not fit for a beginning Reformation, but for stronger Christians only; and therefore generally do more Harm than

Good, in fuch a Circumstance.

What a miserable Creature am I, said a neighbouring Widow Gentlewoman, (whom I visited in her Illness, at her own Desire, tho' a Stranger to me but by Name) if all the good you do, and the strict Life you live, is no more than absolutely ne-

ceffary to Salvation!

I saw the poor Gentlewoman, thro' Illness and low Spirits, was ready to defpond, and, to comfort her, I faid, Dear Madam, don't be caft down: God Almighty gives us all a Light to walk by in these our dark Paths; and 'tis my humble Opinion, He will judge us according to the unforced and unbiaffed Use we make of that Light. I think it my Duty to do feveral Things, which, perhaps, the Circumstances of others will not permit them to do, or which they, on ferious and difinterested Reslection, may not think absolutely necessary to be done: In each Case our Judgments are a Law to each; and I ought no more to excuse myself from doing such Parts as I think my Duty, than you to condemn yourfelf for not doing what does not appear to you fo strictly necessary: And befides, Madam, you may do as much Good one

W211

way, as I another, and fo both may be equally use-

ful in the general System of Providence.

ŝ

1

11

0

e

-

16.

T,

1-

UI

ill

10

do

EUS.

er,

ink

our

Orc

DIT

HILL

\ind

one

V211

But shall I not be too grave, my dear Friend?— Excuse me, for this is Saturday Night; and as it was a very good Method which the ingenious Authors of the Spectators took, generally to treat their more serious Subjects on this Day; so I think one should, when one can, consider it as the preparative Eve to a still better.

SUNDAY.

OW, my Dear, by what I have already written, it is become in a manner necessary to acquaint you briefly with the Method my dear Mr. B. not only permits, but encourages me to take in the Family he leaves to my Care, as to the Sunday Duty.

The worthy Dean, at my Request, and by my Beloved's Permission, recommended to me, as a Sort of Family Chaplain, for Sundays, a young Gentleman of great Sobriety and Piety, and sound Principles, who having but lately taken Orders, has at present no other Provision. And this Gentleman comes, and reads Prayers to us about Seven in the Morning, in the lesser Hall, as we call it, a retired Apartment, next the little Garden; for we have no Chapel with us here, as in your Neighbourhood: And this generally, with some sound Exhortation, or Meditation out of some good Book, which the young Gentleman is so kind as to let me choose now-and-then, when I please, takes up little more than half an Hour.

We have a great Number of Servants of both Sexes; and myfelf, my good Mrs. Jervis, and my Polly Barlow, are generally in a little Clofet, which, when we open the Door, is but just a Separation, and

that's all, from the Hall.

Mr. Adams (for that is our young Clergyman's Name) has a Desk, at which sometimes Mr. Jona-than

than makes up his running Accounts to Mr. Lonman, who is very scrupulous of admitting any body to the Use of his Office, because of the Writing in his Custody, and the Order he values himself upon

having every thing in.

About feven in the Evening the young Gentleman comes again, and I generally, let me have what Company I will, find time to retire for about another Half-hour; and my dear Mr. B. connives at, and excufes my Absence, if enquir'd after; tho' for so short a time, I am seldom miss'd.

To the young Gentleman I shall present, every Quarter, Five Guineas, and Mr. B. presses him to accept of a Place at his Table, at his Pleasure: But, as we have generally a good deal of Company, his Modesty makes him decline it, especially at those

times.

Mr. Longman is so kind as to join with us very often in our Sunday Office, and Mr. Colbrand seldom misses; and they tell Mrs. Jervis, that they cannot express the Pleasure they have to meet me there; and the Edification they receive, as they are so kind to say, from my Example; and from the cheerful Temper I am always in, which does 'em good to looe upon me: And they will have it, that I do Credit to Religion. But if they do but think so, it must have been of Service to me in the Order I have now established, as I hope; and that thro' less Difficulties than I expected to meet with, especially from the * Cookmaid; but she says, she comes with double Delight to have the Opportunity to see her blessed Lady, as it seems she calls me at every Word.

My best Beloved dispenses as much as he can with the Servants, for the Evening Part, if he has Company; or will be attended only by John or Abraham, perhaps, by Turns; and sometimes looks upon his

Watch,

^{*} See Vol. I. p. 126. Vol. II. p. 346.

Watch, and fays, 'Tis near Seven; and if he fays fo, they take it for a Hint they may be dispens'd with for half an Hour; and this Countenance which he gives me, has not contributed a little to make the Matter easy and delightful to me, and to every one.

I am fure, were only Policy to be confidered, this Method must be laudable; for fince I begun it, there is not a more diligent, a more fober, nor more courteous Set of Servants in any Family in a great Way: We have no Broils, no hard Words, no Revilings, no Commandings nor Complainings; and Mrs. Fervis's Government is made so easy, as she fays, that the need not speak twice; and all the Language of the Servants is, Pray, John, or, Pray, Jane, do so or so; and they say, Their Master's

Service is a Heaven upon Earth.

When I part from them, on the breaking up of our Assembly, they generally make a little Row on each Side of the Hall-door; and when I have made my Compliments, and paid my Thanks to Mr. Adams, one whilpers, as I go out, God bless you, Madam! and to fays another, and another, and indeed every one; and bow and curt'fy with fuch Pleafure in their honest Countenances as greatly delights me: And I fay, (if it to happens) So, my good Friends! -- am glad to see you -- Not one absent! or but one ----as it falls out——This is very obliging, I cry: and thus I shew them, that I take notice, if anybody be not there. And back again I go to pay my Duty to my Earthly Benefactor; and he is pleased to fay fometimes, that I come to him with fuch a Radiance in my Countenance, as gives him double Fleafure to behold me; and often he tells me afterwards, that but for appearing too fond before Comany, he could meet me as I enter, with Embraces as pure as my own Heart.

t

1

1

0

V

10

le

u

th

-

17:59

115 119

I hope in time, I shall prevail upon the dear Man to give me his Company.—But, thank God, I am enabled to go thus far already !- I will leave the reft to his Providence. For I have a Point very delicate to touch upon in this Particular; and I must take care, not to lose the Ground I have gained, by too precipitately pushing at too much at once. my Comfort, that next to being uniform himfelf, is that Permiffion and Encouragement he gives me, to be fo, and the Pleafure he takes in feeing me fo delighted-And besides, he always gives me his Company to Church. O how happy should I think myfelf, if he would be pleafed to accompany me to the Divine Office, which yet he has not done, tho' I have urg'd him as much as I durst! one Thing after another, he fays; we shall be better and better, I hope: But nobody is good all at once. But, my dear Miss Darnford, as I consider this as the Seal of all the rest, and he himself has an awful Notion of it, I shall hardly think my dear Mr. B.'s Morals fully secured till then.

Mrs. Jervis asked me on Saturday Evening, if I would be concerned to see a larger Congregation in the lesser Hall next Morning than usual? I answer'd, No, by no means. She said, Mrs. Worden, and Mrs. Lesley, (the two Ladies Women) and Mr. Sidney, my Lord Davers's Gentleman, and Mr. H.'s Servant, and the Coachmen and Footmen belonging to our noble Visitors, who are, she says, all great Admirers of our Family Management and good Order, having been told our Method, begged to join in it. I knew I should be a little dash'd at so large a Company; but the Men being orderly, for Lords Servants, and Mrs. Jervis assuring me that they were very earnest in their Request, I consented to it.

When, at the usual Time, (attended by my Pally) I went down, I found Mr. Adams there, (to whom I made

I made my first Compliments) and every-one of our own People waiting for me, Mr. Colbrand excepted, (whom Mr. H. had kept up late the Night before) together with Mrs. Worden and Mrs. Lefley, and Mr. Sydney, with the Servants of our Gueffs, who, as alto worthy Mr. Longman, and Mrs. Fervis, and Mr. Jonathan, paid me their Respects; and I faid, This is early rifing, Mrs. Lefley and Mrs. Worden; you are very kind to countenance us with your Companies in this our Family Order.—Mr. Sydney, I am glad to fee you. How do you, Mr. Longman? And looked round with Complacency on the Servants of our noble Vifitors. And then I led Mrs. Warden, and Mrs. Lefter to my little Retiring-place, and Mrs. Jeruis and my Polly followed; and throwing the Door open, Mr. Adams began fome scleet Prayers; and as the young Gentleman reads with great Emphasis and Propriety, and as if his Heart was in what he read, all the good Folks were exceedingly attentive.

After Prayers, Mr. Alams read a Meditation, from a Collection made for private Use, which I shall more particularly mention by and bye; and ending with the usual Benediction, I thank'd the worthy Gentleman, and gently chid him, in Mr. B.'s Name, for his Modesty in declining our Table; and thanking Mr. Longman, and Mrs. Worden, and Mrs. Lessey, teceived their kind Wishes, and hasten'd, blushing thro' their Praises, to my Chamber, where being alone, I pursued the Subject for an Hour, till Breakfast was ready, when I attended the Ladies, and my best Beloved, who had told them of the Verses placed

under my Cushion at Church.

2

S

t

-

11

e

re

111

de

We set out, my Lord and Lady Davers, and myfelf, and Mr. H. in our Coach; and Mr. B. and the Counters, in the Chariot, both Ladies, and the Gentlemen splendidly dress'd; but I avoided a Gitter as much as I could, that I might not seem to

11 2

wie with the two Peeresses.—Mr. B. said, Why are you not full-dressed, my Dear?—I said, I hoped he would not be displeased: If he was, I would do as he commanded. He kindly answered, As you like best, my Love. You are charming in every Dress.

The Chariot first drawing up to the Church-door, Mr. B. led the Countess into the Church. My Lord Davers did me that Honour; and Mr. H. handed his Aunt through a Croud of Gazers, many of whom, as usual, were Strangers. The neighbouring Gentlemen, and their Ladies, paid us their filent Respects; but the Thoughts of the wicked Verses, or rather, as Lady Davers will have me say, wicked Action of the Transcriber of them, made me keep behind in the Pew: But my Lady, with great Goodness, sat down by me; and whisperingly talked a good deal, between whiles, to me, with great Tenderness and Freedom in her Aspect; which I could not but take kindly, because I knew, she intended by it, to shew every-one she was pleased with me.

Among other Things she said softly, Who would wish to be a King or Queen, Pamela, if it is so easy for Virtue and Beauty (so she was pleased to say) to attract so many sincere Admirers, without any of their Grandeur?—Look round, my dear Girl, and see what a solemn Respect and mingled Delight appears in every Countenance: And pressing my Hand, Thou art a charming Creature! Such a natural Modesty, and such a becoming Dignity, in thy whole Appearance—no Wonder that every one's Lyes are upon thee, and that thou bringest to Church so many booted Gentlemen, as well as Neighbours,

to behold thee!

Afterwards she was pleased to add, taking my Hand, (and Mr. B. and the Countess heard her; for she raised her Voice to a more audible Whisper) I am proud to be in thy Company, and in this so-

lemn Place, I take thy Hand, and acknowledge with Pride, my Sifter. I looked down; and indeed here at Church, I can hardly at any Time look up; for who can bear to be gaz'd at fo?——And foftly faid, Oh! my good Lady! how much you honour me, the Place and these furrounding Eyes, can only hinder me from acknowledging as I ought.

My best Friend, with Pleasure in his Eyes, said, pressing his Hand upon both ours, as my Lady had mine in hers, you are two beloved Creatures: Both excellent in your Way, God bless you both. And

you too, my dear Brother, faid my Lady.

The Countess whispered, You should spare a-body a little! You give one, Ladies, and Mr. B. too much Pleasure all at once. Such Company, and such Behaviour, adds still more Charms to Devotion; and were I to be here a Twelvemonth, I would never miss once accompanying You to this good Place.

Mr. H. thought he must say something, and addressing himself to his noble Uncle, who could not keep his good-natur'd Eye off me, I'll be hang'd, my Lord, if I know how to behave myself!—Why this outdoes the Chapel!—I'm glad I put on my new Suit! And then he looked upon himself, as is he would support, as well as he could, his Part of the general Admiration.

But think you not, my dear Miss Darnford, and my dearest Father and Mother, that I am now at the Height of my Happiness in this Life, thus sa-

your'd by Lady Davers!

The Dean preached an excellent Sermon; but I need not have faid that. Only to have mention'd,

that he preached, was faying enough.

My Lord led me out, when Divine Service was over (and being a little tender in his Feet, from a Gouty Notice, walked very flowly). Lady Towers, and Mrs. Brooks, joined us in the Porch; and made

M 3

us their Compliments, as did Mr. Martin. Will you favour us with your Company home, my old Acquaintance, faid Mr. B. to that Gentleman? I can't, having a Gentleman my Relation to dine with me; but if it will be agreeable in the Evening, I will bring him with me to taste of your Burgundy; for we have not any such in the County. I shall be glad to see you or any Friend of yours, reply'd Mr. B.

Mr. Martin whisper'd, It is more, however, to admire your Lady, I can tell you that, than your Wine.—Get into your Coaches, Ladies, said he, with his usual Freedom; our Maiden and Widow Ladies have a fine Time of it, where-ever you come: By my Faith, they must every one of them quit this Neighbourhood, if you were to stay in it: But all the Hopes they have, are, that while you are in London, they'll have the Game in their own Hands.

Sifter, faid Lady Davers, most kindly to me, in Presence of many, who (in a respectful Manner) gather'd near us, Mr. Martin is the same Gentle-

man he used to be, I see.

Mr. Martin, Madam, faid I, smiling, has but one Fault. He is too apt to praise whom he favours, at the Expence of his absent Friends!

I am always proud of your Reproofs, Mrs. B.

reply'd he.

Ay, faid Lady Towers, that I believe. And therefore I wish, for all our Sakes, you'd take him oftner

to talk, Mrs. B.

Lady Towers, Lady Arthur, Mrs. Brooks, and Mr. Martin, all claim'd Visits from us; and Mr. B. making Excuses, that he must husband his Time, because of being obliged to go to Town soon, proposed to breakfast with Lady Towers, the next Morning, dine with Mrs. Arthur, and sup with Mrs. Brooks; and as there cannot be a more social and agreeable Neighbourhood any-where, his Proposal,

pofal, after some Difficulty, was accepted; and our usual visiting Neighbours were all to have Notice

accordingly, at each of the Places.

I saw Sir Thomas Atkyns coming towards us, and fearing to be stissed with Compliments, I said, Your Servant, Ladies, and Gentlemen! and, giving my Hand to Lord Davers, stept into the Chariot, instead of the Coach; for People that would avoid Bustle, sometimes make it. Finding my Mistake, I would have come out; but my Lord said, Indeed you shan't; and I'll step in, because I'll have you all to myself.

Lady Davers smil'd, Now, said she, (while the Coach drew up) is my Lord Davers pleased; but I see, Sister, you were tired with Part of your Com-

pany in the Coach.

'Tis well contriv'd, my Dear, said Mr. B. as long as you have not depriv'd me of this Honour; taking the Countess's Hand, and leading her into the Coach.

Will you excuse all this Impertinence, my Dear;
—I know my Father and Mother will be pleased with
it; and you will have the Goodness to bear with
me on that Account; for their kind Hearts will be
delighted to hear every minute Thing in relation to-

Lady Davers and myself.

When Mr. Martin came in the Evening, with his Friend, (who is Sir William G. a polite young Gentleman of Lincolnshire) he told us a deal of the Praises lavish'd away upon me by several genteel Strangers; one saying to his Friend, he had travel-

led twenty Miles to fee me.

My Lady Davers was praised too for her Goodness to me, and the Gracefulness of her Person; the Countess for the noble Serenity of her Aspect, and that charming Ease and Freedom which distinguish her Birth and Quality: My dear Mr. B. he said, was greatly admired too: But he would not make him M. 4. proud;

proud; for he had Superiorities enough already, that was his Word, over his Neighbours: But I can tell you, faid he, that for most of your Praises you are obliged to your Lady, and for having rewarded her Excellence as you have done: For one Gentleman, added he, said, He knew no one but you could deserve her; and he believed you did, from that Tenderness in your Behaviour to her, and from that Grandeur of Air, and Majesty of Person, that seem'd to shew you formed for her Protector, as well as Rewarder.—Get you gone to London, both of you, said he. I did not intend to tell you, Mr. B. what was said of you—

The Women of the two Ladies had acquainted their Ladyships with the Order I observed for the Day, and the devout Behaviour of the Servants. And about Seven I withdrawing as filently and as unobserved as I could, was surprised, as I was going thro' the great Hall, to be joined by both.

I shall come at all your Secrets, Pamela, said my Lady, and be able, in time, to cut you out in your own Way. I know whither you are going.

My good Ladies, faid I, pardon me for leaving

you. I will attend you in half an Hour.

No, my Dear, faid Lady Davers, the Countess and I have resolved to attend you for that Half-hour, and we will return to Company together.

Is it not descending too much, my Ladies, as to

the Company?

If it is for us, it is for you, faid the Countefs; fo we will either act up to you, or make you come down to us; and we will judge of all your Proceedings.

Every one, but Abraham, (who attended the Gentlemen) and all their Ladyships Servants, and their two Women, were there; which pleased me, however, because it shew'd, that even the Strangers, by this their second voluntary Attendance, had no ill Opinion of the Service. But they were all startled,

flartled, ours and theirs, to see the Ladies accom-

panying me.

I stept up to Mr. Adams.—I was in hopes, Sir, faid I, we should have been favour'd with your Company at our Table.

He bowed.

Well, Sir, faid I, these Ladies come now to be obliged to you for your good Offices; and you'll have no better Way of letting them return their Obligation, than to sup, tho' you would not dine with them.

Mr. Longman, said my Lady, how do you?— We are come to be Witnesses of the Family Decorum.

We have a bleffed Lady, Madam, said he: And

your Ladyship's Presence augments our Joys.

I should have said, we were not at Church in the Asternoon.—And when I do not go, we have the Evening Service read to us, as it is at Church; which Mr. Adams performed now with his usual Distinctness and Fervour.

When all was concluded, I faid, Now, my dearest Ladies, excuse me for the Sake of the Delight I take in seeing all my good Folks about me in this decent and obliging Manner.—Indeed I have no Ostenta-

tion in it, if I know my own Heart .---

The Countels and Lady Davers, delighted to fee fuch good Behaviour in every one, fat a Moment or two looking upon one-another in Silence; and then my Lady Davers took my Hand: Beloved, defervedly beloved of the kindest of Husbands, what a Bleffing art thou to this Family!

And to every Family, faid the Countels, who have the Happinels to know, and the Grace to follow, her Example! But where, faid Lady Davers, collectedft thou all this good Sense, and time Spirit

in thy Devotions?

M 5

The

The Bible, my dear Ladies, said I, is the Foundation of all: But this, and the Common Prayer Book, and the Duty of Man, our worthy Folks have every-one of them, and are so good as to employ themselves in them at all Leisure Opportunities on other Days. For which Reason, that I may diversify their Devotions, I have, with the Assistance of Mr. Adams, and by Advice of the Dean, made Extracts from several good Pieces, which we read on these Days. Mr. Adams, said my Lady Davers, will you oblige me with a Copy of my Sister's Book, at your Leisure? He readily engaged to do this; and the Countess desir'd another Copy, which he also promised.

Lady Davers then turning herself to Mrs. Jervis, How do you, good Woman? said she.—Why, you are now made ample Amends for the Love you bore

to this dear Creature formerly!

You have an Angel, and not a Woman, for your Lady, my good Mrs. Jervis, faid the Countefs.

Mrs. Jervis, folding her uplifted Hands together, O my good Lady! you know not our Happiness; no, not one half of it. We were before bles'd with Plenty, and a bountiful Indulgence, by our good Master; but our Plenty brought on Wantonness and Wranglings: But now we have Peace as well as Plenty; and Peace of Mind, my dear Lady, in doing all in our respective Powers, to shew ourselves thankful Creatures to God, and to the best of Masters and Mistresses.

Good Soul! faid I, and was forc'd to put my Handkerchief to my Eye: Your Heart is always overflowing thus with Gratitude and Praises, for

what you so well merit from us.

Mr. Longman, said my Lady, affuming a sprightly Air, although her Eye twinkled, to keep within its Lids the precious Water, that sprang from a noble and well-affected Heart, I am glad to see you here, attending your pious young Lady. ——Well might you love her, honest Man! well might you!——I did not know there was so excellent a Creature in

any Rank.

Madam, faid the other worthy Heart, unable to speak but in broken Sentences,-You don't know -indeed you don't, what a-what a-hap-happy -Family we are!-Truly, we are like unto Alexander's Soldiers, every one fit to be a General; fo well do we all know our Duties, and practife them too, let me fay. - Nay, and please your Ladyship, we all of us long, till Morning comes, thus to attend my Lady; and after that is past, we long for Evening, for the same Purpose: For the is so good to us-You cannot think how good the is !- But permit your honour'd Father's old Servant to fay one Word more, That tho' we are always pleased and joyful on these Occasions; yet we are in Transports to see our Master's noble Sister thus favouring us, with your Ladyship too, (to the Countess) and approving our young Lady's Conduct and Piety.

Bleffing on you all! faid my Lady.—Let us go, my Lady;—let us go, Sifter;—for I can stay no

longer!

As I slid by, following their Ladyships, How do you, Mr. Colbrand? faid I, softly:—I fear'd you were not well in the Morning.—He bow'd, Par-don me, Ma-dame—I vas leetel indispose, dat ish true!

Now, my dear Friend, will you forgive me all this Self-praise, as it may seem?—Yet when you know I give it you, and my dear Parents, as so many Instances of my Lady Davers's Reconciliation and Goodness to me, and as it will shew what a noble Heart that good Lady has at Bottom, when her Pride of Quality and her Passion have subsided, and her

M 6

native good Sense and Excellence taken place, I flatter myself, I may be the rather excused; and especially, as I hope to have my dear Miss Darnford's Company and Countenance one Day, in this my

delightful Sunday Employment.

I should have added, for I think a good Clergy-man cannot be too much respected, that I repeated my Request to Mr. Adams, to oblige us with his Company at Supper; but he so very earnestly begg'd to be excused, and with so much Concern of Countenance, that I thought it would be wrong to insist upon it; tho' I was sorry for it, because I am sure, as of any-thing, that Modesty is always a Sign of Merit.

We return'd to the Gentlemen as soon as Supper was ready, and as cheerful and easy, as Lady Davers observed, as if we had not been present at so solemn a Service: And this, said she, after the Gentlemen were gone, makes Religion so pleasant and delightful a Thing, that I profess I shall have a much higher Opinion of those who make it a regular and constant Part of their Employment, than ever I had. But I have seen, added her Ladyship, perhaps, such characteristic wry Faces, and such gloomy Countenances, among some of your pious Folks, in and after a solemn Office, as was enough to dishearten such an one as me, and make one think that it would be a Sin to go to Bed with a Smile upon one's Face, or without sighing and groaning.

Then, faid she, I was once, I remember, when a Girl, at the House of a very devout Man, for a Week, with his Grand-daughter, my Schoolfellow; and there were such Preachments against Vanities, and for Self-denials, that were we to have followed the good Man's Precepts, (tho' indeed not his Practice, for well did he love his Belly) half God Almighty's Creatures and Works would have

been

been useless, and Industry would have been banished the Earth.

Then added her Ladyship, have I heard the good Man confess himself guilty of such Sins, as, if true, (and by his hiding his Face with his broad brimm'd Hat, it look'd a little bad against him) he ought to have been hang'd on a Gallows fifty Feet high.

These Reflections, as I said, fell from my Lady, after the Gentlemen were gone, when the recounted to her Brother the Entertainment, as fhe was pleafed to call it, I had given her. On which she made high Encomiums, as did the Countess; and they praised also the natural Dignity which they imputed to me, faving, I had taught them a Way they never could have found out, to descend to the Company of Servants, and yet to fecure, and even augment, the Respect and Veneration of Inferiors at the same Time. And, Pamela, said my Lady, you are certainly very right, to pay fo much Regard to the young Clergyman; for that makes all he reads, and all he fays, of greater Efficacy with the Auditors, facilitates the Work you have in View to bring about, and in your own Absence (for your Monarch may not always difpense with you perhaps) strengthens his Influences, and encourages the young Gentleman beside.

MONDAY.

I AM to thank you, my dear Miss Darnford, for your kind Letter, approving of my Scribble. When you come to my Saturday's and Sunday's Accounts, I shall try your Patience. But no more of that; for as you can read them, or let them alone, I am the less concern'd, especially as they will be more indulgently received somewhere else than they may merit; so that my Labour will not be wholly lost.

I congratulate you with all my Heart, on your dismissing Mr. Murray; for, besides that some of his Qualities are not to be approved by a Lady of your Taste and Judgment, I will never give my Consent, that any Gentleman shall have the Honour of calling you his, who can so easily resign his Pre-

tenfions to you, and address your Sister.

You are extremely diverting, my dear, with your Greater and Leffer Bear Stars, and I could not help shewing your Letter to Mr. B. And what do you think the free Gentleman said upon it? I am half afraid to tell you: But do, now you are so happily disengaged, get Leave to come, and let us two contrive to be even with him for it. You are the only Lady in the World that I would join with against him.

He said, That your Characters of Mr. Murray and Miss Nanny, which he called severe, (but I won't call them so, without your Leave) look'd a little like pretty Spire, and as if you were forry the Gentleman took you at your Word.——That was what he said—Pray let us punish him for it.

Yet,

^{*} See Letter XXVIII. of this Volume.

Yet, he called you charming Lady, and faid a great deal in your Praise, and joined with me, that Mr. Murray, who was so easy to part with you, could not

poffibly deferve you.

But, Pamela, faid he, I know the Sex well enough. Miss Polly may not love Mr. Murray; yet to see her Sister address'd and complimented, and preferr'd to herself, by one whom she so lately thought it was in her own Power to choose or to refuse, is a mortifying Thing. And young Ladies cannot bear to sit by neglected, while two Lovers are playing Pugs Tricks with each other.

Then, faid he, all the Preparations to Matrimony, the Cloaths to be bought, the Visits to be paid and received, the Compliments of Friends, the busy Novelty of the Thing, the Day to be fixed, and all the little foolish Humours and Nonsense attending a concluded Courtship, when one Sister is to ingross all the Attention and Regard, the new Equipages, and so forth; these are all Subjects of Mortification to the other, though she had no great Value for the Man perhaps.

Well, but, Sir, faid I, a Lady of Miss Darnford's good Sense, and good Taste, is not to be affected by those Parades, and has well considered the Matter, no doubt: and I dare say, rejoices, rather than repines,

at missing the Gentleman.

I hope you will leave the happy Pair, for they are so, if they think themselves so, together, and Sir simon to rejoice in his accomplished Son-in-Law Elect, and give us your Company to London. For who would stay to be vex'd by that ill-natured Miss Nanny, as you own you were, at your last writing?

But I will proceed with my Journal, and the rather, as I have fomething to tell you of a Converfation, the Refult of which has done me great Honour, and given me inexpressible Delight: Of which in its Place.

We pursued Mr. B.'s Proposal, returning several Visits in one Day; for we have so polite and agreeable a Neighbourhood, that all seem to concur in a Desire to make every thing easy to one another: And, as I mentioned before, hearing Mr. B.'s Intention to set out for London, as soon as our Company should leave us, they dispensed with Formalities, being none of them studious to take things amis, and having a general good Opinion of one another's Intentions not to disoblige.

We came not home till Ten in the Evening, and then found a Letter from Sir Jacob Swynford, Uncle by the Half Blood to Mr. B. acquainting him, That hearing his Niece Lady Davers was with him, he would be here in a Day or two, (being then upon his Journey) to pay a Visit to his Nephew and Niece

at the fame time.

This Gentleman is very particularly old and humourfome; and his eldest Son being next Heir to the maternal Estate, if Mr. B. should have no Children, has been exceedingly distatisfied with his debasing himself in marrying me; and would have been better pleased had he not married at all, perhaps.

There never was any cordial Love between Mr. B.'s Father and him, nor between the Uncle, and Nephew and Niece; for his Positiveness, Roughness, and Self-interestedness too, has made him, tho' very rich, but little agreeable to the generous Tempers of his Nephew and Niece; yet when they meet, which is not above once in four or five Years, they are always very civil and obliging to him.

Lady Davers wonder'd what could bring him hither now; for he lives in Herefordshire, and seldom stirs ten Miles from home. Mr. B. said, he was sure it was not to compliment him and me on our Nuptials.

No,

o

No, rather, said my Lady, to satisfy himself if you are in a way to cut out his own Cubs. Thank God, we are, said my dearest Friend. Whenever I was strongest set against Matrimony, the only Reason I had to weigh against my Dislike to it, was, that I was unwilling to leave so large a Part of my Estate * to that Family.

My Dear, said he to me, don't be uneasy; but you'll see a Relation of mine much more disagreeable than you can imagine: But no doubt you have heard

his Character.

Ah, Pamela, faid Lady Davers, we are a Family that value ourselves upon our Ancestry; but upon my Word, Sir Jacob, and all his Line, have nothing else to boast of. And I have been often ashamed of my Relation to them.

No Family, I believe, my Lady, has every body excellent in it, reply'd I: But I doubt I shall stand

but poorly with Sir Facob.

He won't dare to affront you, my Dear, faid Mr. B. altho' he'll fay to you, and to me, and to my Sifter too, blunt and rough things. But he'll not ftay above a Day or two, and we shall not see him again for some Years to come; so we'll bear with him.

I am now, Miss, coming to the Conversation I

hinted at.

TUESDAY.

On Tuesday, Mr. Williams came to pay his Respects to his kind Patron. I had been to visit the Widow Gentlewoman I mentioned before, and on my Return, went directly to my Closet, so knew not of his being there till I came to Dinner; for Mr. B. and he were near two Hours together in Discourse in the Library.

When

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 70, and 382.

When I came down, Mr. B. presented him to me. My Friend Mr. Williams, my Dear, faid he.

Mr. Williams, how do you do, faid I? I am glad

to fee you.

He rejoiced, he faid, to see me look so well; and had long'd for an Opportunity to pay his Respects to his worthy Patron and me before: But had been prevented twice when he was upon the Point of setting out.

Mr. B. said, I have prevail'd upon my old Acquaintance to take up his Residence with us, while he stays in these Parts. Do you, my Dear, see

that every thing is made agreeable to him.

To be fure, Sir, I will.

Mr. Adams being in the House, Mr. B. sent to desire he would dine with us; if it were but in respect to a Gentleman of the same Cloth, who gave

us his Company.

Mr. B. when Dinner was over, and the Servants were withdrawn, faid, My Dear Mr. Williams's Bufiness, in Part, was to ask my Advice as to a Living that is offer'd him, by the Earl of —, who is greatly taken with his Preaching and Conversation.

And to quit yours, I prefume, Sir, faid Lord

Davers ?

No, the Earl's is not quite so good as mine, and his Lordship would procure him a Dispensation to hold both. What would you advise, my Dear?

It becomes not me, Sir, to meddle with fuch

Matters as these.

Yes, my Dear, it does, when I ask your Opinion. I beg Patdon, Sir—My Opinion then is, That Mr. Williams will not care to do any thing that requires a Dispensation, and which would be unlawful without it.

Your Ladyship, said Mr. Williams, speaks ex-

ceedingly well.

I am

1

he

tie

nic

an

eve

Lo

Pec

Cle

tors

(vei

why

Dan

I am glad, Mr. Williams, that you approve of my Sentiments. You see they were required of me by one who has a Right to command me in every thing; otherwise this Matter is above my Sphere; and I have so much Good-will to Mr. Williams, that I wish him every thing that will contribute to make him happy.

Well, my Dear, said Mr. B. but what would you advise in this Case? The Earl proposes, that Mr. Williams's present Living be supply'd by a Curate: to whom, no doubt, Mr. Williams will be very genteel; and, as we are seldom or never there, his Lordship thinks we shall not be displeas'd with it, and insists upon it, that he will propose it to me; as he has done.

Lord Davers said, I think this may do very well, Brother. But what, pray, Mr. Williams, do you propose to allow to your Curate? Excuse me, Sir; but I think the Clergy do so hardly by one another generally, that they are not to be surprized, that some of the Laity treat them as they do.

Indeed, said Mr. H. that's well observed; for I have heard it said twenty and twenty Times, If you would know how to value a Clergyman, and what he deserves for spending his whole Life in the Duties of his Function, you need but form your Opinion upon the Treatment they give to one another; and 40 or 50 l. a Year would be thought too much, even for him who does all the Labour.

d

0

1

at

e -N -

x-

m

Who fays my Nephew speaks not well? faid my Lord.

O, faid my Lady, no Wonder! This is Jackey's Peculiar. He has always fomething to fay against the Clergy. For he never lov'd them, because his Tutors were Clergymen; and since, said her Ladyship, (very severely) he never got any good from them, why should they expect any from him?

Always hard upon my poor Nephew, faid Lord.

Thank

Thank you, Aunt, faid Mr. H.

Mr. Williams faid, Mr. H.'s Observation was but too true! that nothing gave greater Cause of Scandal than the Usage some even of the dignified Clergy gave their Brethren: That he had always lamented it, as one of the greatest Causes of the Contemps with which the Clergy are too generally treated.

He was proceeding; but Lady Davers faid, I am not at all furpris'd at their Treatment of one another; for if a Gentleman of Education and Learning can for far forget what belongs to his Function, as to accept of Two Livings, when one would afford him a handfome Maintenance, it is no Wonder, that fuch a one would make the most of it, for does he not as good as declare, that he takes it for that very Purpose?

I must not let this Argument proceed, said Mr. B. without clearing my worthy Friend. He is under no Difficulty about holding the Two. He proposes not to do it; and, like a good Man as I always thought him to be, is of Opinion he ought not to do it: But here is the Difficulty, and all his Difficulty; He is defirous to oblige his good Friend the Earl, who is very pressing to have him near him; but apprehending that I may take it amis, if he relinquishes my Living, he came to ask my Advice; and after we had talked a good deal of the Matter, I told him we would refer it to Pamela, who was a kind of a Casuist in such Matters of Equity and good Order as fell within the Compass of her Observation and Capacity: And fo, my Dear, give us your free Opinion; for this is a Subject you have spoken your Mind to me upon once before.

I am very glad, Sir, replied I, that Mr. Williams's own Resolution was so conformable to what I wish'd it to be, and indeed expected from his Character; and I can therefore more freely speak my Mind upon the Occasion, tho' I am but a poor Casuist neither.

You

You remember, my Dear, faid Mr. B. what you observed to me in favour of the Clergy, and their Maintenance, when we fell occasionally upon that Subject a while ago. I found you had considered the Point, and thought you spoke well upon the Occasion. Let us hear your Opinion now upon it.

Indeed, reply'd I, I say now, as I then took the Liberty to say, that I have so general a good will to the Order, that if my Wishes could have Effect, there is not one of it, but should have a handsome Competency; at least such a one as to set him above Contempt. And this, I am persuaded, would be a great Furtherance to the Good we expect from them, in teaching the lower Rank of People (as well as the higher) their Duties, and making them good Servants, and useful Members of the Commonwealth.

But, my Dear, you took Notice of fome Things, which would, if you can recollect them, be very

à propos to the Subject we are now upon.

I remember, Sir, we were talking of Impropriations. I took the Liberty to express myself a little earnestly against Impropriations; and I remember you stopped my Mouth at once upon that Head.

As how, Sifter, faid Lady Davers?

Ay, as how, Mrs. B. faid the Countefs?

Why, Madam, Mr. B. was pleased to say, That when the Clergy would come into a Regulation for the more equal and useful Disposition of the Revenues which at present were in the Church, he would be the first who would bring in a Bill for restoring it to all that it had lost by Impropriations and other Secularizations, and leave it upon the Publick to make Satisfaction to such of the Laity as would be Sufferers by the Restoration.

That was not, my Dear, what I meant, returned Mr. B. You were particularly against Dispensa-

tions; which is the Point before us now.

T

d

1

ng

r.

bu

I remember, Sir, I did fay, that as there are fo

many Gentlemen of the Function, who have no Provision at all, I could not wish any one of it should hold Two Livings; especially if they cannot perform the Duties of both, and where one would afford a tolerable Competence. Much less (I remember I took the Liberty to add) could I think it excusable, that a Gentleman should rate the Labours of his Brother, who does every thing, so low, as is too frequently the Case, and pay himself so

well, for doing nothing at all.

This is what I mean, returned Mr. B. and I thought you observed very well upon it, my Dear. For my own part, I have always been of opinion, that the Clergy who do thus, make the best Excuse that can be made for Impropriators and Lay Patrons. For here is a Gentleman, the Son of a Lay-man, (I speak to general Cases) is sent to the University, and takes O1-He has Interest, perhaps, to get two or more Livings, and hires a Person, who is as deserving as himself, but destitute of Friends, at a low Rate, to do the Duties of one of them. We will suppose in his Favour, that he has several Children to provide for out of these, and makes that his Pretence for oppreffing the Person he employs to do his own Duty. Some of these Children are Males, some Females, and not one in five of the former is brought up to the Church; and that all he faves for them, and gives them out of what he squeezes from his unhappy Brother, is it not fecularizing, as it were, at least as tar as he can do it, the Revenues appropriated to the Church? And can he, whatever others may, blame an Impropriator for applying that Portion of the Produce of Church-lands to his Lay-family, which the other intends for the Lay-family he is endeavouring to build up? Some one or two of which Impropriator's Sons may possibly too, in order to possess the Living in their Father's Gift, be brought up to the Church: What is the Difference, I would fain know

If the Clergy were always to have done thus, continued Mr. B. should we not have wanted many Endowments, and charitable Foundations, which we now have? And I am very forry to have Reason to fay, that we owe fuch Sort of Works more to the Piety of the Clergy of past Times than to the present; for now, let us cast our Eye upon the Practices of some of our Prelates; for who is it that looks not up first for Example to that venerable Order? And we shall find, that too many among them, feem more intent upon making a Family, as it is called, and thereby secularizing, as I observed, as much as they can, the Revenues of the Church, than to live up either to the ancient Hospitality, or with a View to those Acts of Muniscence, which were the Reason for endowing the Church with fuch ample Revenues, as it once had, and still has, were it not so unequally distributed, and in so few Hands.

But, dear Sir, said I, what a sad Hardship do the inferior Clergy labour under all this Time?—To be oppressed and kept down, by their Brethren, and by the Laity too? This is hard indeed—'Tis pity, methinks, this, at least, could not be remedied.

It will hardly ever be done, my Dear. The Evil lies deep; 'tis in human Nature, and when that can be mended, it will be better; but I see not how it can be expected, while those who have most Influence to procure the Redress, are most interested to prevent it: And the Views of others, aspiring to the same Power and Interest, make too many wish to have Things left as they are; although they have no present Benefit by it. And those would join in a Cry of the Church's Danger, were the Legislature to offer at a Redress.

4

e

e

-

e

1-

ne he

N

'Tis pity, Sir, said I, the Convocation are not permitted to sit. They would, perhaps, undertake this Province, and several others, for the Benefit of the

whole Body of the Clergy; and I should think such

Regulations would come best from them.

So it is, my Dear, would they employ themselves, and their Deliberations, in fuch good Works. But 'tis a fad Thing to confider, that there is little Good to be expected from Bodies of Men in general; for altho' an Individual cares not to pull down upon himfelf the Odium of a bad or unpopular Action, yet when there are many to share it among them, I see not, that they scruple doing things which very little become them to do. But far be it from me to fay this with a View to Convocations as Convocations: I speak what is but too generally the Case in all Bodies of Men whatever, whether Clergy or Laity. And let us look into the greater or leffer Corporations and Societies throughout the Kingdom, and we shall find, if a poor Witticism may be excus'd, that Bodies are really Bodies, and act too often as if they had no Souls among them.

I hope, Sir, faid the Countefs, when you judge thus hardly of Bodies, you include the two supreme

Bodies.

Thou shalt not, said Mr. B.—I know these Reverend Gentlemen (looking at Mr. Williams and Mr. Adams) will tell me, speak Evil of the Rulers of thy People.—But I wish I could always defend, what I am loth at any time to censure. But were you to read, or attend to the Debates in both Houses, which sometimes happen in Cases almost self-evident, you would find it impossible not to regret, that you are now-and-then under a Necessity to join with the Minority; as well in your House, Lord Davers, as in ours.

I wish, Brother, reply'd his Lordship, I could differ from you with Reason; But this always wall and, I fear, always will be so, more or less in every Session.

But to return to our first Subject, said Mr. B. You know, my Dear, how much Pleasure I take to hear your Opinion in Cases of natural Equity: And you must tell us freely, what you would advise your Friend Mr. Williams to do.

And must I, Sir, speak my Mind on such a Point,

before so many better Judges?

Yes, Sifter, faid her Ladythip, (a Name she is now pleased to give me freely before Strangers, after her dear Brother's Example, who is kindest, tho' always kind, at such Times) you must; if I may be allow'd to say must.

Why then, proceeded I, I beg Leave to ask Mr. Williams one Question; that is, Whether his present Parishioners do not respect and esteem him, in that particular Manner, which I think every body must,

who knows his Worth?

u,

C

4

13

: >

I am very happy, Madam, in the Good-will of all my Parishioners, and have great Acknowledgments to make for their Civilities to me.

I don't doubt, faid I, but it will be the fame whereever you go; for bad as the World is, a prudent and good Clergyman will never fail of Respect. But, Sir, if you think your Ministry among them is attended with good Effects; if they effeem your Person with a Preference, and liften to your Doctrines with Attention; methinks, for their Sakes, 'tis pity to leave them, were the living of less Value, as it is of more, than the other. For, how many People are there who can benefit by one Gentleman's Preaching rather than by another's; altho', possibly, the one's Abilities may be no way inferior to the other's? There is a great deal in a Delivery, as it is called, in a Way, a Manner, a Deportment, to engage People's Attention and Liking: and as you are already in pollession of their Esteem, you are sure to do much of the Good you aim and wish to do. For where the Flock loves the Shepherd, all his Work is easy, VUL. III.

and more than half done; and without that, let him have the Tongue of an Amer, and let him live the Life of a Saint, he will be coast with indifference, and, oftentimes, as his Subject may be, with Difguft.

I paused here; but every one being filent, As to the Earl's Friendship, Sir, continued I, you can best judge, what Force that ought to have upon you; and what I have mentioned would be the only Difficulty. with me, were I in Mr. Williams's Cale. To be fure it will be a high Compliment to his Lordship, and to he ought to think it, that you quit a better Living to oblige him. And he will be bound in Honour to make it up to you. For I am far from thinking, that a prudent Regard to worldly Interest misbecomes the Character of a good Clergyman; and I wish all such were fet above the World, for their own Sakes, as well as for the Sakes of their Hearers; fince Independency gives a Man respect, besides the Power of doing Good, which will inhance that Respect, and, of consequence, give greater Efficacy to his Doctrines.

The Counters mentioned hereupon, the Saying of Dr. Fifter, Bishop of Rochester, who was beheaded in the Reign of Henry VIII. because he would not own the King's Supremacy: This Prelate, being offer'd a richer Bishoprick, would not accept of it, saying, · He look'd upon his Bishoprick as his Wife; and he · should not think it excusable to part with his Wife because she was poor.' This brought so many Reflections upon frequent Translations, and the Earneftness with which richer Bishopricks were sought after, that I was very forry to hear, or to think, there were Occasion for them. And I did take the Liberty to fay, that as Mr. B. had observed the Fault was in human Nature, and tho' it was an inexcutable one, perhaps we that censur'd them, might find it hard in their Circumstances, to resist the Temptation.

Mr. B. faid, He wished, for the Sake of the Clergy in general, that there was a Law against Translations; the

Co

COL

Bel

MITS

and that all the Bishopricks in England were made equal in Revenue: For, do we not see, said he, that the Prelates, almost to a Man, vote on the Side of Power? And by this means, contribute not a little to make themselves and the whole Body of the Clergy (so numerous, and so deserving too, as those of the Church of England are) a By-word to Free-thinkers of all Denominations, who are ever ready to take occa-fron to malign them, and their venerable Order.

Would you not, asked Lord Davers, have the two

Primacies diffinguished in Revenue?

,

e

.

-

ht

re

TY

111

16,

bis

gy.

OS;

rid

No, faid Mr. B. the Diffinction of Dignity and Precedence would be enough; if not too much; for where there is but one Pope, the whole College of Cardinals, Seventy in Number, are always looking up to, and gaping after the Chair: And I would have no Temptations laid in the Way of good Men to torfeit their Characters, and weaken their Influences, which are of so much Consequence for Example-sake, to the Publick Weal.

I think, faid Lord Davers, there was some Reason for the Celibacy of the Clergy in the Roman Church, at first, altho' the Inconveniencies arising from it are too many and too obvious, to wish the Restraint so general. For the Provision for Families and Children, turnishes so natural and so laudable a Pretence to Clergymen to lay up all they can for them, that their Characters suffer not a little on that Account.

If we look round us, faid Mr. B. and fee how many good and worthy Families are sprung from the Cergy; and look abroad, and fee what are too often the Effects of Celibacy in the Roman Church, and the Scandal, worse than what we complain of thrown upon them, even by Bigots of their own Communion, we shall have sufficient Reason to condemn the Celibacy which that Church injoins. Besides, a bad Mind, an oppressive or covetous Nature, will be the same, whether marry'd or single:

For have we not seen to what a scandalous Height Nepotism has been carried in that Church? And has not a Pope of a private and narrow Spirit, done as much for his Nephews and Nieces (and perhaps nearer Relations under those Names) as he could have done for Sons and Daughters? So still here too, we must resolve all into that common Sewer of Iniquity, Human Nature; and conclude, That a truly good Man will not do a bad Thing upon any the nearest and most affecting Considerations; and that a bad Man will never want a Pretence to display his evil Qualities, nor Flatterers neither (if he has Power) to defend him, in the worst he can do.

I well remember the Argument, when I was at Rome, used to the Pope, on such an Occasion. His Holiness declared against Nepotism, saying, That he would never look upon the Revenues of the Church, as the Patrimony of his private Family; and forbad his numerous Relations, who, on his Promotion, swarm'd about him, with Looks as hungry as if they were so many North Britons, travelling Southward, for Preferment—(that was Mr. B.'s Word, spoken pleasantly) to think of him in any other Light, than that of the common Father of all his People;

and as having no other Relation but Merit.

This was fetting out well, you'll fay: But what was the Event?—Why, two thirds of his Relations rushed into Orders directly; and it was not long, before Parasites were found, to represent to the Holy Father, that it was a Sin to deprive the Church of so many excellent Props and Buttresses; and that for the Good of the Publick, he ought to prefer them to the first Dignities; so that the good Man, overcome with their Reasons, and loth to continue in so great a Sin, grac'd the Cardinalate with one, the Episcopate with half a Dozen; and the richest Abbacies with a Score or two; and the Emperor having occasion to make Interest with his Holiness, found Merit enough in some

fome of the lay Relations, to create them Princes

and Counts of the Holy Roman Empire.

But Sir, faid I, (for I am always forry to hear Things faid to the Discredit of the Clergy, because I think it is of public Concern that we reverence the Function, notwithstanding the Failings of Particulars) have I not been a filent Witness, that you have made the same Observations on a Minister of State, who, tho' he shall be perhaps the first to blame this Disposition in a Clergyman, will be equally ready to practise it himself, to Relations and Children, full as worthless, to the Exclusion of the Worthy?

—So that, Sir, this is all Human Nature still; and should we not be tender in our Censures of the one, when we are so ready to acquit the other?

There's this Difference, Mrs. B. faid the Counters: From the one we expect a better Example; from the other, no Example fit to be followed. And this is one Reason that makes the First Minister generally so hated a Thing in all Nations, because he usually resolves all Considerations into Self, and is beloved by nobody, but those, to whom he gives the Overslowings of such Benefits, as he has not

Relations enough to heap them upon.

Well, Mr. Adams, faid I, if I may be allowed to be in ferious, does not this shew the Excellency of the Prayer we are taught by the supreme Teacher, and that Part of it, Lead us not into Temptation? For it icems too natural a Consequence, that no sooner are we tempted, but we deliver ourselves up to Evil.

Right, Sifter, faid Lord Davers; and this ends in

Mr. B.'s Human Nature again.

What remains, then, observ'd Lady Davers, but that we take the World as we find it? Give Praise to the Good, Dispraise to the Bad; and every-one try to mend one?

Yet I wish, said Mr. B. so over-tender are many good Clergyman of the Failings in their Brethren,

N 3 which

which they would not be guilty of themselves, that we might avoid displeasing them, if they were to know the Freedom of this Conversation, when we are all so well-disposed to reverence their Function.

I hope otherwise, return'd Mr. Williams; for it is but giving due Praise and Dispraise, as my Lady says; and were evil Actions to go uncensur'd, good ones would lose their Reward, and Vice, by being put upon a Foot with Virtue in this Life, would meet with too much Countenance.

But give me Leave, resum'd Lady Davers, to interpose a little in the Matter we have departed from, that of the Curate and Dispensation; and when I have deliver'd my Sentiments, I insist upon it, that Mrs. B. will as freely give us hers, as if I had been silent.

Dispensations are usual Things. Mr. Williams may pay a young Gentleman handfomely; and the Centure we have passed, is only upon such as do not. young Man at first setting out, a good Curacy will be very acceptable. If he has Merit, it will put him in a Way of shewing it, and he may raise himself by it. If he has not, he will not deserve more. And Mr. Williams may marry, perhaps, and have a Family to provide for. His Opportunities may not always be the fame: The Earl may die, and he should be excused if he makes the best Use of his Interest and Favour, for the very Reason Mrs. B. gave, that as he is a good Man, it will strengthen his Influences: And, come, Brother, you know I am always for prescribing; Here is a worthy young Gentleman in my Eye, who won't take it amiss to begin with a Curacy: And you shall give your Dispensation, previous to the legal one, on Condition, that Mr. Williams will permit you to present his Curate: And thus all will be resolv'd.

Both the Gentlemen bow'd,—and Mr. Williams was going to speak: But Mr. B. said, Take my Sister at her Word, Pamela, and if you have any-thing to say to this Scheme, speak it freely, as if her Ladyship

nad

had been filent; for, I perceive, by your downcast Eye and Silence, you could fay something it you would.

Ay, pray do, faid my Lady. I love to hear you fpeak. You always make me think of fomething I had not confider'd before.

I am very loth to say any thing on so nice a Subject. Indeed it would not become me. There is so much Generosity and Benevolence in my good

Lady's Scheme, that I ought not.

Ought not! repeated my dearest Friend, interrupting me, None of your ought nots; I know you are always forming in your Mind Notions of Right and Wrong, in the common Cases of Life. Let us therefore have your Opinion in this Matter more fully than you have hitherto given it; and deliver it too without Hesitation, and with that Ease and Freedom, which are born with you; for, I can tell you, that were we, thro' the Corruption of Human Nature, to lose the Distinctions of Right and Wrong, I know not where we could apply ourselves, but to such as you, to recover them.

I bow'd, and faid, If you will have it so, Sir, it must be so; and I will then bespeak all your kind Allowances, (casting my Eye around me, to each Person) and tell you all I think upon this Matter; and when I have done, submit my poor Sentiments, as becomes me, to your superior Judgments.

Thus then I would fay—Pardon me, Madam, for taking your Ladyship's Words for my Theme, as I remember them; and hardly any-thing falls from your Ladyship that I do not remember—That Dispensations are usual Things—I am sure I am going to display my Ignorance, because, knowing nothing of their Original or Design, I must presume them to be very ancient in this Kingdom, and introduced only when there were sewer Clergymen than Benefices. Was there ever such a Time?

N 4

They shall'd—Nay, now, you round comman me, air, to ficak, when I need to do nothing ell to expose my his. There was a Time, as I have real, that there were so tew Scholars, that the Benefit of Clergy was allow'd to some Sort of Criminals who could do no more than read, because the Commenwealth could ill spare learned Men, and thought it right to encourage the Love of Letters—And might there not be a Time then, when Dispensations were allowed to worthy Men, because it was difficult to find enow of such as deserv'd that Character, to sind the Church Preserments?

Tell us, Pamela, said Mr. B. whether you do not intend this as a Satire upon the Practice? Or, is it really your pretty Ignorance, that has made you pronounce one of the severest Censures upon it,

that could be thought of?

I smiled, and said, Indeed, Sir, I think only some such Reason, or a worse, must be the Original of Dispensations; for is it right that one Gentleman shall have two or three Livings, the Duties of no more than one of which he can personally attend; while so many are destitute of Bread, almost, and exposed to Contempt, the too frequent Companion of Poverty? And what though Custom may have sanctified it, to be sure that is all that can; and a good Man will not do all he may do without incurring a Penalty, because there is in every I hing a Right and a Wrong; and because be the Custom what it will, a Man should regulate his Actions by his Conscience and the Golden Rule.

My good Lady says, Mr. Williams may pay a Gentleman handsomely: I don't doubt but Mr. William would do so; and this, I am forry to say it, would be doing what is not so often done as one would wish. But may I be permitted to ask, For what would he pay the Gentleman handsomely?—Why, for doing that Duty for him, which in Conscience and Honout

he ought to do himfelf, and which, when he takes Institution and Induction, he engages solemnly to do? And pray, excuse me, my Dear Every-body-that was my foolish Word, which made them fmile-To what End is all this? - Only, that the Gentleman who does all the Labour in the Vineyard, shall live upon 30, 40, or 501. per Annum, more or less, while the Gentleman who has best nothing but best Interest, (another of my foolish Phrases) shall receive twice, and perhaps three Times the Sum for doing nothing at all. Can any Dispensation, my dear Friends, make this a just or equitable Thing? Indeed, if the Living be fo poor, as too many of them are, that a Man cannot comfortably and creditably subfift without putting Two poor ones together to make One tolerable one, that is another Thing. But pray now, my good Mr. Williams, excuse me, if Mr. Alams can live upon a Curacy of 40 or 50% a Year, cannot another Gentleman live, unless his Rectory or Vicarage bring him 2 or 300? Mr. Adams may marry as well as Mr. Williams; and both, I believe, will find God's Providence a better Reliance, than the richest Benefice in England.

A good Curacy, no doubt, continued I, may be a comfortable Thing at fetting out to a young Gentleman: But if here be a Rectory or Vicarage, of 200/. a Year, for Example, (for if it be of no more Value than a good Curacy, he mad be content) is not that 200/. a Year the Reward for doing such and such Labour? And if this be the stated Hire for this Labour, to speak in the Scripture Phrase, Is not the Labourer contry of his Hire? Or is he that does not labour,

to go away with the greatest Part of it?

974

(2

If the Gentleman, my Lady is pleased to sav, has Merit, this Curacy may put him in the Way of shewing it. But does the Manifestation of Merit, and the Reward of it, always go together?

My Lady is fo good as to observe:—But may I, Madam, be excused?

N 5

Proceed.

Proceed, proceed, Child!—I shall only have a Care of what I say before you for the future, that's all.

And I too, faid Mr. H .- which made them fmile.

Nay, now, my Lady-

Proceed, I tell you—I only wonder, as my Brother has faid, on another Occasion, where thou

gottest all these equitable Notions.

My Lady is so good as to observe, proceeded I (for they were pleased to be attentive) that Mr. Williams thould make use of his Opportunities. I know her Ladyship speaks this rather in generous Indulgence to the usual Practice, than what always sught to be the chief Consideration; for if the Earl should die, may not some other Friend arise to a Gentleman of Mr. Williams's Merit?

As to strengthening of a good Man's Influence, which is a Point always to be wish'd, I would not say so much as I have done, if I had not heard Mr. Longman say, and I am sure I heard it with great Pleasure, that the Benefice Mr. Williams so worthily

enjoys, is a clear 2501. a Year.

But after all, does Happiness to a Gentleman, a Scholar, a Philosopher, rest in a greater or lesser Income?-On the contrary, Is it not oftener to be found in a happy Competency, or Mediocrity? Suppose my dear Mr. B. had 5000/. a Year added to his present large Income, would that increase his Happiness? That it would add to his Cares is no Question; but could that Addition give him one fingle Comfort which he has not already? And if the dear Gentleman had 2 or 3000 less, might he be less happy on that Account? No, furely, for it would render a greater Prudence on my humble Part necessary, and a nearer Inspection, and greater Frugality, on his own, and he must be contented (if he did not, as now, perhaps, lay up every Year) fo long as he lived within his Income-And who will fay, that the Obligation to greater Prudence, and Oeconomy is a Misfortune!

The Competency, therefore, the Golden Mean is the Thing; and I have often confidered the Matter, and endeavoured to square my Actions by the Result of that Consideration. For a Person, who being not born to an Estate, is not satisfy'd with a Competency, will probably not know any Limits to his Desires. One whom an Acquisition of 100 or 200%, a Year will not satisfy, will hardly sit down contented with any Sum. For altho' he may propose to himself at a Distance, that such and such an Acquisition will be the Height of his Ambition; yet he will, as he approaches to that, advance upon himself farther and farther, and know no Bound, till the natural one is forced upon him, and his Life and his Views end together.

e

1

۲.

it

ly.

3

1-

be '

7-

118

1.

11:

ort

an

21

ter

rer

he

ps,

115

10

he!

Now let me humbly beg Pardon of you all, Ladies and Gentlemen, turning my Eye to each; but most of you, my good Lady, whose Observations I have made so free with. If you can forgive me, it will be an Instance of your Goodness that I may wish for, but hardly can promise to myself. Will you, my dear Lady, said I, and laid my Hand upon her Ladyship's, in a supplicatory Manner; for she sat next me?

I think not, faid her Ladyship. I think I ought not.—Should I, Brother? Can I, my Lord?—Ought I, my Lady Countes?—Brother, Brother, It you have been in any Degree contributing to the Excellency of this—what shall I call her? How cunningly do you act, to make her imbibe your Notions, and then utter them with such Advantage, that you have the secret Pride to find your own Sentiments praised from her Mouth? But I will forgive you both, be it as it will; for I am sure, outdone as I am, in Thought, Word, and Deed, and by so young a Gypsey—that was her Word; it is by one that would outdo every-body else, as well as me: Only I would except your Ladyship.

N 6

None

None of your Exceptions, Lady Davers, replied the Counters—I know not, in so young a Lady, whether I should most envy or admire her Excellence.

Well, but fince I have the Pleasure, resumed I, to find myself forgiven, may I be indulged a few Moments Prattle more? Only just to observe, that the State of the Case I have given, is but one Side of the Question; that which a good Clergyman, in my humble Opinion, would choose to act. But when we come to the other Side, what it would be kind we can the Laity should think fit and act by them, that is another Thing. For, when we think of the Hardships the Clergy he under, more than almost any other Body of Men, we shall see they are intitled to

better Usage than they often meet with.

Here, in the first Place, a Youth is sent to the Univerlity, after a painful Courie to qualify him for it. He endangers his Health, and impairs his Constitution, by hard Study, and a sedentary Life; and after he has passed such a Number of Years, he is admitted into Orders, perhaps gets a fmall Fellowship, turns Tutor, a painful Employment; and his Education having been unigned for all his Portion, and that expended in it, heat half, by Interest or Lavour, gets a Curacy or little Laving of 40, 50, or bol. a Year, it left, to much the worle; and is obliged to maintain himself in a genteel Appearance out of that, and be subject not feldom to the lefts of Buffoons and Rakes at a great Man's Table, where the Parjon is too often the But to receive the Supposed witty Shalts of such as can allow themselves to say any-thing. If he marries, which possibly too he is kept from, contrary to his Wither, of all I len he is the least to follow his own Liking: fince Prudence too often obliges him to take the Perfon his Inclination would not.

If Children tollow, what melanch sly Viewshashed providing to them, did nothis flrong Renance on Providence exercise as Faith against worldly Appearance.

Then has he too often to contend for his Dues, the Produce of his poor Income, with churlish and ignorant Spirits, whom his Function would make him wish to smooth and instruct; who though they farm and pay to the Landlord for no more than nine Tenths of the Lands they occupy, hardly think it a Sin to cheat the Parson of his Tythe; who, however, has the same Right to it by the Laws of the Land, as the Gentleman has to the Estate, or the Tenant to the Produce of his Farm.

This obliges the poor Gentleman to live in a State of War among a People with whom both his Duty and Inclination would make him defirous to cultivate a good Understanding. And what Benefits can refult from his Ministry in such a Situation, when the People to be instructed look upon him as an Invader of their Substance, at the very Time that

they are robbing him of what is legally his?

19

0

5

11

. 1

213

250

hi

10

204

In the next Place, I prefume to think, that the Clergy are too much looked upon by some as a detached Body, as I may say, from the rest of the People, and as Persons acting upon a separate Interest, quite opposite to that of the Laity: When, possibly, that very Churl, who resuses them their Right, or would cheat them of it, has a View to bring up one of his l'amily to the Church, and hopes to get him provided for out of its Revenues. And are not the Clergy, moreover, the Fathers, the Sons, the Uncles, the Brothers of the Laity, who shall set themselves against their Maintenance? And must their Education debar them of those Comforts, which it better qualifies them to enjoy, and which it incapacitates them any other way to procure?

Forgive me, looking all round me, and curt fying when I cast my Eye on Mr. B. for entering so deeply into this Subject. I have often heard my excellent Lady, who had a great V eneration for good Clarge men, talk to this Purpose with a Lady who had very diner-

ent Sentiments from hers: And I have not been used to forget any thing that sell from her Lips. Mr. B. and Lady Davers, bid me proceed; I could not, my

Lady faid, have had a better Instructress.

What Opportunity, refumed I, have not the Laity in general, of all Degrees and Ranks, to make their Lives easy and happy, to what the Clergy have? Here is a middling Family with three or four Sons: Suppose the Father's Circumstances will allow him to bring up one to the Law: What Opportunities has he, unenvied to make a Fortune; another is brought up to Trade; If he has but tolerable Success in the World, in what Fase and Affluence does he support himself, and provide for his Family? And as to the Phylick Line, what Fortunes are raised in that? And nobody envies any of these. But the Son, whose Inclination shall lead him perhaps best to deserve, and most to require, an easy and comfortable Sublistence, and who ought wholly to devote himself to the Duties of his Function, is grudged every thing, and is treated as if he were not a Son of the same Family, and had not a natural Right and Stake in the same Commonwealth.

There are, 'tis true, Preferments, and some great ones, and Honours too, in the Church; but how sew, compared to the Numbers of the Clergy, or to those Livings which are so poor as can hardly set a Man above Penury and Contempt?—And how are those sew ingross'd by the Descendants or Dependants of the Rich and Powerful? And, what by Commendams, Dispensations, and such-like Contrivances, how does one Man of Interest and Address swallow up the Provision which was designed for several, as deserving, perhaps, at least, as himself?—For, my good Lady, (you have forgiven me, and must not be displeased) a Man's Friends may die off, and he must, you know, make the best of his Opportunities.

O you dear Sauce-box, as my Brother calls you!— How dare you, by that arch pretty Look, triumph over me thus?—Let me, Brother, give her a Slap for this!—I'm sure she deserves it.

I think she is a little insolent indeed, Lady Davers, But to the Case in hand. There is so much Truth in what Pamela says, of the Hardships to which the Clergy, the inserior Clergy particularly, are subjected, that I wonder any Gentleman who can choose for himself, and has no probable Prospect, should enter into Orders, under such Discouragements.

I humbly conceive, Sir, faid I, that there can be but one good Inducement, and this is what the Apostle hints at in these Words—If in this Life only we have Hope, we are of all Men most miserable.

Well, said Mr. B. by how much this is their Motive, by so much are they intitled to that better

Hope; and may it never deceive them!

But I have the Pleasure to acquaint this Company, that I had a mind only to hear what Pamela, who, as I hinted, talked to me learnedly on this very Subject a few Days ago, would say, when she came Face to Face, to her two worthy Friends, Mr. Williams and Mr. Adams (and so I desired Mr. Williams would let her run on, if I could set her into the Subject)—else my old Acquaintance was resolved not to hold both Livings, since either, he was so good as to say, would afford him as handsome a Provision as he wished for; his only Difficulty being about obliging the Earl, or whether he should not disoblige me, if he complied with that Nobleman's Request.

Indeed, Madam, faid Mr. Williams, this is the very Case; and after what I have heard from you I would not, for the World, have been of another Mind, nor have put it upon any other Foot than I did.

You are a good Man, faid I; and I have fuch an Opinion of your Worthmeis, and the Credit you do your Function, that I can never suspect either your Judgment or your Conduct. But pray, Sir, may I alk, what have you determined to do?

Why,

Why, Madam, reply'd he, I am stagger'd in that too, by the Observation your Ladyship made, that where a Man has the Love of his Parishioners, he ought not to think of leaving them.

Else, Sir, I find you was rather inclined to oblige the Earl, though the Living be of less Value! This

is very noble, Sir; it is more than generous.

My Dear, faid Mr. B. I'll tell you (for Mr. Williams's Modesty will not let him speak it before all the Company) what is his Motive; and a worthy one you'll say it is. Excuse me, Mr. Williams—

for the Reverend Gentleman blush'd.

The Earl has of late Years—we all know his Character—given himself up to Carousing, and he will suffer no Man to go from his Table sober. Mr. Walliams has taken the Liberty to expostulate, as became his Function, with his Lordship on this Subject, and upon some other Irregularities, in so agreeable a Manner, that the Earl has taken a great Liking to him, and promises, that he will suffer his Reasonings to have an Effect upon him, and that he shall reform his whole Houshold, if he will come and live near him, and regulate his Table by his own Example.

The Countess is a very good Lady, and privately presses Mr. Williams to oblige the Earl: And this is our worthy Friend's main Inducement; with the Hope, which I should not forget to mention, that he has, of preserving untainted the Morals of the two young Gentlemen, the Earl's Sons, who, he sears, will be carried away by the Force of such an Example. And he thinks, as the Earl's Living has fallen, mine, probably, will be better supplied than the Earl's, if he, as he kindly offers, gives it me back again; otherwise the Earl, as he apprehends, will find out for his, some Gentleman, if such a one can be found, as will rather surther, than obstruct his own Irregularities; as was the unhappy Case of the last Incumbent.

Well,

Well, faid Lady Davers, (and so faid the Counters, I shall always have the highest Respect for Mr. Williams, for a Conduct so genteel and so prudent. But, Brother, will you, and will you, Mr. Williams, put this whole Affair, in all its Parts, into Mrs. B.'s Hands, since you have such Testimonies, both of you, of the Rectitude of her Thinking and Acting?

With all my Heart, Madam, reply'd Mr. Williams;

and I shall be proud of such a Direction.

What fay you, Brother? You are to suppose the Living in your own Hands again; will you leave

the whole Matter to my Sifter here?

Come, my Dear, faid Mr. B. let us hear how you'd wish it to be order'd. I know you have not need of one Moment's Consideration, when once you are a Mistress of a Point.

Nay, faid Lady Davers, that is not the thing. I repeat my Demand: Shall it be as Mrs. B. lays it out or not?

This is a weighty Matter, my good Sifter; and bad as I have been, I think Patrons are accountable, in a great Measure, for the Characters of the Persons they present; and I do assure you, that had I twenty Livings in my Gift, I should think I ought not to prefer my Brother to any one of them, if his Morals and Character were not likely to do Honour to the Church as well as to my Prefentation. And I expected to hear from Pamela when the was enumerating the Hardships of the Clergy, of that scandalous Practice of some Patrons, who rob the regularly-bred Clergymen, by pufhing into Orders some Kinsman, or Friend, or Friend's Kinsman or Friend, when a Living falls in, let his Character or Qualifications be ever fo faulty and defective. I could name several such Instances, that ought to make the Ordainers, as well as the Ordained, blufb; as (were I to borrow one of Pamela's ferious Inferences, I would fay) it will one Day make them both tremble, when they come to give an Account of the Trufts committed to them.

Well.

Well, faid my Lady, I have a noble Brother, that's true. What Pity you ever were wicked at all! But, come, and laid her Hand upon mine, this same good Girl will be a Blessing to you: Nay, why said I, will be the is, and the greatest that Man can receive.—But still I must have you put this Matter into Mrs. B.'s Hands.

Conditionally I will—Provided I cannot give fatisfactory Reasons, why I ought not to conform to her Opinion; for this, as I said, is a Point of Confeience with me; and I made it so, when I presented Mr. Williams to the Living; and have not been de-

ceived in that Presentation.

To be fure, faid I, that is very reasonable, Sir; and on that Condition, I shall the less hesitate to speak my Mind, because I shall be in no Danger to

commit an irreparable Error.

I know well, Lady Davers, added Mr. B. the Power your Sex have over ours, and their fubile Tricks; and so will never, in my weakest Moments, be drawn in to make a blindfold Promise. There have been several Instances, both in sacred, and profane Story, of Mischiess done by such Surprises: So you must allow me to suspect myself, when I know the dear Slut's Power over me, and have been taught by the inviolable Regard she pays to her own Word, to value mine—And now, Pamela, speak all that's in your Heart to say.

With your requisite Condition in my Eye, I will, Sir. But let me see, that I state the Matter right. And, preparative to it, pray, Mr. Williams, tho you have not been long in Possession of this Living, yet may-be you can compute what it is likely, by what

you know of it, to bring in clear?

Madam, faid he, by the best Calculation I can make, (I thank you for it, good Sir) it may, one Year with another, be reckoned at 300 l. per Anum: It is the best Living within twenty Miles of it, having been improved within these two last Years.

If it was 500 l. and would make you happier, for that, Sir, is the thing) I should wish it you, said I, and think it short of your Merits. But pray, Sir, what is the Earl's Living valued at?

At about 220 1. Madam.

Well then, reply'd I, very pertly, I believe now I have it.

Mr. Williams, for Motives most excellently worthy of his Function, inclines to surrender up to Mr. B. his Living of 300 l. per Annum, and to accept of the Earl's Living of 220 l. per Annum. Dear Sir, I am going to be very bold; but under your Condition nevertheless:—Let the Gentleman to whom you shall present the Living of F. allow 80 l. per Annum out of it to Mr. Williams, till the Earl's Favour shall make up the Difference to him, and no longer.—And—but I dare not name the Gentleman:—For how, dear Sir, were I to be so bold, shall I part with my Chaplain?

Admirable! most admirable! said Lord and Lady Davers, in the same Words. The Counters praised the Decision too; and Mr. H. with his Let me be hang'd, and his Fore Gads,—and such Exclama-

tions natural to him, made his Plaudits.

Mr. Williams faid, He could wish with all his Heart it might be so; and Mr. Adams was so abash'd and surpris'd, that he could not hold up his Head;—but Joy danced in his filent Conntenance for all that.

Mr. B. having hesitated a sew Minutes, Lady Davers called out for his Objection, or Consent, according to Condition, and he said, I cannot so soon determine as that prompt Slut did. I'll withdraw one Minute.

He did so, as I found afterwards, to advise, like the considerate and genteel Spirit he possesses, with Mr. Williams, whom he beckoned out, and to examine whether he was in Earnest willing to give it up, or had any Body he was very defirous should succeed.

fucceed him; telling him, that, if he had, he thought himself obliged, in Return for his worthy Behaviour to him, to pay a particular Regard to his Recommendation. And so being answer'd as he de-

fired, in they came together again.

But I should say, that his withdrawing with a very serious Aspect, made me asraid I had gone too far: And I said, before they came in, What shad I do, if I have incurred Mr. B.'s Anger by my Overforwardness!—Did he not look displeas'd? Dear Ladies, if he be so, plead for me, and I'll withdraw, when he comes in; for I cannot stand his Anger: I have not been used to it.

Never fear, Pamela, said my Lady; he can't be angry at any thing you say or do. But I wish, for the sake of what I have been Witness to of Mr. Adams's Behaviour and Modesty, that such a thing

could be done for him.

Mr. Adams bow'd, and faid, Oh my good Ladies' to too, too confiderable a thing:—I cannot expect it—I do not—it would be a Prefumption if I did.

Just then re-enter'd Mr. B. and Mr. Williams; the first with a stately Air, the other with a more

Peace-portending Smile on his Countenance.

But Mr. B. fitting down, Well, Pamela, faid he, very gravely, I see, that Power is a dangerous thing in any Hand.—Sir, Sir! said I—My dear Lady, whispering to Lady Davers, I will withdraw, as I said I would.—And I was getting away as fast as I could: But he arose, and coming up to me, took my Hand, Why is my Charmer to soon frighten'd? said he, most kindly; and still more kindly, with a noble Air, pressed it to his Lips.—I must not carry my Jest too sar upon a Mind so apprehensive, as I otherwise might be inclined to do. And leading me to Mr. Adams and Mr. Williams, he said, taking Mr. Hisliams's Hand with his Lest, as he held mine in his Right, Your Worthy Brother Clergyman, Mr. Adams.

Adams, gives me leave to confirm the Decision of my dear Wise, and you are to thank her for the Living of F. upon the * Condition she proposed; and may you give but as much Satisfaction there, as you have done in this Family, and as Mr. Williams has given to his Flock; and they will then, after a while, be pleas'd as much with your Ministry, as they have hitherto been with his.

Mr. Adams trembled with Joy, and faid, He could not tell how to bear this Excess of Goodness in us both: And his Countenance and his Eyes gave Testimony of a Gratitude that was too high for

further Expression.

As for myself, You, my honoured and dear Friends, who know how much I am always raised (even out of myself, as I may say) when I am made the Dispenser of Acts of Bounty and Generosity to the Deserving; and who now, instead of incurring Blame, as I had apprehended, found myself applauded by every one, and most by the Gentleman whose Approbation I chiefly coveted to have: You, I say, will judge how greatly I must be delighted.

But I was still more affected, when Mr. B. directing himself to me, and to Mr. Williams, at the same time, was pleased to say, Here, my Dear, you must thank this good Gentleman for enabling you to give such a shining Proof of your Excellence: And whenever I put Power into your Hands for the suture, act but as you have now done, and it will be impossible that I should have any Choice or Will but yours.

O Sir, faid I, pressing his Hand with my Lips, forgetting how many Witnesses I had of my grateful Fondness, How shall I, oppressed with your Goodness, in such a signal Instance as this, find Words equal to the Gratitude of my Heart!—But here, patting my Bosom, just here, they stick;—and I cannot—

^{*} This Condition Mr. Williams generously renounced, afterwards, less is should have a Simoniucal Appearance. See Vol. 1V. p. 237.

And indeed, I could fay no more; and Mr. B. in the Delicacy of his Apprehensiveness for me, led me into the next Parlour; and placing himself by me on the Settee, faid, Take care, my best Beloved, that the Joy, which overslows your dear Heart, for having done a beneficent Action to a deserving Gentleman, does not affect you too much.

My Lady Davers followed us: Where is my angelick Sifter? faid the. I have a Share in her next to yourfelf, my noble Brother. And clasping me to her generous Bosom, the ran over with Expressions of Favour to me, in a Style and Words, which would

fuffer, were I to endeavour to repeat them.

Coffee being ready, we all three returned to the Company. My Lord Davers was pleafed to make me a great many Compliments, and so did Mr. H. after his Marner. But the Countess exceeded bere-

felf in Goodness.

Mr. Williams feemed fo pleafed, or, rather, for elated, with the deferved Acceptation his worthy Conduct had met with, that it shewed he was far from repenting at the generous Turn the Matter bad taken in favour of Mr. Adams; On the contrary, he congratulated him upon it, telling him, he would introduce him, when his generous Patron thought proper, to his new Parishioners, and would read Prayers for him at his first Preaching. An! I think, Mr. Adams, faid he, fince this happy Affair has becen brought about from the Conversation upon Dispentations, you and I, both by our Example and our Arguments, must, on all Occasions, discredit that Practice; fince, as my Lady has observed, God's Providence is a better Reliance, than the richest Benefice in England; and fince, as her Ladyship has also observed, we ought not to look beyond a happy Competency, as if in this Life only we had Hope.

My Lady, faid Mr. Adams, has given me many Lessons relating to different Parts of my Duty, both

as a Christian and a Clergyman, that will not only furnish me with Rules for my future Conduct, but with Subjects for the best Sermons I shall ever be

able to compose.

Mr. B. was pleased to say, It is a Rule with me not to leave till To-morrow what can be done To-day: And when, my Dear, do you propose to dispense with Mr. Adams's good Offices in your Family? Or did you intend to induce him to go to Town with us?

I had not proposed any thing, Sir, as to that; for I had not asked your kind Direction: But the good Dean will supply us, I doubt not; and when we set out for Lenden, Mr. Adams will be at full Liberty, with his worthy Friend Mr. Williams, to pursue the happy Scheme, which your Goodness has permitted to take Effect.

Mr. Adams, my Dear, who came so lately from the University, can, perhaps, recommend such another young Gentleman as himself, to perform the Functions he used to perform in your Family.

I looked, it feems, a little grave, and Mr. B. faid, What have you to offer, Pamela? What have I

faid amis?

Amis! dear Sir!

Ay, and dear Madam, too! I fee by your bashful Seriousness, in place of that smiling Approbation which you always shew when I utter any thing you invirally approve, that I have said something which would rather meet with your Acquiescence, than Choice. So, as I have often told you, none of your Reserves: And never hesitate to the your Content in any thing, while you are sure I will conform to your Wishes, or pursue my own Liking, as either shall appear reasonable to me, when I have heard your Reasons.

Why then, dear Sir, what I had prefumed to think, but I submit it to your better Judgment, was, Whether, since the Gentleman who is so kind as to affift us in our Family Devotions, in some measure acts in the Province of the worthy Dean, it were not right, that our own Parish Minister, whether here or in London, should name, or at least approve our naming, the Gentleman!

Why could not I have thought of that, as well as you, Sauce-box? Lady Davers, I am intirely on your Side: I think she deserves a Slap now from us

both.

I'll forgive her, faid my Lady, fince I find her Sentiments and Actions as much a Reproof to others as to me.

Mr. Williams, Did you ever think, faid Mr. B. it would ever come to this? Did you ever know fuch a faucy Girl in your Life?—Already to give herfelf these reproaching Airs?

No, never, if your Honour is pleased to call the most excellent Lady in the World by such a Name,

nor any body elfe.

Pamela, I charge you, faid the dear Gentleman, if you fludy for it, be formetimes in the Wrong, that one may not always be taking Lessons from such an Assurance; but, in our Turns, have something to teach you.

Then, dear Sir, faid I, must I not be a strange Creature? For how, when You, and my good Ladies, are continually giving me such charming Ex-

amples, can I do a wrong thing?

Mr. H. faid, Let him be hang'd if he would not marry, as foon as ever he could get any body to have him.

Foolish Fellow! faid Lady Davers, do'ft think that thou'lt meet with such a Wife as that, when thou marriest?

Why not, Madam?—For if I am not fo good as Mr. B. now is, I have not been so bad neither as he was formerly;—Excuse me, Sir:—And so I may stand a Chance.

A Chance!

A Chance! faid my Lady—that's like thee.—

Didst ever hear of such an one as she?

I never, faid he, and fell a laughing, faw fuch an one, I own. And take that, my good Lady, for

calling me Fooligh Fellow.

There's not the Reproach in thy Answer that thou intendest, except to thy own grinning Insolence, said her Ladyship, (severe enough, but smiling) that makes thee think that a Reslection, which is none in this Case.

Egad, Madam, you're always hard upon me! I can fay nothing to please you. While every-body else gives and receives Compliments, I can come in for nothing but Faslish Fellow with your Ladyship.

Nephew, faid my Lord, laughing, I think you come in for a large Part, and a facctious one too: For when you're prefent, and Convert tion takes a ferious Turn, you make an excellent Character to

fet us all a laughing.

He got up, and bowed very low: I thank your Lordship.—You might as well have called me a Jack-pudding in plain Words;—but then I would have looked upon you all as so many Mountebanks!——There I lave you! said he, and fell a laughing.

The Counters, shuddering, said, Dear, dear Mr. H. be silent, I beseech you, whenever we are terious: For you tear one from the Feast of Souls to

the Froth of Bodies.

n

15

ly

I hope you will forgive me, my Dear, for being to tedious on the aforegoing Subject, and its most agreeable Conclusion. It is an important one, because feveral Persons, as Conferrers or Receivers, have found their Pleasure and Account in it; and it would be well, if Conversation were often attended with like happy Consequences. I have one Merit to plead in behalf even of my Prolixity; That in reciting the delightful Conferences I have the Pleasure of holding with our noble Guests and Mr. B. I am careful not Vol. III.

which I omit, may be more worthy of your Notice, than those I give; so that you have as much Variety from me, as the Nature of the Facts and Cases will admit of.

But here I will conclude, having a very different Subject, as a Proof of what I have advanced, to touch in my next. Till when, I am

Your most affectionate and faithful

P. B.

LETTER XXXIII.

My dear Miss Darnford,

I NOW proceed with my Journal, which I brought down to Tuesday Evening; and of course I begin with

WEDNESDAY.

Towards the Evening came Sir Jacob Swynford, on horseback, attended by two Servants in Liveries. I was abroad; for I had got Leave for a whole Asternoon, attended by my Polly; which Time I passed in visiting no less than four several poor sick Families, whose Hearts I made glad. But I should be too tedious, were I to give you the Particulars; and besides, I have a brief List of Cases, which when you'll savour me with your Company, I may shew you; for I have obliged myself*, tho' not defired, to keep an Account of what I do with no less than 2001. a Year, that Mr. B. allows me to expend in Acts of Charity and Benevolence.

Lady Davers told me afterwards, that Sir Jacob carried it mighty stiff and formal, when he alighted. He strutted about the Court-yard in his Boots, with his Whip in his Hand; and tho' her Ladyship went to the great Door, in order to welcome him, he turn'd

fhort,

fnort, and whistling, followed the Groom into the Stable, as if he had been at an Inn, only, instead of taking off his Hat, pulling its broad Brim over his Eyes, for a Compliment. In she went in a Pet, as she says, saying to the Countess, a surly Brute he always was! My Uncle! He's more of an Hostler, than a Gentleman; I'm resolved I'll not stir to meet him again. And yet the Wretch loves Respect from others, tho' he never practises common Civility himself.

The Counters faid, She was glad he was come, for the loved to divert herfelf with fuch odd Cha-

racters now-and-then.

1

And now let me give you a fhort Description of him as I found him, when I came in, that you may the better conceive what Sort of a Gentleman he is.

He is about fixty-five Years of Age, a coarfe, strong, big-bon'd Man, with large irregular Features; he has a haughty supercilious Look, a swaggering Gait, and a Person not at all bespeaking one's Favour in behalf of his Mind; and his Mind, as you shall hear by-and-bye, not clearing up those Prepossessions in his Disfavour, with which his Person and Features at first strike one. His Voice is big and furly: his Eyes little and fiery; his Mouth, large with yellow and blackish Stumps of Teeth, what are left of which being broken off to a tolerably regular Height, look'd as if they were ground down to his Gums, by But with all these Imperfections, he constant Use. has an Air that fets him somewhat above the mere Vulgar, and fuch as makes one think, that half his Disadvantages are rather owing to his own haughty Humour, than to Nature; for he feems to be a perfeet Tyrant at first Sight, a Man used to prescribe, and not to be prescribed to: and has the Advantage of a shrewd penetrating Look, which yet, methinks, feems rather acquired than natural.

After he had feen his Horfes well ferved, and put on an old-fashion'd Gold-button'd Coat, which by better Wig, but in stiff Buckle, and a long Sword, stuck stiffly, as if thro' his Coat Lappets, in he came, and with an imperious Air entering the Parlour, What nobody come to meet me! faid he; and faluting her Ladyship, How do you do, Niece? and look'd about haughtily, she says, as if he expected to see me.

My Lady, presenting the Countess, said, The Countess of C. Sir Jacob!—O, cry Mercy! said he! Your most obedient humble Servant, Madam, I hope

his Lordship is well.

At your Service, Sir Faceb.

I wish he was, said he, bluntly; he should not have voted as he did last Sessions, I can tell you that.

Why, Sir Jacob, faid she, Servants, in this free Kingdom, don't always do as their Majters would have 'em.

Mine do, I can tell you that, Madam.

Right or Wrong, Sir Jacob?

It can't be Wrong if I command them.

Why, truly, Sir Jacob, there's many a private Gentleman carries it higher to a Servant, than he cares his Prince should to him: But I thought, 'till now, 'twas the King only could do no Wrong.

But, Madam, I always take care to be right.

A good Reason-because, I dare say, you never

think you can be in the wrong.

Your Ladyship should spare me: I'm but just come off a Journey. Let me turn myself about, and I'll be up with you, never fear, Madam. But where's my Nephew, Lady Davers? And where's your Lord? I was told you were all here, and young H. too, upon a very extraordinary Occasion; so I was willing to see how Causes went among you, and what you were about. It will be long enough before you come to see me.

My Brother, and Lord Davers, and Mr. H. are all rid out together.

Well,

Well, Niece, strutting with his Hands behind him, and his Head held up—Hi!—He has made a fine Kettle on't—han't he!—'Sblood, (that was his profligate Word) that ever fuch a Rake should be so caught?—They tell me, she s plaguy cunning, and quite smart and handsome—But I wish his rather were living.—Yet what could be have done? Your Brother was always unmanageable. I wish he'd been my Son;—by my Faith I do!—What! I hope, Niece, he locks up his Baby, while you're here! You don't keep her Company, do you're

Yes, Sir Jacob, I do; and you'll not scruple to

do fo too, when you fee her.

Why, thou countenancest him in his Folly, Child; I'd a better Opinion of thy Spirit! Thou married to a Lord, and thy Brother to a—Canst tell me what Barbara? If thou canst, pr'ythee do.

To an Angel; and fo you'll fav prefently.

What dost think I shall look through his foolish Eyes?—What a Disgrace to a Family antienter than the Conquest!—O Tempora! O Mores! What

will this World come to!

The Countess was diverted with this odd Gentleman, but ran on in my Praise, for sear he should say some rude Things to me when I came in, and Lady Davers seconded her. But all, it seems, signify'd nothing. He would tell us both his Mind, let the young Whelp, that was his Word, take it as he would. And pray, said he, can't I see this sine Body before he comes in? Let me but turn her round two or three Times, and ask her a Question or two; and by her Answers I shall know what to think of her in a Twinkling.

She is gone to take a little Airing, Sir Facob, and

won't be back till Supper-time.

Supper-time! Why, the is not to fit down at Table, is the? If the does, I won't; that's politive

0 3

But now you talk of Supper, what have you?

—I must have a boil'd Chicken, and shall eat it all myself.

—Who's House-keeper now? I suppose all's turn'd upside down.

No, there's not one new Servant, except a Girl that waits upon her own Person: All the old Ser-

vants are continued.

That's much these Creatures generally take as great State upon them as a born Lady: And they're in the right. It they can make the Man stoop to the great Point, they il hold his Nose to the Grindstone, never sear; and all the little ones come about in course.

Well, Sir Jacob, when you fee her, you'll alter

your Mind.

Never, never! that's positive.

Ay, Sir faceb, I was as positive as you once; but I love her now as well as if the was my own Sifter.

O hi leous, hideous!—Tell it not in Gath; for thou'lt make the Daughters of Philistia triumph! All the Fools that he has made where-ever he has travell'd, will clap their Hands at him, and at you too, if you talk at this Rate.—But let me speak to Mrs. Jervis, if she be here: I'll order my own Supper.

So he went out, faying, He knew the House, tho'

in a better Mistreis's Days.

The Counters said, If Mr. B. kept his Temper, as she hoped he would, there would be good Diversion with the old Gentleman.

O yes, faid my Lady, my Brother will, I dare fay. He despises the furly Brute too much to be angry

with him, let him fay what he will.

He went, and talked a great deal against me, to Mrs. Fervis. You may guess, my Dear, that she launch'd out in my Praises; and he was offended at her, and said, Woman! Woman! forbear these ill-tim'd Praises: Her Birth's a Disgrace to our Family. What! my Sister's Waiting maid, taken upon Charity! I cannot bear it.

I mention

I mention all these Things, as the Ladies afterwards told them to me, because it shall prepare you to judge

what a fine Time I was likely to have of it.

When Mr. B. and my Lord Davers, and Mr. H. came home, which they did about half an flour after Six, they were told who was there, just as they enter'd the Parlour; and Mr. B. smiled at Lord Davers, and entering,—Six Jacob, said he, Welcome to Bedfordshire! And thrice welcome to this

House! I rejoice to see you.

My Lady fays, Never was so odd a Figure as the old Baronet made, when thus accossed. He stood up indeed; but as Mr. B. offer'd to take his Hand, he put 'em both behind nim—Not that you know of, Sir!—And then looking up at his Face, and down at his Feet, three or four Times successively—Are you my Brother's Son? That very individual Son, that your good Father used to boast of, and say, that for hand-some Person, true Courage, noble Mind, was not to be match'd in any three Counties in England!

The very same, dear Sir, that my honour'd Father's Partiality used to think he never praised enough.

And what is all of it come to at last!—He paid well, did he not, to teach you to know the World?

—Ad's Life, Nephew! hadst thou been born a Fool, or a raw Greenhead, or a doating Greyhead—

What then, Sir Facob?

What then? Why then thou wouldst have done

just as thou hast done!

Come, come, Sir Jacob, you know not my Inducements. You know not what an Angel I have in Person and Mind. Your Eyes shall by-and-bye be blest with the Sight of her: Your Ears with hearing her speak: And then you'll call all you have said, Profanation.

What is it I hear! What is it I hear!—You talk in the Language of Romance; and from the House-keeper to the Head of the House, you're all stark O 4 staring

flaring mad. By my Soul, Nephew, I wish, for thy own Credit, thou wert.—But what fignifies wishing!—I hope you'll not bring your Syren into my Company.

Yes, I will, Sir, because I love to give you Pleafure. And say not a Word more, for your own Sake, till you see her.—You'll have the less to unsay, Sir

Taceb, and the less to repent of.

The Devil!—I'm in an inchanted Castle, that's certain. What a Plague has this little Witch done to you all?—And how did she bring it about?

The Ladies and Lord Davers laugh'd, it feems; and hir. B. begging him to fit down, and answer him some Family Questions, he said, (for it seems he is very captious at Times) What, a Devil! am I to be laugh'd at! Lord Davers, I hope you're not bewitch'd too, are you?

Indeed, Sir Faceb, I am. My Sifter B. is my

Doating-piece.

Whew, whistled he, with a wild Stare: And how

is it with you, Youngster?

With me, Sir Jacob? faid Mr. H. I'd give all I'm worth in the World, and ever shall be worth, for such another Wife.

He ran to the Window, and throwing up the Sash, looking into the Court-yard, said, Hollo—So-ho—Groom—Jack—Jonas—Get me my Horse!—I'll keep no such Company!—I'll be gone! Why Jonas! calling again.

You're not in earnest, Sir Facob, said Mr. B.

I am, by my Soul!—I'll away to the Village this Night! Why, you're all upon the high Game!—I'll—But who comes here?—For just at that Intiant, the Chariot brought me into the Court-yard.—Who's this! Who is she?

One of my Daughters, started up the Countess; my youngest Daughter Jenny!—She's the Pride of

my Family, Sir faceb!

By

By my Soul, faid he, I was running; for I thought

it was the grand Inchantrefs.

Out-stept Lady Davers to me: Dear Pamela, said she, humour all that's said to you. Here's Sir Jaceb come. You're the Counters of C—'s youngest Daughter Jenny—That's your Cue.

Ah! but, Madam, faid I, Lady Jenny is not married—looking (before I thought) on a Circumstance that I think too much of sometimes, the I carry it

off as well as I could.

She laugh'd at my Exception: Come, Lady Janny, faid she, (for I just enter'd the great Door) I hope

you've had a fine Airing?

A very pretty one, Madam, faid I, as I enter'd the Parlour. This is a pleafant Country, Lady Davers—(Wink when I'm wrong, whifper'd I.—) Where's Mrs. B.?—Then, as feeing a strange Gentleman, I started half back, into a more reserv'd Air; and made him a low Curt's.

Sir Jacob look'd as if he did not know what to think of it, now at me, now at Mr. B.—But the dear Gentleman put him quite out of Doubt, by taking my Hand: Well, Lady Jenny, did you meet

my Fugitive in your Tour?

No, Mr. B. reply'd I. Did she go my Way? I

told you I would keep the great Road.

Lady Jenny C, faid Mr. B. presenting me to his Uncle. A charming Creature! added he: Have

you not a Son worthy of fuch an Alliance?

Ay, marry, Nephew, this is a Lady indeed! Why, the Plague, whisper'd he, could you not have pitch'd your Tent here?—Miss, by your Leave! And faluting me, turn'd to the Countess: By my Soul, Madam, you've a charming Daughter! Had my rash Nephew seen this lovely Creature, and you'd have condescended, he'd never have stoop'd to the Cottage, as he has done.

0 5

You're

You're right, Sir Jacob, return'd Mr. B.; but I always ran too fast for my Fortune: Yet, these Ladies of Family never bring out their Jewels into Bachelor's Company; and when, too late, we see what we've miss'd, we are vex'd at our Precipitation.

Well faid, however, Boy. By my Soul, I wish thee Repentance, though 'tis out of thy Power to amend. Be that one of thy Curies, when thou feest

this Lady; as I make no Doubt it is.

Again, taking my Hand, and furveying me from Head to Foot, and turning me round, which, it feems, is a mighty Practice with him to a Stranger Lady, (and a modest one too, you'll fay, Miss)—Why, truly, you're a charming Creature, Miss—Lady Jenny, I would fay—By your Leave, once more!—Upon my Soul, my Lady Countess, she is a Charmer—But—But—staring at me, Are you marry'd, Madam?

I look'd a little filly; and my new Mamma came up to me, and took my Hand: Why, Jenny, you are drefs'd oddiy to-day!—What a Hoop you wear!

It makes you look I can't tell how!

Upon my Soul, Madam, I thought so; what signifies lying?—But 'tis only the Hoop, I see—Really and truly, Lady Jenny, your Hoop is enough to make half a hundred of our Sex despair, for fear you should be married. I thought it was something! Few Ladies escape my Notice. I always kept a good Look out; for I have two Daughters of my own. But 'tis the Hoop, I see plainly enough. You are so slender every-where but have; putting his Hand upon my Hip, which quite dash'd me: and I retir'd behind my Lady Countess's Chair.

Fie, Sir Jacob! said Mr. B.; before us young Gentlemen, to take such Liberties with a Maiden

Lady! - You give a bad Example.

Hang him that fets you a bad Example, Nephew. But I fee you are right; I fee Lady Jenuy's a Maiden Lady. Lady, or she would not have been so shamefac'd I'll swear for her, on Occasion. Ha, ha, ha—I'm sure, repeated he, she's a Maiden—For our Sex give the married Ladies a freer Air in a Trice.

How, Sir Facob! faid Lady Davers.

O fie, faid the Countess!—Can't you praise the Maiden Ladies, but at the Expence of the married ones? What do you see of Freedom in me?

Or in me? faid Lady Davers.

Nay, for that Matter, you are very well, Ladies, I must needs fay. But will you pretend to blush with that Virgin Rose?-Will ye?-Od's my Life, Mis-Lady Jenny, I would fay, taking my Hand, come from behind your Mamma's Chair, and you two Ladies stand up now together .- There, to you do-Why now, Blush for Blush, and Lady Jenny shall be three to one, and a deeper Crimson by half. Look you there, look you there elfe! An hundred Guineas to one against the Field-Then stamping with one Foot, and lifting up his Hands and Eyes-O Christ! Lady Jenny has it all to nothing-By my Soul, she has-Ha, ha, ha,-You may well fit down both of you; but you're a Blush too late, I can tell you that. - Well hast thou done, Lady Jenny, tapping my Shoulder with his rough Paw.

I was hastening away, and he said, But let's see you again, Miss; for now I will stay, if they bring nobody else—And away I went; for I was quite out of Countenance—What a strange Creature, thought

I, is this?

Supper being near ready, he continued calling out for Lady Jenny; for the Sight of her, he faid, did him good. But he was refolved he would not fit down at Table with fomebody elf.

The Countess said, She would setch her Daughter; and stepping out, return'd, saying, Mrs. B. understands that Sir Jacob is here, and that he does

0 6

net

den

1

1

2

ny

h.

ng

e :

ng

en

not choose to see her; so she begs to be excus'd; and

my Jenny and the defire to fup together.

The very worst Tidings I have heard this Twelvemonth. Why, Nephew, let your Girl sup with any body, so we may have Lady Jenny back with us.

I know, faid the Counters, (who was defirous to fee how far he would carry it) Jenny won't leave Mrs. B. fo if you fee one, you must fee t'other.

Nay, then, if it must be so, I must fit down contented —But yet, I should be glad to see Lady Fenny, that I should. But I will not fit down at Table

with Mr. B.'s Girl-that's politive.

Well, well, let 'em sup together, and there's an End of it, said Mr. B.—I see my Uncle has as good a Judgment as any Body of sine Ladies (That I have, Neplew:)—But he can't so ego his Humour, in compliment to the finest Lady in England.

Confider, Nephew, confider—'Tis not thy doing a folish Thing, and calling a Girl Wife, shall cram a Niece down my Throat, that's positive. The Moment thy Girl comes down to take place of these

Ladies, I am gone, that's most certain.

Well then, shall I go up, and oblige Pamela to sup by herself, and persuade Lady Jenny to come down to us?

With all my Soul, Nethew—A good Motion.— But, Pamela—did you say?—A queer Sort of Name! I've heard of it somewhere!—Is it a Christian or a Pagan Name?—Linsey-wolfey—half one, half t'other—like thy Girl—Ha, ha, ha.

Let me be hang'd, whisper'd Mr. H. to his Aunt, if Sir Jacob has not a l'ower of Wit; tho' he's so

whimfical with it. I like him much.

But hark ye, Nephew, faid Sir Jacob, as Mr. B. was going out of the Parlour—one Word with you. Don't fob upon us your Girl with the Pagan Name for Lady Jenny. I have fet a Mark upon her, and should know her from a I housand, altho' she had chang'd

chang'd her Hoop.—Then he laugh'd again, and faid, he hoped Lady Jenny would come—And come without any body with her.—But I smell a Plot, faid he—By my Soul I won't stay, if they both come together. I won't be put upon—But here comes one or both—Where's my Whip?—I'll go.

Indeed, Mr. B. I had rather have staid with Mrs.

B. faid I, as I entered—as he had bid me.

Tis she, 'tis she!—You've nobody behind you?—
No, the han't.—Why now, Nephew, you're right
I was afraid you'd have put a Trick upon me.—
You'd rather, repeated he to me, have stay'd with
Mrs. B.—Yes, I warrant.—But you shall be plac'd
in better Company, my dear Child.

Sifter, faid Mr. B. will you be pleased to take that Chair; for Pamela does not choose to give my Uncle

Digust, who so seldom comes to see us.

My Lady took the upper End of the Table, and I fat next below my new Mamma: So, Jenny, faid the, How have you left Mrs. B.?

A little concern d-But she was the easier, as

Mr. B. himfelf desir'd 1'd come down.

My Lord Davers fat next me, and Sir Jacob faid, Shall I beg a Favour of you, my Lord; to let me fit next to Lady Jenny?

Mr. B. faid, Won't it be better to fit over against

her, Uncle?

Ay, that's right. I faith, Nephew, thou know'st what's right. Well, so I will.—He accordingly remov'd his Seat, and I was very glad of it; for tho' I was fore to be star'd at sufficiently by him, yet I was afraid, if he sat next me, he would not keep his Hands off my Hoop.

He run on a deal in my Praises, after his manner, but to rough at times, that he gave me pain; and I was under a Difficulty too, lest he should observe my Ring; but he star'd so much in my Face, that That

escap'd his Notice.

After Supper, the Gentlemen fat down to their Bottle, and the Ladies and I withdrew, and about Twelve they broke up, Sir Jacob talking of nothing but Lady Jenny, and wished Mr. B. had marry'd so happily as with such a charming Creature; One, he said, that carried Tokens of her high Birth in her Face, and whose every Feature, and Look, shew'd

her to be nobly descended.

They let him go to Bed with his Mistake: But the Countess said next Morning, She thought she never saw a greater Instance of stupid Pride and Churlishness, and she should be sick of the Advantage of Birth or Ancestry, if this was the natural Fruit of it. For a Man, said her Ladyship, to come to his Nephew's House, and to suffer the Mistress of it to be closeted up, (as he thinks) and not permitted to appear, in order to humour his absurd and brutal Insolence, and to behave as he has done; is such a Ridicule upon the Pride of Descent, that I shall think of it as long as I we. O Mrs. B. said she, what Advantages have you over every one who sees you; but most over those who pretend to treat you unworthily!

I expect to be call'd to Breakfast every Minute, and shall then, perhaps, see how this Matter will end. I wish, when it is reavealed, he is not in a Fury, and don't think himself imposed on. I fear it won't go off so well as I wish; for every body

feems to be grave, and angry at Sir Jacob.

THURSDAY.

I Now proceed with my Tale. At Breakfasttime, when every one was sat, and a Chair lest for me, Sir Jacob began to call out for Lady Jenny. But, said he, I'll have none of your Girl, Nephew; altho' the Chair at the Tea-Table, is lest for somebody. No, faid Mr. B. we'll get Lady Jenny to supply Mrs. B.'s Place, since you don't care to see her.

With all my Heart, reply'd he.

But, Uncle, said Mr. B. Have you really no Defire, no Curiosity, to see the Girl I have marry'd.

No, none at all, by my Soul.

Just then I came in, and paying my Compliments to the Company, and to Sir Jacob, Shall I, said I, supply Mrs. B.'s Place in her Absence? And down I sat.

After Breakfast, and the Servants were withdrawn, Lady Jenny, said Lady Davers, you are a young Lady, who have all the Advantages of Birth and Descent; and some of the best Blood in the Kingdom runs in your Veins; and here Sir Jacob Swynford is your great Admirer: cannot you, from whom it will come with a double Grace, convince him that he does an unkind thing, at my Brother's House, to keep the Person my Brother has thought worthy of making the Mistress of it, out of Company? And let us know your Opinion, Whether my Brother himself does right, to comply with such an unreasonable Distaste?

Why how now, Lady Davers! This from you!

I did not expect it!

1

My Uncle, said Mr. B. is the only Person in the Kingdom that I would have humour'd thus: And I made no doubt, when he saw how willing I was to oblige him in so high a Point, he would have acted a more generous Part than he has yet done. But, Lady Jenny, what say you to my Sister's Questions?

If I must speak my Mind, reply'd I, I should take the Liberty to be very serious with Sir Jacob, and to say, That when a Thing is done, and cannot be help'd, he should take care how he sows the Seeds of Indifference and Animosity between Man and Wise: And how he makes a Gentleman distatisfy'd with his Choice, and perhaps unhappy as long as he lives.

Nay, Miss, said he, if all are against me, and you, whose good Opinion I value more than all, you may e'en let the Girl come, and sit down, if you will.—
If she is but half as pretty, and half as wise, and modest, as you, I shall, as it cannot be help'd, as you say, be ready to think better of the Matter. For, 'tis a little hard, I must needs say, if she has hitherto appear'd before all the good Company, to have her kept out of the way on my Account.

Really, Sir Jacob, faid the Counters, I have blush'd for you more than once on this Occasion. But the Mistress of this House is more than half as wise, and modest, and lovely: And in hopes you will return me back some of the Biushes I have lent you, see there, in my Daughter Jenny, whom you have been so justly admiring, the Mistress of the

House, and the Lady with the Pagan Name.

Sir faceb fat aghalt, looking at one, and at another, and at me, each in Turn, and then calt his Eyes on the Floor. At last, up he got, and swore a sad Oath, And I am thus trick'd and bamboozled, that was his Word; am I?—There's no bearing this House, nor her Presence, now, that's certain; and I'll be gone.

Mr. B. looking at me, and nodding his Head towards Sir Jacob, as he was in a Flutter to be gone, I rose from my Chair, and went to him, and took his Hand. I hope Sir Jacob, you will be able to bear both, when you shall see that there is no other Difference but that of Descent, between the supposed Lady Jenny, whom you so kindly praised, and the Girl your dear Nephew has so much exalted.

Let me go, faid he; I'm most confoundedly bit.—
I cannot look you in the Face!—By my Soul I cannot!—For 'tis impossible you should forgive me.

Indeed it is not, Sir; you have done nothing but what I can forgive you for, if your dear Nephew can; for to him was the Wrong, if any, and I'm fure he can overlook it.—And for his fake, to the Uncle of

fo honoured a Gentleman, to the Brother of my late good Lady, I can, with a bent Knee, thus, ask your Bleffing, and defire your Excuse for joining to keep you in this Suspense.

Blefs you!—O Chrift! faid he, and stamp'd——Who can choose but blefs you? And he kneeled down, and wrapp'd his Arms about me.—But, curse me, that was his strange Word, if ever I was so

touched before.

My dear Mr. B. for fear my Spirits should be too much affected, (for the rough Baronet, in his Transport, had bent me down lower than I kneeled) came to me, and held me by my Arm; but permitted Sir Jacob to raise me, only saying, How does my Angel? Now she has made this Conquest, she has completed

all her Triumphs.

Angel did you call her!—By my Soul, I'm confounded with her Goodness, and her sweet Carriage!
—Rise, and let me see if I can stand mysels!—And, believe me, I am sorry to have acted so much like a Bear as I have done; and the more I think of it, the more I shall be asham'd of mysels.—And the Tears, as he spoke, ran down his rough Cheeks: which moved me a good deal; for to see a Man with so hard

a Countenance weep, was a touching Sight.

Mr. H. putting his Handkerchief to his Eyes, his Aunt faid what's the Matter, fackey?—The Matter! answer'd he; I don't know how the D—l'tis—But here's strange Doings, as ever I knew—For here, Day after Day, one's ready to cry, without knowing whether it be for Joy or Sorrow!—What a Plague's the Matter with me, I wonder!—And out he went, the two Ladies, whose charming Eyes, too, glisten'd with Pleasure, smiling at the Effect the Scene had upon Mr. H. and at what he said.

Well, Madam, faid Sir Jacob, approaching me; for I had fat down, but then flood up—You will forgive me; and from my Heart I wish you Joy. By

my Soul I do—and faluted me—I could not have believed there had been such a Person breathing. I don't wonder at my Nephew's loving you!—And you call her Sister, Lady Davers, don't you?—If you do, I'll own her for my Niece.

Don't I?—Yes, I do, faid her Ladyship, coming to me, and am proud so to call her. And this I tell you, for your Comfort, tho' to my own Shame, that I used her worse than you have done, before I knew her Excellence; and have repented of it ever since.

I bow'd to her Ladyship—and kissed her Hand— My dearest Lady, said I, you have made me such rich Amends since, that I am sure I may say, It was good

for me that I was afflisted.

Why, Nephew, she has the Fear of God, I perceive, before her Eyes too! I'm sure I've heard those Words. They are somewhere in the Scripture, I believe!—Why, who knows, but she may be a means to save your Soul?—Hay, you know!

Ay, Sir Jacob, she'll be a means to save an hundred Souls, and might go a great way to save yours,

if you were to live with her but one Month.

Well, but Nephew, I hope you forgive me, too; for, now I think of it, I never knew you take any

Matter so patiently in my Life.

I knew, faid the dear Gentleman, that every Extravagance you infifted upon, was heightening my Charmer's Triumph, and increasing your own Contrition; and, as I was not indeed deprived of her Company, I could bear with every thing you faid or did—Yet, don't you remember, that I caution'd you, that the less you faid against her, the less you'd have to unsay, and the less to repent of?

I do; and let me ride out, and call myself to account for all I have said against her, in her own Hearing; and when I can think of but one half, and how she has taken it, by my Soul, I believe 'twill

make me more than half-mad.

At Dinner (when we had Mr. Wiliams's Company) the Baronet told me, he admir'd me now, as much as he did when he thought me Lady Jenny; but complain'd of the Trick put upon him by us all, and feem'd now-and-then a little ferious upon it.

He took great Notice of the Dexterity which he imputed to me, in performing the Honours of the Table. And every now-and-then, he lifted up his Eyes, God take me! Very clever, by my Soul!——Why, Madam, you feem to me to be born to these Things!—I will be help'd by nobody but you—And you'll have a Task of it, I can tell you; For I have a whipping Stomach, and were there fifty Dishes, I always taste of every one. And indeed John was in a manner wholly employ'd in going to and fro' between the Baronet and me, for half an Hour together.

He went from us afterwards to Mrs. Fervis, and made her answer him abundance of Questions about me, and how all these Matters had come about, as he phrased it; and returning, when we drank Cossee, said, I have been confabbing, that was his Word, with Mrs. Fervis, about you, Niece. By my Soul, I never heard the like! She tells me, you can play on the Harpsichord, and fing too: Will you let a body have a Tune or so? My Mab can play pretty well, and so can Dolly:—I'm a Judge of Musick, and would fain hear you. I said, if he was a Judge, I should be afraid to play before him; but I would not be ask'd twice, when we had taken our Cossee.

9

.

7

d

1-

10

C -

11

nd

111

A:

Accordingly, he repeating his Request, I gave him a Tune, and, at his Desire, sung to it; Od's my Life, said he, you do it purely!—But I see where it is—My Girls have got my Fingers! And then he held both Hands out, and a fine Pair of Paws shew'd he!—Plague on't they touch two Keys at once; but those slender and nimble Fingers, how they sweep along! My Eye can't follow 'em—Whew—whistled he—They are here and there, and every-where at once!—

Why,

Why, Nephew, I believe you have put another Trick upon me. My Niece is certainly of Quality! And Report has not done her Justice.—One more Tune, one more Song.—By my Faith, your Voice goes sweetly to your Fingers. 'Slife—I'll thrash my Jades—that was his polite l'hrase—when I come home. Lady Davers, you know not the Money they have cost me to quality them; and here's a mere Baby to them, outdoes 'em by a Bar's Length, without any Expence at all bestow'd upon her. Go over that again—Confound me for a Puppy! I lost it by my Prating.—Ay, there you have it!—That's it! By my Soul, it is! Oh! that I could but dance as well as thou sing'st! I'd give you a Saraband, as old as I am.

After Supper, we fell into a Conversation, of which I must give you some Account, because it was upon a Topick that Mr. B. has been blam'd for in his marrying me, and which has sluck by some of his Friends, even after they have in Kindness to me, acquitted him in every other respect; and that is, The Example that he has set to young Gentlemen of

Family and Fortune to marry beneath them.

It was begun by Sir Jacob, who faid, I am in Love with my new Niece, that I am: But still one thing sticks with me in this Affair; and that is, What will become of Degree and Distinction, if the Practice of Gentlemens marrying their Mothers Waiting-maids, (Excuse me Madam) should come into Vogue? Already, young Ladies and young Gentlemen are too apt to be drawn away in this Manner, and to disgrace their Families. We have too many instances of this. You'll forgive me, both of you.

That, faid Lady Davers, is the only Thing!—I must needs say, Sir Jacob has hit upon the Point, that would make one wish this Example had not been set by a Gentleman of such an antient Family; till one comes to be acquainted with this dear Creature; and then every body thinks it ought not to be otherwise than it is.

Ay, Pamela, faid Mr. B. what can you fay to this? Cannot you defend me from this Charge? This is a Point that has been often objected to me: Try for one of your pretty Arguments in my Behalf.

Indeed, Sir, reply'd I, looking down, it becomes

not me to fay any thing to this.

But indeed it does, if you can: And I beg you'll help me to some Excuse, if you have any at hand.

Won't you, Sir, dispense with me on this Occafion? Indeed I know not what to say. Indeed I should not, if I may judge for myself, speak one Word to this Subject.——For it is my absolute Opinion that Degrees in general should be kept up; although I must always doem the present Case an happy Exception to the Rule.

Mr. B. looking as if he still expected I should say fomething, Won't you, Sir, dispense with me, repeated 1? Indeed I should not speak to this Point,

if I may be my own Judge.

t

e

t

9

1-

11

a

Cil

: 4

I always intend, my Dear, you shall judge for yourself; and you know, I seldom urge you farther, when you use those Words. But if you have any thing upon your Mind to say, let's have it: For your Arguments are always new and unborrow'd.

I would then, if I muft, Sir, ask, If there be not a Nation, or if there has not been a Law in some Nation, that, whenever a young Gentleman, be bis Degree what it would, has seduced a poor Creature, be ber Degree what it would, obliges the Gentleman to marry that unhappy Person?

I think there is fuch a Law in some Country, I

can't tell where, faid Sir Facob.

And do you think, Sir, whether it be fo, or not,

that it is equitable it should be so?

Yes, by my Troth—Though I must needs own, if it were so in England, many Men, that I know, would not have the Wives they now have. You

You speak to your Knowledge, I doubt not, Sir Jacob? said Mr. B.

Why, indeed-Why, truly-I don't know but

do.

All then, said I, that I would infer, is, Whether another Law would not be a still more just and equitable one, that the Gentleman who is repuls'd from a Principle of Virtue and Honour, should not be censur'd for marrying a Person he could not seduce? And whether it is not more for both their Honours, if he does; inasmuch as it is nobler to reward a Virtue, than to repair a Shame; were that Shame to be repair'd by Matrimony, which I take the Liberty to doubt. But I beg Pardon; you commanded me, Sir——Else this Subject should not have found a Speaker to it in me.

This is admirably faid-By my Soul it is,

faid Sir Facob.

But yet this comes not up to the Objection, said Mr. B. The setting an Example to Waiting-maids to aspire, and to young Gentlemen to descend. And I will enter into the Subject myself; and the rather, because, as I go along, I will give Sir Jacob a faint Sketch of the Merit and Character of my Pamela, of which he cannot be so well inform'd, as he has been of the Disgrace, which he imagin'd I had

brought upon myfelf by marrying her.

In order to this, give me Leave to fay, That I think it necessary, that as well those Persons who are asraid the Example should be taken, as those who are inclin'd to follow it, should take all the material Parts of it into their Consideration: Otherwise, I think the Precedent may be justly cleared; and the Fears of the one be judged groundless, and the Plea of the other but a Pretence, in order to cover a Folly, into which they would have fallen, whether they had this Example or not.

Fo:

It

For Instance: In order to lay claim to the Excuses which my Conduct, if I may suppose it of Force enough to do either Good or Hurt, will furnish, it is necessary,

That the Object of their Wish should be a Girl of exquisite Beauty, (and that not only in their own blinded and partial Judgments, but in the Opinion of every one who sees her, Friend or Foe) in order to justify the Force which the first Attractions have upon him.

That she be descended of honest and conscientious, the poor and obscure Parents; who having preserved their Integrity, through great Trials and Assictions, have, by their Examples, as well as Precepts, laid deep in the Girl's Mind the Foundations of Piety and Virtue.

e

,

d

Is

d

r,

nt

a,

25

ad

1

10

210

he

1-

d;

nd

er

al-

0:

It is necessary, that to the Charms of Person, this Waiting-maid should have an humble, teachable Mind, sine natural Parts, a sprightly, yet inossensive Wit, a temper so excellent, and a Judgment so solid, as should promise for her, (by the Love and Esteem these Qualities should attract to herself from her Fellow-servants, superior and inserior) that she would become an higher Station, and be respected in it.

It is necessary, that after so good a Foundation laid by her Parents, she should have all the Advantages of Female Education conferred upon her: The Example of an excellent Lady, improving and building upon so worthy a Foundation: A Capacity surprisingly ready to take in all that is taught her: An Attention, Assiduity and Diligence almost peculiar to hersels, at her Time of Life: insomuch as, at Fisteen or Sixteen Years of Age, to be able to vie with any young Ladies of Rank, as well in the natural Genteelness of her Person, as in her Acquirements: And that in nothing but her Humility she should manifest any Difference between hersels and the High-born.

It will be necessary, moreover, that she should have a Mind above Temptation; that she should resist the Offers and Menaces of one upon whom all her worldly Happiness seemed to depend; the Son of a Lady to whom she owed the greatest Obligations; a Person whom she did not hate, but greatly feared, and whom her grateful Heart would have been glad to oblige; and who sought to prevail over her Virtue, by all the Inducements that could be thought of, to attract a young unexperienced Virgin, at one time; or to frighten her at another, into his Purposes; who offer dher high, very high Terms, her Circumstances consider d, as well for herself, as for Parents she loved better than herself, whose Circumstances at the same time were low and distressful.

Yet to all these Offers and Menaces, that she should be able to answer in such words as these, which will always dwell upon my Memory:-" * I reject " your Proposals with all my Soul."-" May God " defert me, whenever I make Worldly Grandeur " my chiefest Good!"-" I know I am in your "Power; I dread your Will to ruin me is as great " as your Power." -- " Yet, will I dare to tell " you, I will make no Free-will Offering of my "Virtue All that I can do, poor as it is, I will " do, to fliew you, that my Will bore no Part in the Violation of me."-And when future Marriage was intimated to her, to induce her to yield, to be able to answer, " The Moment I yield to " your Proposals, there is an End of all Merit, if " now I have any .--- And I should be so far from expecting fuch an Honour, that I will pronounce, " I should be most unworthy of it."

If, I fay, my dear Friends, such a Girl can be found, thus beautifully attractive in every one's Eye, and not partially so only in a young Gentleman's own;

2:10

and after that, (what good Perfons would infinitely prefer to Beauty) thus piously principled; thus genteely educated and accomplished; thus brilliantly witty; thus prudent, modest, generous, undefigning; and having been thus tempted, thus try'd, by the Man she hated not, pursued, (not intriguingly pursuing) be thus inflexibly virtuous, and Proof against Temptation: Let her reform her Libertine, and let him marry her: And were he of princely Extraction, I dare answer for it, that no two Princes in one Age, take the World through, would be in danger. For, altho' I am fensible it is not to my Credit, I will say, that I never met with a Repulle, nor a Conduct, like this; and yet I never funk very low, for the Subjects of my Attempts, either at home or abroad.

These are obvious Inserences, added the dear Gentleman, and not Resinements upon my Pamela's Story; and if the Gentleman were capable of Thought and Comparison, would rather make such an Example, as is apprehended, more, than less diffi-

cult than before.

1

1,

0

n

e,

be

e,

21 9

ild

But if indeed, added he, the young Fellow be such a Booby, that he cannot reflect and compare, and take the Case with all its Circumstances together, I think his good Papa or Mamma should get him a Wise to their own Liking, as soon as possible; and the poorest Girl in England, who is honest, would rather have Reason to bless herself for escaping such a Husband, than to glory in the Catch she would have of him. For such a young Fellow as that, would hardly do Honour to his Family in any one Instance.

Indeed, said the Countess, it would be pity, after all, that such an one should marry any Lady of Prudence and Birth; for 'tis enough in Conscience, that he is a Disgrace to one worthy Family: it

would be pity he should make two unhappy.

Vol. III. P Why,

Why, really, Nephew, faid Sir Jacob, I think you have faid a great deal to the Purpose. There is not so much Danger from the Example, as I apprehended, from fensible and reflecting Minds. I did not consider this Matter thoroughly, I must needs say.

All the Bufiness is, said Lady Davers—You'll excuse me, Sister—There will be more People hear, that Mr. B. has marry'd his Mother's Waiting-

maid, than will know his Inducements.

Not many, I believe, Sister.—For when 'tis known, I have some Character in the World, and am not quite an Ideot, (and my Faults, in having not been one of the most virtuous of Men, will stand me in some stead in this Case, though hardly in any other) they will naturally inquire into my Inducements.

But see you not, when we go abroad to Church, or elsewhere, what Numbers of People her Character draws to admire the dear Creature? Does not this shew, that her Virtue has made her more conspicuous, than my Fortune had made me? For I pass'd up and down quietly enough before, (handsome as my Equipage always was) and attracted not any body's Notice: And indeed I had as lieve these Honours were not so publickly paid her; for even, were I fend of Show and Parade, what are they, but a Reproach to me?—And can I have any Excellence, but a secondary one, in having, after all my Persecutions of her, done but common Justice to her Merit?

This answers your Objection, Lady Davers, and shews, that my Inducements and her Story must be equally known. And, upon my Conscience, I think, (every-thing I have said considered, and every-thing that might still farther be urg'd, and the Conduct of that dear Creature in the Station she adorns, so much exceeding all I hoped, or could flatter myself with, from the most promising Appearances) that she does me more Honour, than I have done her; and if I am

capable of putting myself in a third Person's Place I think I should be of the same Opinion, were I to determine upon such another Pair, exactly circumstanced as we are.

You may believe, my Friend, how much this generous Defence of the Step he had taken, attributing every thing to me, and depreciating his worthy Self, affected me. I played with a Cork one while; with my Rings another, turning them round my Fingers; looked down, and on one Side; and every Way I looked, but on the Company; for they gazed too much upon me all the Time; fo that I could only glance a tearful Eye now-and-then upon the dear Man: and when it would overflow, catch in my Handkerchief the escaped Fugitives, that would start unbidden beyond their proper Limits, tho' I often endeavoured, by a twinkling Motion, to disperse the gathering Water, before it had formed itself into Drops too big to be restrained.

9

t

•

I

e

-

1

-

12

15

nd

be

k,

ng

ot

ch

in,

es

im

ble

All the Company praifed the dear generous Speaker, and he was pleafed to fay farther, Although, my good Friends, I can truly fay, that with all the Pride of Family, and the Infolence of Fortune, which once made me doubt whether I should not fink two low, if I made my Pamela my Mistress, (for I should then have treated her not ungenerously, and should have suffered her perhaps to call herself by my Name) I have never once repented of what I have done: On the contrary, I have always rejoiced in it, and it has been, from the first Day of our Marriage, my Pride and my Boast, (and shall be, let others fay what they will) that I can call fuch an Excellence, and fuch a purity, which I fo little deferve, mine; and I look down with Contempt upon the Rashness of all fuch as reflect upon me; for they can have no Notion of my Happiness, or her Merit.

O dear Sir, faid I, how do you over-rate my poor Merit!—Some Persons are happy in a Life of Com-

P 2 farts,

forts, but mine's a Life of Joy!—One rapturous Instance follows another so fast, that I know not how to bear them.

Whew!—whiftled Sir Jacob—Whereabouts am 1?—I hope by and bye, you'll come down to our Pitch, that one may put in a Word or two with

you.

May you be long thus bleft, and thus happy together! faid Lady Davers, I know not which to admire most, the dear Girl that never was bad, or the dear Gentleman, that having been bad, is now so good!

Said my Lord Davers, There is hardly any bearing these moving Scenes, following one-another so

quick, as my Sitter fays.

The Countess was pleased to say, That till now, she had been at a Loss to form any Notion of the Happiness of the first Pair before the Fall: But now, by so sine an Instance as this, she comprehended it in all its Force.—God continue you to one another, added her Ladyship, for a Credit to the State, and to Human Nature.

Mr. H. having his Elbows on the Table, folded his Hands, shaking them and looking down, Egad, this is uncommon Life, that it is!—Your two Souls, I can fee that, are like well-tuned Instruments: But they are too high-set for me a vast deal.

The best Thing, said Lady Davers (always severe upon her poor Nephew) thou ever saidst. The Music must be equal to that of Orpheus, which can make such a Savage as thee dance to it. I charge thee, say not another Word to-night.

Why, indeed, Aunt, return'd he, laughing, I believe it was pretty well faid for your foolish Fellow: Though it was by Chance, I must confess: I

did not think of it.

That I believe, reply'd my Lady;—if thou hadst, shou'dst not have spoken so well.

Sir

Sir Jacob and Mr. B. afterwards fell into a Family Discourse; and Sir Jacob gave us an Account of two or three Courtships by his three Sons, and to his two Daughters, and his Reasons for disallowing them: And I could observe, he is an absolute Tyrant in his Family, tho' they are all Men and Women grown, and he seem'd to please himself how much they stood in awe of him.

One odd Piece of Conversation I must tell you,

Mifs, because of the Inference that follow'd it.

Sir Jacob afk'd Mr. B. if he did not remember John Wilkins, his Steward! He was an honest Fellow, said he, as ever lived .- But he's dead. Alas for him, poor fack!——He phylick'd himself out of his Life.—He would be always taking Slops: Had I done fo, I should have gone to the Dogs long ago. -But whom do you think, Nephew, I have got in his Place?-Nay, you can't know him neither. Why 'tis ferry Sherwood, a Boy I took upon Charity, and taught to write and read; or paid for't, and that's the fame Thing-Hay, you know !- And now Ferry's a Gentleman's Fellow, and is much respected by all our Hunters; for he's a keen Sportiman, I'll affure you. I brought him up to that mylelf, and many a Jirk has the Dog had from me, before I could make any-thing of him. Many and many a good Time have I thwack'd the Rascal's Jacket; and he owes all he is, and will be to me: And I now fuffer him to fet down at Table with me, when I have no Guefts.

J

d,

10

1-

il.

ehe

311

ge

el-: I

dft.

Sir

But is not this a bad Example, faid Mr. B. to promote follow a Servant to the Command of the Family, under you? What do Gentlemen fay to this?

Gentlemen fay to it! — Why, what Gentlemen have any-thing to do with my Family-Management? —Surely, I may do as I will in my own House, and in my own Family; or eise it would be very hard.

True, Sir Jacob; but People will be meddling, where they have least Bufiness. But are not all the

P 3 Gentlemen

Gentlemen uneasy, for fear their lowest Servants, from the Example set by so leading a Man as you, a Chairman of the Sessions, a Colonel of Militia, a Deputy Lieutenant, and a Justice of Quorum, should want to be made their Stewards?

Why, I can't fay that any-body has taken it into their Heads to question me upon this Subject. I should think them plaguy impertinent, if they had,

and bid them mind their own Bufiness.

But you'll allow, Sir Jacob, that every-one who knows you have raifed your Foot-boy to be your Steward, will not know your Inducements; altho', I doubt not, they are very good ones.

Lady Davers shook her Head at her Brother, fay-

ing, Very well, Sir; very well!

Sir Jacob cried out, O, ho, Nephew; are you thereabouts with your Bears! Why, I can't fay, but you're in with me now.—Let's fee, what have I faid?—Ay, by my Soul, you have nabb'd me cleverly. Faith and Troth, you have convinced me by an Example of my own, that I was impertinent to trouble my Head about the Management of your Family.—Though near Kindred makes fome Excuse for me too.—And besides, a Steward and a Wife are two Things.

So I'd have 'em be, Sir Jacob. But good Wives are but Stewards to their Husbands in many Cases;

and mine is the best that ever Man had.

Pretty expensive ones, Nephew, for all that, as the World runs.—Most Gentlemen find, I believe, Stewards of this Sort, run them out more than they save: But that's not your Case, I dare say ——I'faith, though, you have nick'd me cleverly, that you have.

But, my witty Brother, faid my Lady, I believe, you'd better, for all your Fling at me, as to Inducements, stick to your first Desence, as to the Example sake; for, who stands upon Birth or Degree in the

Office of a Steward?

It will answer several Purposes, Sister, and come nearer the Point in what you object, than you are aware of, were we to dispute upon it. But I have gained my End in the Observation: Sir Jacob takes the Force of the Comparison, and is convinced, I dare say, there is some Justice in it.

Ay, ay, a great deal, faid Sir Jacob; for a Wife is, or ought to be, her Husband's Steward. I'm sure, when mine was living, I made her so, and had no other; for she made Memorandums, and I digested them into a Book; and yet she brought me a nobie

Fortune too, as you all know.

Here, Mils, I conclude my tedious Narrations.—
Be so good as to skim them over lightly, that you may not think the worse of me; and then return them, (with some of your charming Penmanship) that I may send them on to Kent. To be sure I would not have been so tediously trisling, but for the sake of my dear Parents: And there is so much Self-praise, as it may seem from a Person repeating the sine Things said of herself, and that I am half of Opinion I should send them to Kent only, and to think you should be obliged to me for saving you so much Trouble and Impertinence.

Do, dear Miss, be so free as to forbid me to send you any more long Journals, but common Letters only, of How you do? and Who and who's together, and of Respects to one, and to another, and so forth.—Letters that one might dispatch, as Sir Jacob says, in a Twinkling, and perhaps be more to the Purpose, than the tedious Scrawl, which kisses

your Hands, from,

I

y

.

:5

5;

as

e,

ey h,

e,

ole

he

It

Yours most sincerely,

P.B.

Do, dear good Sir Simon, let Miss Polly add to our Delights, by her charming Company. Mr. Murray, and the new Affair, will divert you, in P4

her Absence.—So pray, since my good Lady Darnford has consented, and she is willing, and her Sister can spare her, don't be so cross as to deny me.

LETTER XXXIV.

From Mifs DARNFORD, to Mrs. B.

My dear Mrs. B.

Y OU have given us great Pleasure in your Accounts of your Conversations, and of the Verses put so boldly and wickedly under your Seat; and in your just Observations on the Lines, and the Occasion.

I am quite shock'd, when I think of Lady Davers's passionate Intentions, at her first coming down to you to the Hall, but have let nobody into the worst of the Matter, in Compliance with your Desire. We are delighted with your Account of your Family Management, and your Sunday's Service.—What an excellent Lady are you! And how happy, and how good, you make every-one who knows you, is seen by the Ladies joining in your Evening Service, as well as their Domestics.

We go on here fwimmingly with our Courtship. Never was there a fonder Couple, than Mr. Murray and Miss Nancy. The moody Girl is quite alive, easy and pleas'd, except now-and-then with me.—We had a sad Falling-out t'other Day. Thus it was:

She had the Affurance, on my faying, they were fo fond and so free before-hand, that they would leave nothing for Improvement afterwards; to tell me, She had for some time perceived, that my Envy was very disquieting to me. This she said before Mr. Murray, who had the good Manners to retire, seeing a Storm rising between us.

Poor, foolish Girl! cried I, when he was gone, provok'd to great Contempt by her Expression before

him, Thou wilt make me despise thee in spite of my Heart.—But pr'ythee, manage thy Matters with common Decency, at least.

Good lack! Common Decency, did you fay? When my Sifter Polly is able to shew me what it is, I shall

hope to be better for her Example.

No, thou'lt never be better for any body's Example! Thy Ill-nature and Perverseness will keep thee from that, as it has always hitherto done.

My Ill-temper, you have often told me, is natural to me; so it must become me: But upon such a sweet-temper'd young Lady as Miss Polly, her late assum'd Petulance sits but ill!

I must have had no bad Temper, and that every one says, to bear with thy sullen and perverse one, as

I have done all my Life.

But why can't you bear with it a little longer, Sifter?—does any-thing provoke you now, (with a fly Leer, and affected Drawl) that did not formerly?

Provoke me!—What should provoke me!—I gave thee but a Hint of thy fond Folly, which makes thee behave so before Company, that every one smiles at thee; and I'd be glad to save thee from Contempt for thy new good Humour, as I

afed to try to do, for thy old bad Nature.

Is that it!—What a kind Sister have I!—But perhaps I see it vexes you; and ill-natur'd Folks love to teize, you know.—But, dear Polly, don't let the Affection Mr. Murray expresses for me, put such a good-temper'd Body out of Humour, pray don't!—Who knows, (continued the Provoker, who never says a tolerable Thing that is not ill-natur'd, that being her Talent) but the Gentleman may think himself happy, that he has found a Way, with so much Ease, to dispense with the Difficulty that Eldership laid him under?—But as he did you the Favour to let the Repulse come from you, don't be angry, Sister, that he took you at the first Word.

P 5 Indeed

Indeed, indeed, faid I, with a contemptuous Smile, thou'rt in the right, Nancy, to take the Gentleman at his first Word. Hold him fast, and play over all thy Monkey Tricks with him, with all my Heart: Who knows but it may engage him more? For should he leave thee, I might be too much provok'd at thy Ingratitude, to turn over another Gentleman to thee—And let me tell thee, without such an Introduction, thy Temper would keep any-body from thee, that knows it.

Poor Miss Polly!—Come, be as easy as you can! Who knows but we may find out some Cousin or Friend of Mr. Murray's between us, that we may persuade to address you? Don't make us your Enemies: We'll try to make you easy, if we can—'Tis a little hard, that you should be so cruelly taken at

your Word, that it is.

Dost think, said I, poor, stupid, ill-judging Nancy that I can have the same Regret for parting with a Man I could not like, that thou had'st, when thy vain Hopes met with the Repulse they deserved from Mr. B.

Mr. B. come up again: I have not heard of Mr.

B. a great while.

No, but it was necessary that one Nail should drive out another; for thou'dst been repining still, had not Mr. Murray been turn'd over to thee.

Turn'd over! You used that Word once before, Sister: Such great Wits as you, methinks, should

not use the same Word twice.

How dost thou know what Wits should, or should not do? Thou hast no Talent but Ill-nature, and 'tis enough for thee, that one View takes up thy whole Thought. Pursue that—But I would only caution thee, not to satiste where thou wouldst oblige, that's all: Or, if thy Man can be so gross, as to like thy Fondness, to leave something for hereafter.

I'll call him in again, Sister, and you shall acquaint us how you'd have it. Bell, (for the Maid came in just then) tell Mr. Murray, I desire him to walk in.

I'm glad to see thee so teachable all at once!—I find now what was the Cause of thy constant Perversenes: For had the unavailing Lessons, my Mamma was always inculcating into thee, come from a Man thou couldst have had Hopes of, they had succeeded better.

In came Sir Simon, with his Crutch-stick—But can you bear this Nonsense, Mrs. B? What! sparring, jangling again, you Sluts!—O what fiery Eyes on one Side! and contemptuous Looks on tother.

Why, Papa, my Sister Polly has turn'd over Mr. Murray to me, and she wants him back again, and he won't come—That's all the Matter!

You know your Daughter Nancy, Papa—She never could bear Reproof, and yet would always deferve it!—I was only gently remarking for her Instruction, on her Fondness before Company, and she is as she used to be!—Courtship, indeed, is a new Thing to the poor Girl, and so she knows not how behave herself in it.

.

1

,

9

d

y

e,

0

11

So, Pally, because you have been able to run over a long List of humble Servants, you must insult your Sister, must you?—But are you really concerned, Pally!—Hay!

Sir, this or any-thing, is very well from you.—
But these Imputations of Envy, before Mr. Murray,
must make the Man very considerable with himself.
Poor Nancy don't consider that.—But indeed how
should she? How should she be able to reflect, who
knows not what Resection is, except of the spiteful
bort? But, Papa, shou'd the poor Thing add to his
Vanity, which wants no Addition, at the Expence
of that Pride, which can only preserve her from
Contempt.

Pho I saw

I faw her affected, and was refolv'd to purfue my

Advantage.

Pr'ythee, Nancy, continu'd I, canst thou not have a little Patience, Child—My Papa will set the Day as soon as he shall think it proper. And don't let thy Man toil to keep pace with thy Fondness; for I have pity'd him many a time, when I have seen him stretch'd on the Tenters to keep thee in Countenance.

This set the ill-natur'd Girl into Tears, and Fret-fulness; all her old Temper came upon her, as I defign'd it should; for she had kept me at bay longer than usual; and I lest her under the Dominion of it; and because I would not come into a fresh Dispute, got my Mamma's Leave, and the Chariot, and went and begg'd a Dinner at Lady Jones's; and then came home as cool and as easy, as I used to be; and found Nancy as sullen and silent, as was her Custom, before Mr. Murray tender'd himself to her ready Acceptance. But I went to my Spinnet, and suffer'd her to swell on.

We have faid nothing but No, and Yes, ever fince: And I wish I was with you for a Month, and all their Nonsense over without me. I am, my dear, obliging, and excellent Mrs. B.

Your faithful and affectionate
POLLY DARNFORD.

The two following, anticipating the Order of Time, for the Reasons mentioned p. 155. we insert here.

LETTER XXXV.

From Mils DARNFORD to Mrs. B.

My dear Mrs. B.

PRAY give my Service to your Mr. B. and tell him, he is very unpolite, in his Reflections * upon me, in relation to Mr. Murray, when he supposes

* See this Vol. p. 254, 255.

poses I regret the Loss of him. You are much more favourable and just too, I will say, to your Polly Darnsord. These Gentlemen, the very best of them, are such Indelicates! They think so highly of their saucy Selves, and consident Sex, as if a Lady cannot from her Heart despise them: But if she turns them off, as they deserve, and happens to continue her Dislike, what should be interpreted in her Favour, as a just and regular Piece of Conduct, is turn'd against her, and it must proceed from Spite.

Mr. B. may think he knows a good deal of the Sex. But, perhaps, were I as malicious as he is reflecting, (and yet, if I have any Malice, he has raised it) I could say, That his Acquaintance was not with the most unexceptionable, till he had the Happiness to know you: And he has not long enough been happy in You, I find, to do Justice to those who are proud to emulate your Virtues.

But I can't bear, it feems, to fee my Sifter address'd and complimented, and preferr'd by one whom I had thought in my own Power! But he may be mistaken: With all his Sagacity, he has been often. Nor is it so mortifying a Thing to me, as he imagines, to sit and see two such Anticks playing their Pugs Tricks, as

he calls them, with one-another.

But you hardly ever faw fuch Pugs Tricks play'd as they play, at so early a Time of Courtship. The Girl hangs upon his Arm, and receives his empty Head on her Shoulder, already, with a Freedom that would be censurable in a Bride, before Folks. A stiff, sellen, proud, scornful Girl, as she used to be, she now puts on Airs that are not natural either to her Features or her Character; and judge then how it must disgust one; especially when one sees her Man so proud and vain upon it, that, like a true Man, he treats her with the less Ceremony for her Condescensions, putting on Airs of Consequence,

while her Easiness of Behaviour makes him secure of Acceptance, and a kind Reception, let him be as

negligent or as forward as he pleases.

I fay, Mrs. B. there can be no living with these Men upon such Beginnings.—They ought to know their Distance, or be taught it, and not to think it in their Power to confer that as a Favour, which

they should esteem it an Honour to receive.

But neither can I bear, it feems, the Preparatives to Matrimony, the fine Clothes, the Compliment, the busy Novelty, as he calls it, the new Equipages, and so forth. That's his Mistake again, tell him: For one, who can look forwarder than the Nine Days of Wonder, can easily despise so slashy and so transient a Glare. And were I fond of Compliments, it would not, perhaps, be the Way to be

pleased, in that respect, if I were to marry.

Compliments in the fingle State are a Lady's Due, whether courted or not; and she receives them, or ought always to receive them as such: But in Court-ship they are pour'd out upon one like a hasty Shower, that one knows will soon be over.—A mighty comfortable Consideration this, to a Lady who loves to be complimented!—Instead of the refreshing April-like Showers, which beautify the Sun-shine, she shall stand a Deluge of Complaisance, be wet to the Skin with it; and then—What then!—Why be in a Libyan Desart ever after;—experience a constant parching Drought, and all her attributed Excellencies will be swallowed up in the Quicksands of Matrimony.

It may be otherwise with you; and it must be otherwise; because there is such an infinite Variety in your Excellence.—But does Mr. B. think it must

be io in every Matrimony.

'Tis true, he improves every Hour, as I see in your kind Papers, in his fine Speeches to you. But it could not be Mr. B. if he did not: Your Merit

exteris

extorts it from him: And what an ingrateful, as well as absurd Churl, would he be, who should seek to obscure a meridian Lustre, that dazzles the Eyes

of every one elfe?

But let me observe, moreover, that you had so sew of these speeches before-hand, that you have all the Reason in the World to expect them now: And this lessens his Merit a good deal, as the most he can say, is but common Justice, on full Proof; for, can the like Generosity be attributed to him, as might to a Gentleman who praises on Trust?

You promise, if I will come to you, you will join with me against Mr. B. on this Subject. 'Tis very kindly offer'd: But when Mr. B. is in the Question, I expect very little Assistance from you,

be the Argument what it will.

But 'tis not my Fault, I don't come. I am quite tir'd with the perverie Folly of this Nancy of ours. She every Day behaves more like a Fool to Mr. Murray, and less like a Sifter to me, and takes delight to teize and vex me, by all the little ways in her Power. And then Surliness and Ill-temper are so natural to her, that I, who can but throw out a spiteful Word. by way of Flourish, as I may say, and 'tis over, and I am forry for it as foon as spoken, am no Match for her: - For the perfeveres to intolerably, and comes back to the Attack, though never so often repuls'd, rifing like Antaus, with fresh Vigour for every Fall, or like the Lernæan Hydra, which had a new Head forouting up, as fast as any one of the Seven was lopt off, that there is no bearing her. Wedlock, in fine, must be her Hercules, and will furnish me, I doubt, with a Revenge I wish not for.

But let me thank you for your delightful Narratives, and beg you to continue them. I told you how your Saturday's Convertation with Lady Davers, and your Sunday Employment's, charm'd us all: So regular, and to eafy to be perform'd!—That's the delightful delightful thing.—What every body may do!—And yet to beautiful, fo laudable, fo uncommon in the Practice; especially among People in genteel Life.

Your Conversation and Decision in relation to the two Parsons (more than charm) transport us. Mr. B. let me tell you, judges right, and acts a charming Part, to throw such a sine Game into your Hands. And so excellently do you play it, that you do as much Credit to your Partner's Judgment as to your own. Never, surely, was so happy a Couple!

He has a prodigious Merit with me, I can tell him, tho' he thinks not so well of me as I would have him. To see, to praise, and to reward a Virtue, is next to having it one's self: And, in time, he will make as good a Man (these fine Appearances encourage one to hope so) as he is a Husband.

Your Notions of Dispensations, and double Livings, are admirably just. Mr. Williams is more my Favourite than ever!——And the amply rewarded

Mr. Adams, how did that Scene affect us!

Again, and again, I say, (for what can I say else, or more—fince I can't find Words to speak all I think!) you're a charming Lady!—Yet, methinks, poor Mr. H. makes but a forry Figure among you.

We are delighted with Lady Davers: but still more, if possible, with the Countes; she is a fine Lady, as you have drawn her: But your Characters, tho' Truth and Nature, are the most shocking, or the most amiable, that ever I read.

We are full of Impatience to hear of the Arrival of Sir Jacob Swynford. We know his Character pretty well: But when he has fat for it to your Pen-

cil, it must be an Original indeed.

I will have another Trial with my Papa, to move him to let me attend you. I am rallying my Forces for that Purpose: I have got my Mamma on my Side again; who is concerned to see her Girl vexed and insulted by her younger Sister; and who yet minds no

more

more what she fays to her, than what I say; and Sir Simon loves at his Heart to make Mischief between us, instead of interpoling to filence either: And truly, I am afraid, the Delight of this kind, which he takes, will make him deny his Polly what the fo

ardently wishes for.

I had a good mind to be fick, to be with you. I could fast two or three Days, to give it the better Appearance: But then my Mamma, who loves not Deceit, would blame me, if the knew my Stratagem ; and be grieved, if the thought I was really ill. - I know, Fasting, when one has a Stomach to eat, gives one a very gloomy and mortify'd Air.

What would I not do, in fhort, to procure to myfelf the inexpressible Pleasure that I should have in your Company and Conversation? But continue to write to me till then, however, and that will be next

Best. I am

Your most obliged and obedient,

POLLY DARNFORD.

LETTER XXXVI.

From the fame.

My dearest Mrs. B.

I am all over Joy and Rapture. My good Papa has given me Leave to tell you, that he will put his Polly under your Protection, when you go to London. If you have but a Tenth Part of the Pleafure I have on this Occasion, I am sure, I shall be as welcome as I wish. But he will infift upon it, he fays, that Mr. B. figns some Acknowledgment, which I am to carry along with me, that I am intrufted to his Honour and yours, and to be returned to him Heart-whole and Dutiful, and with a Reputation as unfully'd as he receives me.

But

But do, dearest Mrs. B. continue your Journals till then; for I have promis'd to take them up where you leave off, to divert our Friends in these Parts. There will be Presumption! But yet I will write nothing but what I will shew you, and have your Consent to send! For I was taught early not to tell-Tales out of School; and a School, the best I ever went to, will be your charming Conversation.

We have been greatly diverted with the Trick put upon that Barbarian Sir Jacob. His Obstinacy, Repentance, and Amendment, followed so irressistibly in one Half-hour, from the happy Thought of the excellent Lady Countess, that I think no Plot was ever more fortunate. It was like springing a lucky Mine in a Siege, that blew up twenty Times more than was expected from it, and an-

fwer'd all the befiegers Ends at once.

Mr. B.'s Defence of his own Conduct towards you, is quite noble; and he judges with his usual Generofity and good Sense, when, by adding to your Honour, he knows he inhances his own. Mr. Pitt's fine Diamond met with a World of Admirers; but all turn'd upon this Reflection, What a happy Man is Mr. Pitt, who can call such a Jewel his own!—How greatly do you excel this Diamond; and how much does Mr. B. outdo Mr. Pitt!—Who has contributed to give so rich a Jewel a Polish so admirable; and then has set it in so noble a Light, as makes its Beauty conspicuous to every Eve!

You bid me skim over your Writings lightly; but 'tis impossible. I will not flatter you, my dear Mrs. B. nor will I be suspected to do so; and yet I cannot find Words to praise, so much as I think you deserve: So I will only say, that your good Parents, for whose Pleasure you write, as well as for mine, cannot receive or read them with more Delight than I do.— Even my Sister Nancy (judge of their Essect by this!) will at any time leave Murray, and forget to

frown

frown or be ill-natur'd, while she can hear read what you write—And, angry as she makes me sometimes, I cannot deny her this Pleasure, because possibly, among the innumerable improving Reflections they abound with, some one may possibly dart in upon her, and illuminate her, as your Conversation and

Behaviour did Sir Jacob.

But your Application in P. S. to my Papa pleased him, and confirmed his Resolution to let me go-He fnatched the Sheet that contain'd this: That's to me! faid he: - I must read this myself. He didand faid-l'faith fhe's a fweet one!-Do dear good Sir Simon, repeated he aloud, let Mifs Polly add to our Delights !- So the shall then ;- If that will do it!—And yet this fame Mrs. B. has fo many Delights already, that I should think she might be contented. But, Dame Darnford, I think I'll let her go. Sifters then, you'll fee, how they'll love at a Distance, tho' always quarrelling when together. He read on-The new Affair will divert you-Lady Darnford has consented-Miss is willing; and ber Sister can spare ber-Very prettily put, faith-And don't you be fo cross -- Very sweet! -- to deny me!

Why, dear Mrs. B. I won't be so cross then; indeed I wont!——And so Polly, let 'em send word when they set out for London, and you shall join 'em there with all my Heart: But I'll have a Let-

ter every Post, remember that, Girl.

Any thing, any thing, dear Papa, faid I; fo I can but go! He called for a Kifs, for his Compliance. I gave it most willingly, you may believe.

Nancy look'd envious, altho' Mr. Murray came in just then—She look'd almost like a great Glutton, whom I remember, one Sir Jonathan Smith, who kill'd himself with eating: He used, while he was heaping up his Plate from one Dish, to watch the others, and sollow the Knife of every Body else, with such a greedy Eye, as if he could swear a Robbery against

against any one who presumed to eat as well as he. This is a gross Simile: But all greedy and envious Folks look alike about the Eyes; and, thinking of Nancy on this Occasion, (who envied a Happiness she knew I preserved to that she has in Prospect) I could not but call to mind Sir Jonathan at the same time.

Well, let's know when you fet out, and you shan't have been a Week in London, if I can help it, but you sha'l be told by my Tongue, as now by my Pen,

how much I am

Your obliged Admirer and Friend, Polly DARNFORD.

LETTER XXXVII.

My dear Friend,

I Now proceed with my Journal, which I had brought down to Thursday Night.

FRIDAY.

The two Ladies resolving, as they said, to inspect all my Proceedings, insisted upon it, that I would take them with me in my benevolent Round, (as they, after we return'd, would call it) which I generally take once a Week, among my poor and sick Neighbours; and finding I could not get off, I set out with them, my Lady Countess proposing Mrs. Worden to fill up the sourth Place in the Coach.

We talked all the Way of Charity, and the Excellency of that Duty; and my Lady Davers took Notice of the Text, that it would hide a Multitude of Faults. And if, she was pleased to say, there was to be any Truth in the Popish Doctrine of Supererogation, what Abundance of such Merits would arise from the Life and Actions of our dear

Friend here! kindly looking at me.

I faid,

I faid, That when we had the Pleasure to reflect that we served a Master, who exacted no hard Terms from us, but in every Case almost that could be thought of, only required of us to do Justice, and shew Mercy, to one another, and gave us Reason to think He would judge us by those Rules, it must be a mighty Inducement to Acts of Charity and Benevolence. But indeed, added I, were there not that Inducement, the Pleasure that attends such Acts, is a high Reward; and I am sure the Ladies I have the Honour to speak to, must have found it in an hundred Instances.

The Countess said, She had once a much better Opinion of herself, than she found she had Reason for, within these few Days past: And indeed, Mrs. B. said she, when I get home, I shall make a good many People the better for your Example. And so said Lady Davers; which gave me no small inward Pleasure; and I acknowledg'd, in suitable Terms,

the Honour they both did me.

The Coach set us down by the Side of a large Common, about five Miles distant from our House; and we alighted, and walked a little Way, choosing not to have the Coach come nearer, that we might be taken as little Notice of as possible; and they enter'd with me into two mean Cots with great Condescension and Goodness; one belonging to a poor Widow, and five Children, who had been all down in Agues and Fevers; the other to a Man and his Wise bedrid with Age and Infirmities, and two honest Daughters, one a Widow with two Chileren, the other married to an Husbandman, who had also been ill, but now, by comfortable Cordials, and good Physick, were pretty well, to what they had been.

The two Ladies were well pleased with my Demeanour to the good Folks: To whom I said, That as I should go soon to London, I was willing to see them before I went, to wish them better and better, and to tell them, that I fhould leave Orders with Mrs. Fervis concerning them, to whom they must make known their Wants; and that Mr. Barrow would take care of 'em, I was fure; and do all that was in the Power of Physick for the Restoration of their Healths.

Now you must know, Miss, that I am not so good as the old Ladies of former Days, who used to distil Cordial Waters, and prepare Medicines, and dispense them themselves. I knew, if I were so inclined, my dear Mr. B. would not have been pleased with it, because, in the Approbation he has kindly given to my present Method, he has twice or thrice praised me, that I don't carry my Charity to Extremes, and make his House a Dispensatory. I would not, therefore, by aiming at doing too much, lose the Opportunity of doing any Good at all in these respects; and, besides, as the vulgar Saying is, One must creep before one goes. But this is my Method:

I am upon an Agreement with this Mr. Barrow, who is deem'd a very skilful and honest Apothecary, and one Mr. Simmonds, a Surgeon of like Character, to attend all such Cases and Persons as I shall recommend; Mr. Barrow to administer Physick and Cordials, as he shall judge proper, and even, in necessary Cases, to call in a Physician. And now-and-then by looking in upon them one's self, or sending a Ser-

vant to ask Questions, all is kept right.

Besides, one can take this Method without the Ostentation, as some would deem it, which would attend the having one's dear Friend's Gate always crouded with unhappy Objects, and with some who deserve no Countenance, perhaps, and yet would possibly be the most clamorous: And then one does not subject the Poor neither to the Insolence of Servants, who sometimes in one's Absence, might, were they some Servants, shew, that they were far from being influenced by the same Motives as their

Principals:

Principals: Besides the Advantage the Poor have the Skill and Experience which constant Practice gives to the Gentlemen I employ; and with whom I agree but by the Quarter, because if there were a just Foundation of Complaint, for Negligence, or Hardnels of Heart, I would not be tied down from changing; for, in fuch Cases, in a Crisis, the poor People depending on the Affiftance of those Gentlemen, might look no farther, and fo my good Intentions might not only be frustrated, but do Harm.

My Lady Davers observed a Bible, a Common Prayer Book, and a Whole Duty of Man, in each Cot, in Leathern outlide Cases, to keep them clean, and a Church Catechism or two for the Children; and was pleafed to fay, It was right: And her Ladythip asked one of the Children, a pretty Girl, Who learnt her her Catechism? And she curt'sy'd, and look'd at me; for I do ask the Children Questions, when I come, to know how they improve: 'Tis as I thought, said my Lady; my Sister provides for both Parts. God blefs you, my Dear! faid she, and tapp'd my Neck.

My Ladies left Tokens of their Bounty behind them to both Families, and all the good Folks bleffed and prayed for us at parting: And as we went out, my Lady Davers, with a ferious Air, was pleased to say to me, Take care of your Health, my dear Sifter; and God give you, when it comes, a happy Hour; for how many real Mourners would you have, if you were to be called early to reap the

Fruits of your Piety!

0

d

S

t,

ir

God's Will must be done, my Lady, said I. The fame Providence that has fo wonderfully put it in my Power to do a little Good, will raise up new Friends to the honest Hearts that rely upon Him.

This I faid, because some of the good People heard my Lady, and feem'd troubled, and began to redouble

their Prayers for my Safety and Prefervation.

We walked thence to our Coach, and firetched a little farther, to vifit two Farmers Families, about a Mile distant from each other. One had the Mother of the Family, with two Sons, just recovering, the former from a Fever, the latter from Tertian Agues; and I asked, When they saw Mr. Barrow? They told me, with great Commendations of him, that he had but just left them. So having congratulated their hopeful Way, and with'd them to take care of themfelves, and not go too early to Bufiness, I said, I should defire Mr. Barrow to watch over them, for fear of a Relapse, and should hardly see 'em again for fome time; and so under the Notion of my Foy, I flid a Couple of Guineas into the good Woman's Hand: For I had had an Hint given me by Mrs. Fervis, that their Illness had made it low with them.

We proceeded then to the other Farm, where the Cafe was a marry'd Daughter, who had had a very dangerous Lying-in, and a wicked Husband, who had abus'd her, and run away from her: But the was mending apace, by good comfortable Things, which from time to time I had caused to be sent her. Her old Father had been a little unkind to her, before I took Notice of her; for the marry'd against his Confent; and indeed the World went hard with the poor Man, and he could not do much; and, besides, he had a younger Daughter, who had loft all her Limbs. and was forced to be ty'd in a Wicker Chair, to keep her up in it; which (having expended much to relieve her) was a great Pull-Back, as the good old Woman called it. And having been a Year in Arrear to a harfh Landlord, who finding a good Stock upon the Ground, threaten'd to diffress the poor Family, and turn them out of all, I advanced the Money upon the Stock; and the poor Man has already paid me Half of it: (for, Miss, I must keep within Compass too) which was sol. at first, and is in a fair Way to pay me the other Half, and make as much more for himself.

Her

n (

3

k

21

Here I found Mr. Barrow, and he gave me an Account of the Success of two other Cases I had recommended to him; and told me, that John Smith, a poor Man, who in thatching a Barn, had turnbled down, and broken his Leg, and bruised himself

all over, was in a fair Way of Recovery.

This poor Creature had like to have perished by the Cruelty of the Parish Officers, who would have pass'd him away to Esfex, where his Settlement was, tho' in a burning Fever, occasioned by his Missortune: But hearing of the Case, I directed Mr. Simmonds to attend him, and provide for him, at my Expence, and gave my Word, if he dy'd, to bury him.

I was glad to hear he was in fo good a Way, and told Mr. Barrow, I hoped to fee him and Mr. Simmonds together at Mr. B.'s, before I fet out for Lenden, that we might advise about the Cases under their Direction, and that I might acquit myfelf of fome

of my Obligations to them.

ľ

I

T

e

.

C

in

Ch

d,

TIL

k;

t:

ch

he

CT

You are a good Man, Mr. Barrow, added I: God will blefs you for your Care and Kindness to these poor destitute Creatures. They all praise you, and do nothing but talk of your Humanity to them.

O my good Lady, faid he, who can forbear following such an Example as you set? Mr. Simmonds can teftify as well as I, (for now-and-then a Cafe requires us to vifit together) that we can hardly hear any Complaints from our poor Patients, let 'em be ever to ill, for the Praifes and Bleffings they bestow upon you.

It is good Mr. B. that enables and encourages me to do what I do. Tell them, they must bless God, and blefs him, and pray for me, and thank you and Mr. Simmonds: We all join together, you

know, for their Good.

The Countess and Lady Davers asked the poor lying in Woman many Questions, and left with her, and for her poor Sifter, a miserable Object indeed! VOL. III. -(God Marks of their Bounty in Gold, but I faw not how much; and looking upon one another, and then upon me, and lifting up their Hands, could not fay a Word, till they were in the Coach: And so we were carried home, after we had just look'd in upon a Country School, where I pay for the Learning of Eight Children.

And here (—I hope I recite not this with Pride, tho' I do with Pleasure) is a cursory Account of my Benevolent Weekly Round, as my Ladies will call

It.

I know you will not be displeased with it; but it will highly delight my worthy Parents, who, in their way, do a great deal of discreet Good in their Neighbourhood: For, indeed, Miss, a little Matter, prudently bestowed, and on true Objects of Compassion, (whose Cases are soon at a Crisis, as are those of most labouring People) will go a great Way, and especially if laid out properly for 'em, according to the Exigencies of their respective Cases .- For such poor People, who live generally low, want very feldom any thing but reviving Cordials at first, and good wholesome Kitchen Physic afterwards; and then the Wheels of Nature being unclogg'd, new oil'd, as it were, and fet right, they will go round again with Pleasantness and Ease, for a good while together, by virtue of that Exercise which their Labour gives them; while the Rich and Voluptuous are forced to undergo great Fatigues to keep theirs clean and in order.

This is well remarked in a Manuscript Poem in Mr. B.'s Possession, written in answer to a Friend, who recommended a poor Man of Genius to the Favour of the Author, in order to induce the benevolent Gentleman to lift him into a higher Life than that to which he was born; and as I am sure you will be pleased with the Lines, I will transcribe

them for your Entertainment.

Warmly,

Warmly, once more, this Rustick's Cause you press, Whom Genius dignifies, amidst Distress:

All, that you wish, my Friendship renders dear,
And weeping Industry demands a Tear.

Ease we his Pangs,—but let the Means be weigh'd;
Let Anguish meet him, in the Form of Aid.

—Where'er kind Help can Want's bleak Waste repair,
Whate'er touch'd Pity owes to chill Despair,
That shall be his.—For he who claims your Grief,
To mine brings Title, that commands Relief.

Premifing this, permit me to maintain,
That, wishing Happiness, you purpose Pain:
What, tho' he sweats along the scorching Soil,
Till every aching Sinew burns, with Toil?
Health, and Contempt of Spleen--and Sleep's soft Call--And unobstructed Spirits—balance all.

Nor let Fatigue, like his, presume Complaint, Where Exercise, of Choice, out-works Constraint. What length'ning Furrow, turn'd with tott'ring Fall, Heats like the Racket when it hunts the Ball? What Lab'rer toils like him, o'er Hill or Dale, Whose Triumph is the Fox's Ear or Tail? All un-inur'd to tear—in Life's weak Dawn, Boy-Sportsmen tire and shame those Sons of Brawn.

t

n

1,

e

11

u

e

1,

"But, shall a Fire, like his, want Room to slame?" And what is Peace, to one who pants for Fame?"

Bless'd in his low-born Quiet, wou'd he dare Adopt Distinction, to induce Despair? Wou'd he, for Envy, give up safe Neglect? And hazard Calumny, to gain Respect? Blow up Ambition's Storm, to blass his Race? And scorn Obscurity, to court Disgrace?

Qz

True,

True, he is poor,—and so are Kings no less:
They want, whate'er they wish, and not posses:
While Swains, who scorn to seel by others Sense,
Are rich in their own Right, of Competence.
Bread, and self-satisfy'd, is Wealth, within;
Nor call that Gain—which Wisdom shuns to win.

From what proud Root cou'd this vain Error grow, That Poverty is Want; and Rest is Woe! Weigh—but let Reason hold th' impartial Scale, When Peace is purpos'd, what does Rank avail? Is it, to live in Noise, that makes us bless'd? Is it, to hear our flatter'd Faults caress'd? Is it, in idle Ease to yawn untaught, And, fatt'ning Folly, pine the famish'd Thought? True Happiness, disdaining all Extreme, Is measur'd Continence—and reas'ning Phlegm. This if your Rustick knows, confess him Great, Beyond the proudest Slave, that guides a State. This if he knows not, shou'd he Empire gain, 'Twere sharpen'd Appetite, for strengthen'd Pain.

"But Wit like his, you fay, by Nature grac'd,
"To charm in Cities, is in Shades misplac'd."

Shines he so bright, within his rural Sphere?
There let him still shine out—and still shine clear!
Superior Genius, there, may gain him Weight
To polish Rudeness, civilize Debate,
Warn the too Easy Heart, excite the Cold,
Impel the Backward, and repulse the Bold;
Compose small Jars, ere Bitterness increase;
And smile the factious Cottage into Peace:
Wipe out each Spot that sades the flow'ry Plains,
And reign, pacifick Father of the Swains,

Remote from Ciries, peaceful Nature dwells;
There, exil'd Justice sits, in silent Cells,
There fruth, in naked Plainness, dares be seen:
There, Pride provokes no Envy,—Shame no Spleen.
There, unsupported Worth can Reverence draw;
And Probity distains the Help of Law;
There, Maids no Caution need!—for Man is just:
There, Love is Tenderness, and Friendship Trust.
There, inselt Flushes tinge the conscious Heart;
And modest Semblance is not, yet, an Art.

How weak a Judge, dear Friend, is human Pride;
To loath known Good, and long for Ills untry'd!
Stretching our greedy Eye to distant Height,
The Blifs, beneath us, lies too low for Sight;
Impatient Thirst of Pow'r but little thinks,
What troubled Waters fev'rish Greatness drinks:
Nor dreams distrustless Vanity, what Cares,
What Weights, what Torments, rash Distinction bears.
Hence, fears no aukward Actor to sustain
His Part of Danger, in those Scenes of Pain:
Yet, out of Character, mistakes his Cue,
And his'd unheard, bawls on—and blunders through.

Or, grant him safe, behind some guardian Skreen, Some Patron's transient Int'rest, push'd between; Grant, that his suppliant Soul can Sense destroy, Can bear Dependence, with unsetting Joy: Yet comes a Time, when all his Props decay, And each dishonour'd Ruin drops away.

Then the bleak Tott'rer shakes, in every Blast; Dreads the dim Future; wishes for the Past: Finds his first Loss; and, with corrected View, Envies the hamble Cot, from which he slew.

And

10

And yet, perhaps, 'twas Heav'n's commission'd Plan, That Passion's restless Whirl shou'd actuate Man; That Pride, by Envy plagu'd, shou'd Pity know; And Wealth, and Joy, take birth, from Want and Woe. Were hush'd Content to stop the busy Swing, The stagnant Virtues all might lose their Spring: One tideless Lake of Life engulph Mankind: And the still Mass corrupt—for Want of Wind.

Th' Almighty, then,—who fees beyond our Senfe, Did various Parts, for various Minds, dispenfe. The meanest Slave, who lives, to hedge and ditch Is useful, in his Rank, to feed the Rich. The Rich, in Retribution, wastes his Store, And streams refreshful Floods, to float the Poor; Nor let the Peer the Peafant's Lot disdain; Each Link, howe'er remote, connects the Chain; Both but two diff'rent Marks, in one great View, Extend God's Landscape, and adorn it, too: And both, without Distinction,—King and Slave, At last lie levell'd, in the filent Grave.

This known, your Choice directs my ready Will.
Say,—Shall your Rustick be a Rustick still?
With Ease augmented, hold his safe Degree?
Live, and grow old, in pangless poverty?
Or, shall he tread the World's great Wild of Hope?
Despise his Danger—and inlarge his Scope?—

Choose for his Wish whate'er his Virtues claim: And tax my Fortune—or restrain bis Aim.

I don't remember ever to have read any thing of this Subject placed in these natural, easy, and, I therefore think, uncommon Lights, and believe you'll allow them to be right Lights: For there are certainly no Cases Cases in the World that require more Judgment and Distinction than charitable ones. And except a casual Distress among those who make a Trade of Begging, such Persons (especially if I see them often and so much in the same Place, as if they were as tenacious of their Stand as others of their Freehold,) move not my Compassion or Notice. They cannot be lower in Spirit, nor (being frequently brought up to it) do they often wish to be higher in Calling, or to change their idle State for a laborious one: But the poor industrious Souls, who are reduced by Sickness or Missortune, or even Mistake, not wilful or persisted in, who sigh in secret, and cannot make known what they suffer; such unhappy Objects are worthy of one's Pains to find out, and relieve.

SATURDAY Morning.

I T is hardly right to trouble either of you, my honoured Correspondents, with an Affair that has vexed me a good deal, and indeed should affect me more than any other Mistress of a Family, for Reasons which will be obvious to you, when I tell you the case. And this (it is so at present with me) I cannot forbear doing.

A pretty genteel young Body, my Polly Barlow, as I call her, having been well recommended, and indeed behaved with great Prudence till this time, is the Occasion.

My dear Mr. B. and the two Ladies agreed with me to take a little Airing in the Coach, and to call in upon Mr. Martin, who had a Present made him for his Menagerie, in which he takes great Delight, of a rare and uncommon Creature, a Native of the East Indies. But just as Sir Jacob was on Horse-back to accompany them, and the Ladies were ready to go, I was taken with a sudden Disorder and Faintishness; so that Lady Davers, who is very

10

es

Countenance, would not let me go with them, tho' my Diforder was going off, and my dear Mr. R. was pleased to excuse me; and just meeting with Mr. Williams as they went to the Coach, they took him with them, to fill up the vacant Place. So I retired to my Closet, and shut myself in.

They had asked Mr. H. to go with them, for Company to Sir Jacob; but he (on purpose, as I believe, by what followed) could not be found, when they set out: So they supposed he was upon some Ramble with Mr. Colbrand his great Favourite.

I was writing to you, being pretty well recover'd, when I heard Polly, as I supposed, and as it prov'd, come into my Apartment; and down she sar, and sung a little Catch, and cry'd Hem! twice; and presently I heard two Voices. But suspecting nothing, I wrote on, till I heard a kind of Russing and Struggling, and Polly's Voice crying, Fie.—

How can you do fo !---Pray, Sir.

This alarm'd me much, because we have such orderly Folks about us; and I look'd thro' the Keyhole, and to my Surprise and Concern, saw Mr. H.—foolish Gentleman!—taking Liberties with Polly, that neither became him to offer, nor, more soolish Girl! her to suffer. And having Reason to think, that this was not their first Interview and Freedom—and the Girl sometimes encouragingly laughing as, at other times, inconsistently struggling and complaining, in an Accent that was too tender for the Occasion, I forc'd a faint Cough. This stighted them both: Mr. H. swore, and said, who can that be?—Your Lady's gone with them, i'n't she?

I believe so! I hope so! said the silly Girl—Yet that was like her Voice!—Me'm, are you in your Closet, Me'm?—said she, coming up to the Door, Mr. H. standing like a poor Thief, half behind the Window-curtains, till he knew whether it was I.

I open'd

I open'd the Door; away fneak'd Mr. H. and fhe leap'd with Surprise, not hoping to find me there, tho' she ask'd the Question.

I thought -Indeed - Me'm -I thought you

were gone out.

It is plain you did, Polly --- Go and thut the

Chamber-door, and come to me again.

She did, but trembled, and was so full of Confusion, that I pity'd the poor Creature, and hardly knew how to speak to her, or what to say.—For my Compassion got the Upper-hand of my Resentment; and as she stood quaking and trembling, and looking on the Ground, with a Countenance I cannot describe, I now and then cast my Eye upon her, and was as often forced to put my Handkerchief to it.

At last I said, How long have these Freedoms past,

Poliy, between you and Mr. H.?

She faid never a Word.

I am loth to be cenforious, Polly: But 'tis too plain, that Mr. H. would not have followed you into my Chamber if he had not met you at other Places before.

Still the poor Girl faid never a Word.

Little did I expect, Polly, that you would have shewn so much Imprudence. You have had Instances of the vile Arts of Men against poor Maidens: Have you any Notion, that Mr. H. intends to do honourably by you?

Me'm ___ Me'm ___ I believe ___ I hope ___

I dare fay, Mr. H. would not do otherwife.

So much the worse, that you believe so, if you have not very good Reason for your Belief.—Does he pretend he will marry you, Polly?

She was illent.

200

*

r

,

C

d

Tell me, Polly, if he does?

He fays, he will do honourably by me.

But you know there is but one Word necessary to explain that other precious Word Honour, in this Case. It is Matrimony. That Word is as soon spoken as

Q 5

any other, and if he means it, he will not be fly to Speak it.

She was filent.

Tell me, Polly, (for I am really greatly concern'd for you) what you think yourfelf: Do you hope he will marry you?

She was filent.

Do, good Polly, I hope I may call you good yet! -answer me.

Pray, Madam! and she wept, and turned from me, to the Wainscot-Pray, Madam, excuse me.

But, indeed, Polly, I cannot excuse you. You are under my Protection. I was once in as dangerous a Situation as you can be in. And I did not escape it, Child, by the Language and Conduct I heard from you.

Language and Conduct, Me'm!

Yes, Polly, Language and Conduct. For you have heard my Story, no doubt: All the World has. And do you think, if I had fat me down in my Lady's Bed-chamber, and fung a Song, and hem'd twice, and Mr. B. had come to me, upon that Signal, (for fuch I doubt it was) and I had kept my Place, and fuffer'd myfelf to be rumpled, and only, in a foft Voice, and with an encouraging Laugh, cry'd, How can you do fo? that I should have been what I am?

Me'm, I dare fay, my Lord (fo all the Servants call him, and his Aunt often, when the puts Jackey

to it) means no Hurt.

No Hurt, Polly! What, and make you cry Fie; -Or do you intend to trust your Honour to his Mercy, rather than to your own Discretion?

I hope not, Me'm!

I hope not too, Polly! - But you know he was free enough with you, to make you fay, Fie! --- And what might have been the Cafe, who knows? had I not coughed on purpose; unwilling, for your fake, Polly, to find Matters so bad as I feared, and that you would have been led beyond what was reputable.

Repu-

He

Reputable, Me'm!

Yes, Polly reputable: I am forry you oblige me to speak so plain. But your Good requires it. Inftead of flying from him, you not only laughed all the time you cried out, Fie! and How can you do fo? but had no other care than to fee if any-body heard you; and you observe how he slid away, like a guilty Creature, as foon as I open'd my Door-Do these Things look well, Polly? Do you think they do? -And if you hope to emulate my good Fortune, do you think this is the Way?

I wish, Me'm, I had never seen Mr. H. For nobody will look upon me, if I lose your Favour!

It will still, Polly, (and I took her Hand, with a kind Look) be in your own Power to keep it; and I will not mention this Matter, if you make me your Friend, and tell me all that has pass'd.

Again the wept, and was filent.

This made me more uneasy. Don't think, Polly, faid I, that I would envy any other Person's Preserment, when I have been so much exalted myself. If Mr. H. has talked to you of Marriage, tell me.

No, Me'm, I can't say he has yet. Yet, Polly! Then he never will. For when Men do talk of it, they don't always mean it: But whenever they mean it, how can they confirm a doubting Maiden, without mentioning it: But, alas, alas for you, poor Polly ! - The Freedoms you have permitted to him, no doubt, previous to those I heard, and which would have been greater possibly, had I not surprized you with my Cough, shew too well, that he need not make any Promises to you.

Indeed, Me'm-Indeed, faid the, fobbing, I might be too little upon my Guard; but I would not have

done any Ill for the World.

I hope you would not, Polly; but if you fuffer these Freedoms, you can't tell what you'd have permitted-Tell me, do you love Mr. H.?

He is a very good-humour'd Gentleman, Madam,

and is not proud.

No, 'tis not his Business to be proud, when he hopes to humble you—Humble you, indeed! Beneath the lowest Person of your Sex, that is honest.

I hope-

You hope! interrupted I—You hope too much; and I fear a great deal for you, because you fear so little for yourself—But tell me, How often have you been in private together?

In private, Me'm-I don't know what your

Ladyfhip calls private!

Why that is private, Polly, when, as just now, you neither imagined nor intended any-body should

fee you.

She was filent; and I saw, by this poor Girl, how true Lovers are to their Secret, tho' perhaps, their Ruin depends upon keeping it. But it behoved me, on more Accounts than it would any-body else, as I hinted before, to examine this Matter narrowly; because, if Mr. H. should marry her, it would have been laid upon Mr. R.'s Example.—And if Polly should be ruin'd, it would be a sad Thing; and People would have said, Ay, she could take Care enough of herself; but none at all of her Servant: Her Waiting-maid had a much more remiss Mistress, than Pamela found, or the Matter would not have been thus.

Well, Polly, I see, continued I, that you will not speak out to me. You may have several Reasons for it, possibly, the rot one good one. But as soon as Lady Davers comes in, who has a great Concern in this Matter, as well as Lord Davers, and are answerable to Lord H. in a Matter of so much Importance as this, I will leave it to her Ladyship's Consideration, and shall no more concern myself to ask you Questions about it—For then I must take her Ladyship's Directions, and part with you, to be sure.

The poor Girl, frighted at this, (for every-body fears-Lady Davers) wrung her Hands, and begg'd, for God's Sake, I would not acquaint Lady Davers with it.

But how can I help it?—Must I not connive at your Proceedings, if I do not? You are no Fool, Polly, in other Cases. Tell me, how is it possible for me, in my Situation to avoid it?

I will tell your Ladyship the whole Truth; indeed I will—if you will not tell Lady Davers. I am ready to fink at the Thoughts of Lady Davers's. knowing any-thing of this.

This look'd fadly. I pity'd her, but yet was angry in my Mind; for I faw too plainly, that her Conduct could not bear a Scrutiny, not even in her own Opinion, poor Creature!

I faid, Make me acquainted with the whole.

Will your Ladyship promise-

t

,

S

- c

-

u

y -

ne

I'll promise nothing, Polly.—When I have heard all you think proper to say, I will do what besits me to do; but with as much Tenderness as I can for you—and that's all you ought to expect me to promise.

Why then, Madam,—But how can I speak it?
—I can speak sooner to any-body, than to Lady
Davers and you, Madam—For her Ladyship's
Passion, and your Ladyship's Virtue—How shall !?
—And then she threw herself at my Feet, and hid
her Face with her Apron.

I was in Agonies for her almost; I wept over her; I raised her up, and said, Tell me all—You cannot tell me worse than I apprehend, nor, I hope, so bad! O Polly, tell me soon—For you give me great Pain—

And my Back, with Grief and Compassion for the poor Girl, was ready to open, as it seem'd to me—In my former Distresses I have been overcome by Fainting next to Death and was deprived of Sense for some Moments—But else I imagine, I must have felt some such affecting Sensations, as the unhappy Girl's Case gave me. Then,

Then, Madam, I own, faid the, I have been too

faulty.

As how!—As what!—In what Way!—How faulty?—ask'd I, as quick as Thought: You are not ruin'd, are you?—Tell me, Polly?

No, Madam, but-

But what ?- Say, but what?

I had confented—

To what?

To his Propofals, Madam.

What Propofals?

Why, Madam, I was to live with Mr. H.

I understand you too well—But is it too late to break so wretched a Bargain?—Have you already made a Sacrifice of your Honour?

No, Madam; but I have given it under my Hand. Under your Hand!—Ah! Polly, it is well if you have not given it under your Heart too. But what Foolishness is this! What Consideration has he made you?

He has given it under his Hand, that he will always love me, and when his Lordship's Father

dies, he will own me.

What Foolishness is this on both Sides !- But are

you willing to be released from this Bargain?

Indeed I am, Madam, and I told him so Yesterday. But, he says, he will sue me, and ruin me, if I don't stand to it.

You are ruin'd, if you do!—And I wish—But tell me, Polly, Are you not ruin'd as it is?

Indeed I am not, Madam.

I doubt then, you were upon the Brink of it, had not this providential Indisposition kept me at home—You met, I suppose, to conclude your shocking Bargain.—O poor unhappy Girl!—But let me see what he has given under his Hand?

He has 'em both, Madam, to be drawn up fair, and in a strong Hand, that shall be like a Record.

6 Could

Could I have thought, Miss, that a Girl of Nineteen could be so ignorant in a Point so important, when in every-thing else she has shewn no Instances like this stupid Folly?

Has he given you Money?

Yes, Madam, he gave me—he gave me—a Note. Here it is. He fays any-body will give me Money for it.

And this was a Bank Note of 50%. which she pul-

led out of her Stays.

I instantly thought of those Lines of Cowley which my dear Lady several Times made me read to her; tho' these supposed an infinitely more excusable Case.—Marriage for Money.

Take Heed, take Heed, thou lovely Maid!

Nor be by glitt'ring I'lls betray'd!

Thyself for Money! O let no Man know

The Price of Beauty fall'n so low!

What Dangers ought'st thou not to dread,

When Love, that's blind, is by blind Fortune led?

The Refult was, he was to fettle 100/. a Year upon her and hers, poor, poor Girl—And was to own her, as he calls it, (but as Wife or Miftress, she stipulated not) when his Father died, and he came into the Title and Estate.

I told her, it was impossible for me to conceal the Matter from Lady Davers, if she would not, by her Promises to be governed intirely by me, and to abandon all Thoughts of Mr. H. give me room to conclude, that the wicked Bargain was at an End.

And to keep the poor Creature in some Spirits, and to enable her to look up, and to be more easy under my Direction, I blamed him more than I did her: Tho' considering what Virtue requires of a Woman, and Custom has made shameless in a Man, I think the poor Girl inexcusable, and shall not be easy while she is about me. For she is more to blame, because,

because, of the two, she has more Wit than the Man.

But what can I do, thought I? If I put her away 'twill be to throw her directly into his Hands. He won't stay here long; and she may see her Folly. But yet her Eyes were open: she knew what she had to trust to—And by their wicked Beginning, and her encouraging Repulses, I doubt she would have been utterly ruined that very Day.

I knew the Rage Lady Davers would be in with both. So this was another Embarrais. And yet should my good Intentions be frustrated, and they should conclude their vile Bargain, and it appear'd that I knew of it, but would not acquaint her, then should I have been more blamed than any Mistress

of a Family, circumstanced as I am.

Upon the whole, As to the Girl, I refolved to comfort her as well as I could, till I had gained her Confidence, that my Advice might have the more Weight with her, and, by Degrees, be the more likely to reclaim her: For, poor Soul! there would be an End of her Reputation, the most precious of all Jewels, the Moment the Matter was known; and that would be a fad Thing.

And as to the Man, I thought it best to take Courage (and you, that know me, will say, I must have a good deal more than usual) to talk to Mr.

H. on this Subject.

And the poor Body confenting I should, and, with great Protestations, declaring her Sorrow and Repentance, begging to get her Note of Hand again, on which she laid a foolish Stress, and desiring me to give him back his Note of 50l. I went down to find him.

He shunn'd me, as a Thief would a Constable at the Head of a Hue-and-cry. As I enter'd one Place or Room, he went into another, looking with conscious Guilt, but yet confidently humming a Tune. At last I fixed him speaking to Rachel, bidding her tell Pally, he wanted to send a Message by her to her Lady. By which I doubted not, he was desirous to know what she had owned, in order to govern him-self accordingly.

His Back was towards me; and I faid, Mr. H.

here I am myself, to take your Commands.

He gave a Caper half a Yard high—Madam, I wanted—I wanted to speak to—I would have spoken with—

You wanted to fend Polly to me, perhaps, Mr. H. to ask if I would take a little Walk with you in the Garden.

Very true, Madam!—Very true, indeed!—You have guess'd the Matter.—I thought it was Pity, this fine Day, as every-body was taking an Airing.—

Well then, Sir, please to lead the Way, and I'll

attend you.

Yet I fancy, Madam, the Wind is a little too high for you—Won't you eatch Cold!

No, never fear, Mr. H. I am not afraid of a little

Air.

1

3

It

.

h

2-

n.

ne

10

at

ce

11-

ne.

At

I will attend you presently, Madam: You'll be in the great Gravel Walk, or on the Terras-I'll wait

upen you in an instant.

I had the Courage to take hold of his Arm, as if I had like to have flipt; for, thought I, thou shalt not see the Girl, worthy Friend, till I have talk'd to thee a little, if thou doit then—Excuse me, Mr. H.—I hope I have not hurt my Foot—I must lean upon you.

Will you be pleafed, Madam, to have a Chair? I fear you have sprained your Foot.—Shall I help

you to a Chair?

No, no, Sir, I shall walk it off, if I hold by you.

So he had no Excuse to leave me, and we proceeded into the Garden. But never did any-thing look so filly—So like a Foolish Fellow, as his Aunt calls

ealls him. He look'd, if possible, half a dozen Ways at once, hem'd, cough'd, wriggled about, turn'd his Head behind him every-now-and then, and started half a dozen filly Subjects, in hopes to hinder me from speaking.

I appear'd, I believe, under some Concern how to begin with him; for he would have it I was not very well, and begg'd he might step in one Minute

to defire Mrs. Fervis to attend me.

So I refolved to begin with him; left I should lose the Opportunity, seeing my Eel so very slippery. And placing myself on the Seat at the upper End of the Gravel Walk, I asked him to sit down. He declined it, and would wait upon me presently, he said, and seemed going. So I began—It is easy for me, Mr. H. to penetrate the Reason why you are so willing to leave me: But 'tis for your swn Sake, that I desire you to hear me, that no Mattchief may ensite among Friends and Relations, on an Occasion to which you are no Stranger.

Laud, Madam, What can you mean?—Surely, Madam, you don't think amifs of a little innocent

Liberty or fo!

Mr. H. replied I, I want not any Evidence of your inhospitable Designs upon a poor unwary young Creature, whom your Birth and Quality have found

it too eafy a Task to influence.

Inhospitable Designs, Madam!—A harsh Word, by Gad—You very nice Ladies cannot admit of the least Freedom in the World!—Why, Madam, I have kis'd a Lady's Woman before now, in a civil Way or so, and never was call'd to an Account for it, as a Breach of Hospitality.

'Tis not for me, Mr. H. to proceed to very nice Particulars with a Gentleman who can act as you have done, by a poor Girl, that could not have had the Assurance to look up to a Man of your Quality, had you not levell'd all Distinction between you, in

order

order to level the weak Creature to the common Dirt of the Highway. I must tell you that the poor Girl heartily repents of her Folly; and, to shew you, that it signifies nothing to deny it, she begs you will give her back the Note of her Hand you have extorted from her Foolishness; and I hope you'll be so much of a Gentleman, as not to keep in your Power such a Testimony of the Weakness of any of the Sex.

Has she told you that, Madam! — Why, maybe—indeed—I can't but say—Truly it mayn't look so well to you, Madam: But young Folks will have Frolicks——It was nothing but a Frolick——Let me

be banged, if it was!

-

d

11

1

Be pleased then, Sir, to give up her Note to me to return to her—Reputation should not be frolick'd with, Sir; especially that of a poor Girl, who has

nothing elfe to depend upon.

I'll give it to her mytelf, if you please, Madam, and laugh at her into the Bargain. Why, 'tis comical enough, if the little Pug thought I was in earnest. I must have a Laugh or two at her, Madam, when I give it her up.

Since 'tis but a Frolick, Mr. H. you won't take it amiss, that when we are set down to Supper, we call Polly in, and demand a Sight of per Note, and that

will make every one merry as well as you.

Cot so, Madam, that mayn't be so well neither!

For, perhaps, they will be apt to think it is in earnest; when, as I hope to live, 'tis ou, a fest:

Nothing in the World elfe, upon Honour!

I put on then a still more serious Air—As you hope to live, say you, Mr. H.!—and upon your internour!—How sear you not an instant Punishment for this Appeal! And what is the Honour you swear by?—Take that, and answer me, Sir; Do Gentlemen give away Bank Notes for Frolicks, and for mere fests, and nothing in the World else!—I am forry to be obliged to deal thus with you. But I thought I was

was talking to a Gentleman who would not forfeit his Veracity; and that in so solemn an Instance as this!

He look'd like a Man thunder-struck. His Face was distorted, and his Head seem'd to turn about upon his Neck, like a Weathercock in a Hurricane, to all Points of the Compass; his Hands clench'd as in a Passion, and yet Shame and Confusion struggling in

every Limb and Feature.

At last he said, I am confoundedly betray'd. But if I am exposed to my Uncle and Aunt (for the Wretch thought of nobody but himself) I am undone, and shall never be able to look them in the Face. 'Tis true, I had a Design upon her; and since she has betray'd me, I think I may say, that she was as willing, almost, as I.

Ungenerous, contemptible Wretch, thought I!— But such of our Sex as can thus give up their Virtue, ought to expect no better: For he that sticks not at one bad Action, will not scruple another to vindicate himself: And so, Devil-like, become the

Tempter, and the Accuser too!

But if you will be so good, said he, with Hands uplifted, as to take no Notice of this to my Uncle, and especially to my Aunt and Mr. B. I swear to you, I never will think of her as long as I live.

And you'll bind this Promife, will you, Sir? by

your Honour, and as you hope to live!

Dear, good Madam, forgive me, I befeech you; Don't be fo fevere upon me. By all that's—

Don't swear, Mr. H. but as an Earnest that I may believe you, give me back the Girl's foolish Note, that, tho' 'tis of no Signification, she may not have that to witness to her Folly.

He took out his Pocket book: There it is, Madam!—And I beg you'll forgive this Attempt. I see I ought not to have made it. I doubt it was a Breach of the Laws of Hospitality, as you say. But to make

It known, will only expose me, and it can do no Good; and Mr. B. will perhaps resent it, and my Aunt will never let me hear the last of it, nor my Uncle neither—And I shall be sent to travel again—And (added the poor Creature) I was once in a Storm, and the crossing the Sea again, would be Death to me.

What a Wretch art thou, thought I!—What could fuch an one as thou find to fay to a poor Creature that, if put in the Scale against Considerations of Virtue, should make the latter kick the Beam?—Poor, poor Polly Barlow! thou art sunk indeed! Too low for Excuse, and almost beneath

Pity!

5

0

y

5

ay

e,

ve

2 -

ee

ch

ke

it

I told him, If I could observe, that nothing pass'd between them, that should lay me under a Necessity of revealing the Matter, I should not be forward to expose him, nor the Maiden either: But that he must, in his own Judgment, excuse me, if I made every body acquainted with it, if I were to see the Correspondence between them likely to be renewed or carried on: For, added I, in that Case, I should owe it to myself, to Mr. B. to Lord and Lady Davers, and to you, and the unhappy Body too, to do so.

He would needs drop down on one Knee to promise this; and with a thousand Acknowlegements, left me, to find Mr. Colbrand, in order to ride to

meet the Coach on its Return.

I went in, and gave the foolish Note to the filly Girl, which she received eagerly, and immediately burnt; and I told her, I would not suffer her to come near me but as little as possible, when I was in Company, while Mr. H. staid; but consign'd her intirely to the Care of Mrs. Fervis, to whom only, I said, I would hint the Matter, as tenderly as I could: And for this, I added, I had more Reasons than one; First, to give her the Benefit of a good Gentlewoman's Advice, to which I had myself formerly been

been beholden, and from whom I concealed nothing: Next, To keep out of Mr. H.'s Way: And lastly, That I might have an Opportunity, from Mrs. Fervis's Opinion, to judge of the Sincerity of her Repentance: For, Polly, said I, you must imagine, so regular and uniform as all our Family is, and so good as I thought all the People about me were, that I could not suspect, that she, the Duties of whose Place made her nearest to my Person, was the farthest from what I wish'd.

I have set this Matter so strongly before her, and Mrs. Jervis has so well seconded me, that I hope the best; for the Grief the poor Creature carries in her Looks, and expresses in her Words, cannot be described; frequently accusing herself with Tears, saying often to Mrs. Jervis, She is not worthy to stand in the Presence of a Mistress, whose Example she has made so bad an Use of, and whose Lessons she had so ill followed.

I am fadly troubled at this Matter however; but I take great Comfort in reflecting, that my sudden Indisposition look'd like a providential Thing, which may save one poor Soul, and be a seasonable Warn-

ing to her, as long as the lives.

Mean time I must observe, that at Supper last Night, Mr. H. looked abject, and mean, and like a poor Thief, as I thought; and (conscious of his disappointed Folly, tho' I seldom glanc'd my Eye upon him) had less to say for himself than ever.

And once my Lady Davers laughing, faid, I think in my Heart, my Nephew looks more foolish every

time I fee him, than the laft.

He stole a Look at me, and blush'd; and my Lord said, Jackey has some Grace!——He blushes!—Hold up thy Head, Nephew!—Hast thou nothing at all to say for thysels?

Sir Jacob said, A Blush becomes a young Gentleman;—I never saw one before tho', in Mr. H.—What's the Matter, Sir?

Only,

Only, faid Lady Davers, his Skin or his Confcience, is mended, that's all.

Thank you, Madam, was all he faid, bowing to his Aunt, and affecting a careless, yet confused Air,

as if he whifper'd a Whiftle.

.

ıt

h

ift

a

if-

on

nk

ery

my

es!

ning

en-

1.-

mly,

O Wretch! thought I, see what it is to have a condemning Conscience; while every innocent Perfon looks round, easy, smiling, and erect!—But yet it was not the Shame of a bad Action, I doubt, but being discover'd and disappointed, that gave him this Consusion of Face.

What a fad Thing it is for a Person to be guilty of such Actions, as shall put it into the Power of another, even by a Look, to mortify him! And if poor Souls can be thus abjectly struck at such a Discovery as this, by a Fellow Creature, how much they appear before an unerring and omniscient Judge, with a Conscience standing in the Place of a thousand Witnesse? and calling in vain upon the Mountains to fall upon them, and the Hills to cover them!

How ferious this Subject makes one!

SATURDAY Evening.

I Am just retir'd from a kind of satiguing Service; for who should come hither to dine with Mr. B. but that sad Rake Sir Charles Hargrave, and Mr. Walgrave, Mr. Sedley, and Mr. Floyd, three as bad as himself; inseparable Companions, whose whole Delight, and that avowedly, is Drinking, and Hunting, and Lewdness; but otherwise, Gentlemen of Wit, and large Estates. Three of them broke in open us, at the * Hall, on the happiest Day of my Life, to our great Regret; and they had been long threatening to make this Visit, in order to see me, as they told Mr. B.

They

They whipt out two Bottles of Champaigne instantly, for a Whet, as they called it; and went to view the Stud, and the Kennel, and then took a Walk in the Garden till Dinner was ready; my Lord Davers, Mr. H. and Sir Jacob, as well as Mr. B. (for they are all acquainted) accompanying them.

Sir Charles, it feems, as Lord Davers told me afterwards, faid, He long'd to fee Mrs. B. She was the Talk where-ever he went, and he had conceiv'd

a high Opinion of her before-hand.

Lord Davers faid, I defy you, Gentlemen, to think so highly of her as she deserves, take Mind and Person together.

Mr. Floyd faid, he never faw any Woman yet, who came up to what he expected, where Fame had

been lavish in her Praise.

But how, Brother Baronet, said Sir Charles to Sir Jacob, came you to be reconcil'd to her? ____ I heard

that you would never own her.

Oons, Man, faid Sir Jacob, I was taken in—I was, by my Soul!—They contriv'd to clap her upon me, as Lady Jenny C. and pretended they'd keep t'other out of my Sight; and I was plaguily bit, and forced to get off as well as I could.

That was a Bite indeed, faid Mr. Walgrave: And fo you fell a praifing Lady Jenny, I warrant, to the

Skies.

Ye—s,—by my Soul; (drawling out the affirmative Monofyllable) I was used most scurvily: 'Faith I was. I bear 'em a Grudge for it still, I can tell 'em that;—for I have hardly been able to hold up my Head like a Man ever since—but am forc'd to sneak about, and go and come, and do as they bid me. By my Troth, I never was so manageable in my Life.

Your Herefordsbire Neighbours, Sir Jacob, said Mr. Sedley, with an Oath, will rejoice to hear this; for the whole County there cannot manage you.

I'm

18

I'm quite cow'd now, by my Soul, as you will fee by-and-by: Nay for that Matter, if you can fet Mrs. B. a talking, there's ne'er a Puppy of you all will care to open your Lips, except to fay as the fays.

Never fear, old Boy, said Sir Charles, we'll bear our Parts in Conversation. I never saw the Woman yet who could give me either Awe or Love for fix Minutes together. What think you, Mr. B.? Have you any Notion, that your Lady will have fo much Power over us?

I think, Sir Charles, I have one of the finest Women in England; but I neither expect, nor defire,

you Rakes should see her with my Eyes.

You know, if I have a Mind to love her, and make court to her too, Mr. B. I will: And I am half in love with her already, aitho' I have not feen her.

They came in when Dinner was near ready, and the four Gentlemen took each a large Bumper of Old-Hock for another Whet.

The Countefs, Lady Davers, and I, came down together. The Gentlemen knew our two noble Ladies, and were known to them in Person, as well as by Character. Mr. B. in his usual kind and encouraging Manner, took my Hand, and presented the four Gentlemen to me, each by his Name. Sir Charles faid, pretty bluntly, That he hoped he was more welcome to me now, than the last Time he was under the same Roof with me; for he had been told fince, that that was our happy Day.

I faid, Mr. B.'s Friends were always welcome

to me.

111

'Tis well, Madam, faid Mr. Sedley, we did not know how it was. We should have quarter'd ourtelves upon Mr. B. for a Week together, and kept him up Day and Night.

I thought this Speech deserved no Answer, especially as they were Gentlemen who wanted no Countenance, and address'd myself to Lord Davers, who VOL. III.

is always kindly making court to me: I hope, my good Lord, you find yourself quite recover'd of your Head-ach?—(of which he complained at Breakfast.)

I thank you, my dear Sifter, pretty well.

I was telling Sir Charles, and the other Gentlemen, Niece, faid Sir Jacob, how I was cheated here, when

I came first, with a Lady Fenny.

It was a very lucky Cheat for me, Sir Jacob; for it gave you a Prepoffession in my Favour, under so advantageous a Character, that I could never have expected otherwise.

I wish, said the Countess, my Daughter, for whom Sir Jacob took you, had Mrs. B.'s Qualities

to boaft of.

How am I obliged to your Ladyship's Goodness, returned I, when you treat me even with greater Indulgence than you use to so beloved a Daughter!

Nay, now you talk of treating, faid Sir Charles, when, Ladies, will you treat our Sex with the Politeness which you shew to one another?

When your Sex deserve it, Sir Charles, answer'd

Lady Davers.

Who is to be judge of that, said Mr. Walgrave. Not the Gentlemen, I hope, reply'd my Lady. Well then, Mrs. B. said Sir Charles, we bespeak your good Opinion of us; for you have ours.

I am oblig'd to you, Gentlemen; but I must be more cautious in declaring mine, lest it should be thought I am influenc'd by your kind, and perhaps

too hasty, Opinions of me.

Sir Charles swore they had seen enough of me the Moment I entered the Parlour, and heard enough the Moment I opened my Lips, to answer for their Opinions of me.

I faid, I made no Doubt, when they had as good a Subject to expatiate upon, as I had, in the Pleasure before me, of seeing so many agreeable Friends of

Mr.

Mr. B.'s, they would maintain the Title they claim'd

of every one's good Opinion.

This, said Sir Jacob, is binding you over, Gentlemen, to your good Behaviour.—You must know, my Niece never shoots slying, as you do.

The Gentlemen laugh'd: Is it shooting flying, Sir Jacob, return'd Sir Charles, to praise that Lady?

Ads-bud, I did not think of that.

O Sir Jacob, said the Countess, you need not be at a Fault;—for a good Sportsman always hits his Mark, slying or not: And the Gentlemen had so fair an one, that they could not well miss it.

You are fairly help'd over the Stile, Sir Jacob, faid

Mr. Flord.

And indeed I wanted it; though I limp'd like a Puppy before I was lame. One can't think of every-thing, as one used to do at your Time of Life, Gentlemen.

This flippant Stuff was all that pass'd, which I can recite; for the rest, at Table, and after Dinner, was too polite by half for me: Such as, the Quantity of Wine each Man could carry off, that was the Phrase; Dogs, Horses, Hunting, Racing, Cockfighting, and all accompanied with Swearing, and Curfing, and that in good Humour, and out of Wantonness (the least excusable and most profligate Sort of Swearing and Curfing of all); loud Laughing, with a little touching now-and-then on the Borders of Sir Simon's beloved Subject, to try if they could make a Lady shew she understood their Hints by her Blushes *; a certain Indication, that those who seek a Blush in others, are past it themselves, and by their turning it into Ridicule when they find it in their Friends, that they would not for the World have it imputed to them; talking three or four at once, R 2 and

^{*} See Vol. II. p. 111.

and as loud as if they were in the Field pursuing their Game, at a Quarter of a Mile's Distance from one-another.

These were the Subjects, and this the Entertainment, which held the Ladies and me for one Hour after a tedious Dinner; when we retired, and glad we were to do so. The Gentlemen lik'd the Wine so well, that we had the Felicity to drink Tea and Cossee by ourselves; only Mr. B. (upon our inviting the Gentlemen to partake with us), sliding in for a sew Minutes to tell us, they would slick by what they had, and taking a Dish of Cossee with us.

I should not omit one Observation: That Sir Jacob, when they were gone, said, They were pure Company: And Mr. H. That he never was so delighted in his born Days—While the two Ladies put up their Prayers, that they might never have such an ther Entertainment. And being encouraged by their Declaration, I presumed to join in the same

Petition.

they must be so because I could neither like nor underst and them. Yet, if their Conversation had much Wit in it, I should think my Ladies would have found it out.

However, this they did find out, and agree in, that these Gentlemen were of the true modern Cast of Libertines and Foxhunters, and, indifferently as they liked them, could not be easily out-done by any of the same Stamp in England.

God defend my dear Miss Darnford, and every worthy fingle Lady, from such a Husband, as a

Gentleman of this Character would make!

I wonder really how Mr. B who chooses not this Sort of Conversation, and always (whatever Faults he had besides) was a fiber Gentleman, can six for Hours so easy and cheerful in it; and yet he never says much when they are in their high Delight.

When

When all's done, Miss, there are very unpleasant Things, which Persons in genteel Life are forced to put up with, as well as those in lower; and were the one to be balanced with the other, the Difference, as to true Happiness, would not perhaps be so great, as People in the latter imagine;—if it did not turn in their Favour.

The Gentlemen, permit me to add, went away very merry, to ride ten Miles by Owl-light; for they would not accept of Eeds here. They had two French Horns with them, and gave us a Blaft, or Flourish of two, at going off. Each had a Servant belides: But the Way they were in would have given me more Concern than it did, had they been related to Mr. B. and less used to it. And indeed it is a Happinels, that fuch Gentlemen take no more Care, than they generally do, to interest any body intimately, in their Healths and Prefervation; for thefe are all fingle Men. Nor is the Public, any more than the Private, under any Necessity to be much concern'd about them; for let fuch Persons go when they will, if they continue fingle, their next Heir cannot well be a worse Commonwealth's man; and there is a great Chance he may be better.

You know I end my Saturdays seriously. And this, to what I have already said, makes me add, that I cannot express how much I am, my dear

Miss Darnford,

-

20

2

1

1

f

1

A

Your faithful and affectionate,

P. B.

LETTER XXXVIII.

From Mrs. B. to Miss Darnford. In Answer to Letters XXXV. and XXXVI.

My dear Miss Darnford,

I Skip over the little Transactions of several Days, to let you know how much you rejoice me, in telling me * Sir Simon has been so kind as to comply with my Wishes. Both your most agreeable Letters came to my Hand together, and I thank you a hundred Times for them; and I thank your dear Mamma, and Sir Simon too, for the Pleasure they have given me in this obliging Permission. How happy shall we be together!—But how long will you be permitted to stay, tho? All the Winter, I hope:
—And then, when that is over, let us set out together, if God shall spare us, directly for Lincolnshire; and so pass most of the Summer likewise in each other's Company. What a sweet Thought is this! Let me indulge it a little while.

Mr. B. read your Letters, and fays, You are a charming young Lady, and furpass yourself in every Letter. I told him, that he was more interested in the Pleasure I took in this Favour of Sir Simon's, than he imagin'd. As how, my Dear? said he. A plain Case, Sir, reply'd I: For endeavouring to improve myself by Miss Darnford's Conversation and Behaviour, I shall every Day be more worthy of your Favour. He kindly would have it, that nobody, no, not Miss Darnford herself, excell'd me.

'Tis right, you know, Miss, that Mr. B. should think so; tho' I must know nothing at all, if I was not sensible how inferior I am to my dear Miss Darn-

ford:

ford: And yet when I look abroad now-and-then, I could be a proud Slut, if I would, and not yield the Palm to many others.—But don't let every-body know how vain I am. Yet they may, too, if they take in, at the fame time, the Grounds of my Vanity; for they must then allow, that I have no small Reason to be proud, in having so happily won the Favour of two such Judges, as Mr. B. and Miss Darnsord, and have the good Fortune, likewise, to rejoice in that of Lady Davers, and the Countess of C.

Well, my dear Miss,

SUNDAY

I S past and gone, as happily as the last; the two Ladies, and, at their earnest Request, Sir Jacob bearing us Company, in the Evening Part. My Polly was there Morning and Evening, with her Heart broken almost, poor Girl!-I put her in a Corner of my Closet, because her Concern should not be minded. Mrs. Fervis gives me great Hopes of her: -And the feems to abhor the Thoughts of Mr. H.—But as there proves to be so little of real Love in her Heart, (though even, if there had, she would have been without Excuse) is she not the wickeder by half for that, Miss? To consent, and take Earnest, as I may say, to live with a Man, who did not pretend to marry her !——How inexcusable this !- What a Frailty !- Yet so honeftly descended, so modest in Appearance, and an Example fo much better-forgive me to fay-before her-Dear, dear, how could it be!

Sir Jacob was much pleased with our Family Order, and said, 'Twas no wonder I kept so good myself, that was his Word, and made others so; and he was of Opinion that the sour Rakes (for he run on, how much they admir'd me) would be converted,

cheerful and easy every one, as well as myself, was under it. He said, when he came home, he thought he must take such a Method himself in his hamily; for, he believed, it would make not only better Masters and Mistresses, but better Children, and better Servants too. But, poor Gentleman! he has, I doubt, a great deal to mend in himself, before he can begin such a Practice with Esseacy in his Family.

MONDAY.

In the Asternoon, Sir faces took his Leave of us, highly satisfied with us both, and particularly—fo he said—with me; and promised that my two Cousins, as he called his Daughters, and his Sister, an old Maiden Lady, if they went to Town this Winter, should visit me, and be improved by me; that was his Word. Mr. B. accompanied him some Miles on his Journey, and the two Ladies, and Lord Davers, and I took an Airing in the Coach.

Mr. B. was fo kind, as to tell me, when he came home, with a Whisper, that Miss Goodwin presented

her Duty to me.

I have got a Multitude of fine Things for the dear little Creature, and Mr. B. promises to give me a Dairy-house Breakfast, when our Guests are gone.

I inclose the History of this little Charmer, by Mr. B.'s Consent, since you are to do us the Honour, as he (as well as I) pleases himself, to be one of our Family—But keep it to yourself, whatever you do. I am Guaranty, that you will; and have put it in a separate Paper, that you may burn it as soon as you have read it.—For I shall want your Advice, it may be, on this Subject, having a great Desire to get this Child into my Possession; and yet Lady Davers has

has given me an * Hint, that dwells a little with me. When I have the Pleafure I hope for, I will lay all before you, and be determined and proceed, as far as I have Power, by you. You, my good Father and Mother, have feen the Story in my former Papers.

TUESDAY.

OU must know, I pass over the Days thus fwiftly, not that I could not fill them up with Writing, as ample as I have done the former: But intending only to give you a general Idea of our Way of Life and Conversation, and having gone thro' a Whole Week and more, you will be able from what I have recited, to form a Judgment how it is with us, one Day with another.—As for Example, Now and-then neighbourly Vifits received and paid. Needle-work between whiles. Mufick. Cards fometimes, tho' I don't love them -One more benevolent Round-Improving Conversations with my dear Mr. B. and my two good Ladies-A Lesson from him, when alone, either in French or Latin; A new Pauper Case or two-A Visit from the good Dean-Mr. Williams's Departure, in order to put the new-projected Alteration in force, which is to deprive me of my Chaplain-(By the way, the Dean is highly pleafed with this Affair, and the Motives to it, Mr. Alams being a favourite of his, and a distant Relation of his Lady) Mr. H.'s and Polly's mutual Endeavour to avoid one another .- My Leffons to the poor Girl, and Cautions, as if the were niv Sifter-

These, my dear Miss Darnford; these, my honoured Father and Mother, are the pleasant Employments of our Time; so far as we Females are con-R 5 cerned:

^{*} See p. 96, of this Volume.

cerned: For the Gentlemen hunt, ride out, and divert themselves in their Way, and bring us home the News and Occurrences they meet with Abroad, and now-and-then a straggling Gentleman they pick up in their Diversions.—And so I shall not enlarge upon these Articles, after the tedious Specimens I have already given. Yet the Particulars of one Conversation, possibly, I may give you another Time, when I have least to do, because three young Ladies, Relations of Lady Towers and Mrs. Arthur, were brought to visit me, for the benefit of my Instructions; for that was the kind Compliment of those Ladies to me.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY.

OULD you ever have thought, my Dear, that A Husbands have a Dispensing Power over their Wives, which Kings are not allowed over the Laws? I have this Day had a smart Debate with Mr. B. and I fear it will not be the only one upon this Subject. Can you believe, that if a Wife thinks a Thing her Duty to do, and her Husband does not approve of her doing it, he can dispense with her performing it, and no Sin shall lie at her Door? Mr. B. maintains this Point. I have great Doubts about it; particularly one; That if a Matter be my Duty, and he dispenses with my Performance of it, whether, even although that were to clear me of the Sin, it will not fall upon himself? And, to be fure, Miss, a good Wife would be as much concern'd at this as if it was to remain upon her. Yet he feems fet upon it. What can one do! -Did you ever hear of fuch a Notion before, Miss? Of such a Prerogative in a Husband? Would you care to subscribe to it?

This is one of Mr. B.'s Particularities. He has several of them, the Effects, as I take it, of his for-

mer free Life. Polygamy, as I have mentioned heretofore, is another. That is a bad one indeed. Yet he is not so determined on this, as he seems to be on the other, in a certain Case, that is too nice for me, at present to explain to you; and so I might as well have taken no notice of it as yet—Only the Argument was so present to my Mind: Held within this Hour, and I write a Journal, you know, of what passes.

But I will, some time hence, submit it, at least to your Judgments, my Father and Mother. You are well read in the Scriptures, and have gone thro' the Occasion often; and both Mr. B. and I build our Arguments on Scripture, tho' we are so different in our Opinions. He says, the Ladies are of his Opinion. I'm afraid they are, and so will not ask them. But, perhaps, I may'nt live, and other Things may happen; and so I'll say no more of it at present.

FRIDAY.

R. H. and my Lord and Lady Davers, and the excellent Countess of C—, having left us this Day, a good deal to my Regret, and, as it seemed to their own, the former put the following Letter into my Hands, with an Air of Respect, and even Reverence. You will observe in it, that he says he spells most lamentably; and this obliges me to give it you literally.

- · Deare good Madam,
- L CANNOTT contents myfelfe with common Thankes, on leaving youres and Mr. B.'s hof-
- I hankes, on leaving youres and Mr. B.'s holpitabel House, because of that there Affaire, which
- I neede not mention; and truly am assamed to
- mention, as I bave been to looke you in the Face,
- ever fince it happen'd. I don't knowe how itt came
 R 6
 - * For the Sequel of this Matter, fee Vol. IV. p. 9.

aboute, butt I thought butt att first of Joking a littel,
or soe; and seeing Polley heard me with more Attentiveness then I expected, I was encouraged to proceede; and soe, now I recollecte, itt came aboute.
But shee is innosent for me: And I don't know how thatt came aboute neither; for we were oute one Moone lighte Nighte together in the Gardin,
walking aboute, and afterwardes took a Napp of two Houres, as I beliefe, in the Summer-house in the littel Gardin, being over-powered with Sleepe;
for I woulde make her lay her Head uppon my
Breste, till, before we were awar, wee felle asseepe

together. Butt before thatt, we hadd agreed on whatt you discovered.

• This is the whole Fruthe, and all the Intimasies wee ever hadd, to speake off. But I believe we should have been better acquainted, hadd you nott, luckily for mee! prevented itt, by being att home, when we hought you abroad. For I was to come to her when shee hemm'd two or three Times; for having made a Contract, you knowe, Madam, it was naturall enough to take the first Occasion

to putt itt in Force.

· She coulde not keepe her owne Secritt, and may have told you more, perhapps, then is true. So what I write is to cleare myfelfe; and to tell you, how forry I am, in fuch a good House as youres, and where there is fo much true Godliness, that I fhoulde ever be drazone array to have a Thoughte to dishonour itt. But I will take care of being overfamillier for the future with Underlings; for, fce how a Man may be taken in! - If thee hadd refented itt att first, when I begun to kille her, or · foe, (for, you knowe, we younge Fellows will take Libertis fometimes where they don't become us, to our owne Disparagements chiefly, that's true) I · shoulde have hadd an Aive uppon me; or iff shee had told jou, or butt faid face woulde, I shoulde · have

have flowne, as foon as had any Thoughtes further

aboute the Matter.—But what had one of oure Sexe to do, you knowe, Madam, when they finde

· littel Resultence, and that shee woulde stande quietly and telle no Tales, and make no great Struggell, and

onot keepe out of one's Way neither, butt to dilly-

dally on, till one broughte itt to more then one at

first intended ?

· Poor Polley! I pity her too. Don't think the worse of her, deare Madam, so as too turn her away. because it may bee her Ruin. I don't defire too fee her. I mought have been drawne in to do strange foolish things, and been ruin'd at the long Run: for who knows where this thing mought have ended? My Unkell woulde have never feene me. My Father too (his Lorshipp, you have hearde, Ma-' dam, is a very crosse Man, and never loved mee " much) mought have cutt off the Intaile. My Aunie would have dispis'd mee, and scorn'd mee. I should have been her foolishe Fellowe in Earneste, nott in ' feste, as now. You woulde have referred itt, and Mr. B. who knowes? mought have called me to · Account, (for he is bloody paffignate, I faw thatt att the Hall, and has foughte two or three Duells, as I have hearde) for abufing the Freedome of his House, and breaking the Lawes of Hospitality, as you tolde mee; and fo, it is nott unlikely, I mighte have dy'd like a Dogge in a Ditche; and there would ' have been an Ende of a noble Family, that have been Peeres of the Realme Time out of Minde. What a fadd thing would this have been! A publicke as well as private Loffe: For you knowe, Madam, whatt my Lady Counters faid, and nobody fays better thinges, or knowes more of the Matter, then her Ladyshipp, That every Peere of the Realme is a Jewel in the Crowne. A fine Saying! God grante, I may keepe itt in Minde, when my Time . comes, and my Father shall bappen to die! " Well.

Well, butt, good Madam, cann you forgive mee? you fee how happy I am in my Disapointment. But I must take another Sheete of Paper .-I did nott think to write fo much :- for I don't · love itt: Butt on this Ocasion, know not how too leave off .- I hope you cann reade my Letter. . I knowe I write a clumly Hand, and spelle moste · lamentabelly; for I never had a Tallent for these thinges. I was readier by halfe to admire the Orcherd robbing Picture in Lilie's Grammer, then any other Parte of the Book: Excuse my Non-· tense, Madam: Butt many a time have I help'd to fill a Sachil; and always supposed that Picture was putt there on purpose to tell Boyes whatt Diverfions are alowed them, and are propper for them. Several of my Schoole-fellows tooke it for granted, as well as I, and wee coulde never reconcile itt to oure Reason, why wee shoulde bee punished for fractiffing a Lesson taughte us by our Grammers. Butt, hey, whether am I running! I never writt

to you before, and never may againe, unlesse you, or Mr. B. commande itt, for youre Servise. So

pray excuse me, Madam.

I knowe I neede give no Advise to Polley, to take care of first Encouragements. Poore Girl! shee mought have suffer'd sadly, as welle as I.—For ist my Father, and my Unkell and Aunte, had requir'd mee to turne her off, you knowe itt woulde have been undutifull too have resus'd them, notwithstanding our Bargaine. And want of Duty to them woulde have been to have added Faulte too Faulte: As you once observed, I remember, that one Faulte never comes alone, but drawes after itt generally sive or six, to hide or vindicate itt, and they every one perhapps as many more eache.

I shall never forgett severall of youre wise Sayinges. I have been vex'd, may I be hang'd if I
have not, many a time, thatt I coulde not make
fuch

- fuch Observations as you make; who am so much delder too, and a Man besides, and a Peere's Son, and
- a Peere's Nephew! But my Tallents he another
- " Way; and by that Time my Father dies, I hope to
- improve myfelfe, in order to cutt fuch a Figgure, as
- may make me be no Difgrafe to my Name or
- · Countrey; for I shall have one Benefitt over many
- younge Lordes; thatt I shall be more fond of make-
- · ing Observations then Speeches, and so shall improve
- of courfe, you knowe.
- Well, butt whatt is all this to the Purpose !- I
- will keepe close to my Texte; and thatt is, to thank
- you, good Madam, for all the Favours I have re-
- ceived in your House; to thank you for disappoint-
- ing mee, and for convinfing mee, in so kinde, yet so
- hameing a manner, how wrong I was in the Mat-
- ter of that there Polly; and for not exposing my
- Folly to any boddy but myfelf (for I should have
- been ready to hang myselfe, if you hadd;) and to
- begg youre Pardon for itt, and to affuer you, that
- I will never offerr the like as long as I breathe. I

am, Madam with the greatest Respecte,

Youre most obliged, moste faithful, and moste obedient humbell Servante,

· J. H.

6 Pray excuse Blotts and Blurrs.'

Well, Miss Darnford, what shall we say to this fine Letter?—You'll allow it to be an Original, I hope. Yet, may be not. For how does one know, but it may be as well written, and as sensible a Letter as this Class of People generally write?—But what then shall we be able to say for such poor Creatures of our Sex as are taken in, as Mr. H. calls it, by such Pretty Fellows as this: who if they may happen to write better, hardly think better, or design to ast better, and are not so soon brought to Repentance, and Promises of Amendment?

Mr. H. dresses well, is not a contemptible Figure of a Man, laughs, talks, where he can be heard, and his Aunt is not present;—and cuts, to use his own Words, a considerable Figure in a Country Town—But sec—Yet I will not say what I might—He is Lord Davers's Nephew; and if he makes his Observations, and sorbears his Speeches, (I mean, can be silent, and only laugh when he sees somebody of more Sense laugh, and never approve or condemn but in Leading-strings) he may, possibly, pass in a Crowd of Gendemen.—But poor, poor Polly Barlow!

What can I fay for Pelly Barlow?

I have a Time in View, when possibly, my Papers may fall under the Inspection of a dear Gentleman, to whom, next to God, I am accountable for all my Actions and Correspondences; fo I will either write an Account of the Matter, and feal it up feparately, for Mr. B. or, at a proper Opportunity, will break it to him, and let him know, (under Secrecy, if I can engage him to promife it) the Steps I took in it; for fear fomething should arise hereafter, when I cannot answer for myself, to render any thing dark or questionable in it. A Method I believe very proper to be taken by every marry'd Lady; and I presume the rather to fay so, having had a good Example for it. For I have often thought of a little feal'd-up Parcel of Papers, my Lady made me burn in her Presence about a Month before she dy'd .- They are, Pamela, faid she, fuch as I have no Reason to be concern'd about, let who will see them, could they know the Springs and Caufes of them: But, for want of a Clue, my Son might be at a Lofs what to think of feveral of these Letters. were he to find them, in looking over my other Papers, when I am no more.

Let me add, that nothing could be more endearing than our parting with our noble Guests. My Lady repeated her Commands for what she often engaged me to promife, that is to fay, to renew the Correfpondence begun between us, so much (as she was

pleased to say) to her Satisfaction.

I could not help shewing her Ladyship, who was always inquiring after my Writing Employment, most of what pass'd between you and me; and she admires you much, and wish'd Mr. H. had more Wit, that was her Word: She should in that Case, she said, be very glad to set on foot a Treaty between you and him.

But that, I fancy, can never be tolerable to you; and I only mention it in paffant—There's a French

Woman for you!

The Counters was full of her kind Wishes for my Happiness; and my Lady Davers told me, That if I could give her timely Notice, she would be present on a certain Occasion.

But, my dear Miss, what could I say?—I know nothing of the Matter!—Only, that I am a sad Coward, and have a thousand Anxieties, which I

cannot mention to any body.

But, if I have such in the honourable Estate of Matrimony, what must those poor Souls have, who have been seduced, and have all manner of Reason to apprehend, that the Crime shall be followed by a Punishment so natural to it? A Punishment, in kind, as I may say; which if it only ends in Forseiture of Life, following the Forseiture of Fame, must be thought merciful and happy beyond Expectation; for how shall they lay claim to the Hope that is given to persons in their Circumstances that they shall be saved in Child-bearing, since the Condition is, if they CONTINUE in Faith and Charity, and Holiness with Sobriety?

Now, my honoured Mother, and my dear Miss Darnford, since I am upon this affecting Subject, does not this Text seem to give a comfortable hope to a good Woman, who shall die in this Circumstance, that she

shall

shall be happy in the Divine Mercies? For the Apofile, in the Context, fays, That be suffers not a Woman to teach, nor to ujury Authority over the Man, but to be in Silence-And what is the Reason he gives? Why, a Reason that is a natural Consequence of the Curse on the first Disobedience, that she shall be in Subjection to her Husband. -- For, says he, Adam was NOT deceived; but the Woman, being deceived, was in the Transgression. As much as to fay, " had it not been for the Woman, Adam had " kept his Integrity, and therefore her Punishment " shall be, as it is faid, I will greatly multiply thy " Sorrow in thy Conception: In Sorrow shalt thou bring forth Children, and thy Husband shall rule " over thee. But nevertheless, if thou shalt not fur-" vive the Sharpness of thy Sorrow, thy Death shall " be deemed to be fuch an Alleviation of thy Part of " the entailed Transgression, that thou shall be faved, " if thou haft CONTINUED in Faith, and Charity, " and HOLINESS with SOBRIETY."

This, my honoured Parents, and my dear Friend, is my Paraphrase; and I reap no small Comfort from

it, when I meditate upon it.

But I shall make you as serious as myself; and, my dear Friend, perhaps frighten you from entering into a State, in which our poor Sex suffer so much from the Bridal Morning, let it rise as gayly as it will upon a thoughtful Mind, to that affecting Circumstance, (throughout its whole Progression) for which nothing but a tender, a generous, and a worthy Husband can make them any Part of Amends.—And when one is so bless'd, one has so many Fears added to one's Sorrows; and so much Apprehension, thro' human Frailty, of being separated from so beloved a Partner, that one had need of the greatest Fortitude to support one's self. But it may be, I am the weakest and most apprehensive of my Sex—It may be, I am!—And when one sees how common the Case is, and

yet how few die in it; how uneasy many Women are, not to be in this Circumstance, (my good Lady Davers particularly, at times) and Rachel and Hannah in Holy Writ; and then how a childless Estate might lessen one in the Esteem of one's Husband; one ought to bring these Considerations in Balance, and to banish needless Fears. And so I will, if I can.

But a Word or two more, as to the parting with our honoured Company. I was a little indifpos'd, and they all would excuse me, against my Will, from attending them in the Coach some Miles, which their dear Brother did. Both Ladies most tenderly saluted me, twice or thrice a piece, solding their kind Arms about me, and wishing my Safety and Health; and charging me to think little, and hope much; for they saw me thoughtful at times, tho' I endeavoured to hide it from them.

My Lord Davers was pleased to say, with a Goodness of Temper that is peculiar to him, My dearest, dear Sister—May God preserve you, and multiply your Comforts! I shall pray for you more than ever I did for myself, tho' I have so much more need of it!—I must leave you—But I leave one whom I love and honour next to Lady Davers, and ever shall.

Mr. H. looked confciously filly.—I can say nothing, Madam—but (saluting me) that I shall never forget your Goodness to me—Adding, in his frothy Way, and with as soppish an Air, Now can I say, I have saluted an Angel, if ever there was an Angel on Earth.

I had before, in Mrs. Fervis's Parlour, taken Leave of Mrs. Worden and Mrs. Lefley, my Lady's Women; They each stole, as it were, at the same time, a Hand of mine, and kissed it, begging Pardon, as they said, for the Freedom. But I answer'd, taking each by her Hand, and kissing her, I shall always think of you with Pleasure, my good Friends; for you have encouraged me constantly by your Presence in my pri-

vate Duties, and may God blefs you, and the worthy Families you folaudably ferve, as well for your fakes,

as their own!

They turned away with Tears, and Mrs. Worden would have faid fomething to me, but could not .-Only both taking Mrs. To vis by the Hand, Happy, happy Mrs. Fervis! fad they, almost in a Breath .-And happy, happy I too, repeated I, in my Mrs. Fervis, and in such kind and worthy Well-wishers as Mrs. Worden and Mrs. L fley. Wear this, Mrs. Worden; wear this, Mis. Leftey, for my fake:-And I gave each of them a lang, with a Crystal and Brilliants fet about it, which Mr. B. had bought a Week before for this very Purpole; for he has a great Opinion of both the good Folks, and often praised their Prudence, and their quiet and respectful Behaviour to every Body, fo different from the Impertinence, that was his Word, of most Ladies Women, who are Favourites.

Mrs. Jervis faid, I have enjoyed many happy Hous in your Conversation, Mrs. Worden and Mrs.

Lefley: I shall miss you very much.

I must endeavour, said I, taking her Hand, to make it up to you, my good Friend, as well as I can. And of late we have not had so many Opportunities together as I should have wished, had I not been so agreeably engaged as you know.—So we must each try to comfort the other, when we have lost, I such

noble, and you fuch worthy Companions.

Mrs. Jervis's honest Heart, before touch'd by the Parting, shew'd itself at her Eyes—Wonder not, my good Friends, said I, to the two Gentlewomen, wiping with my Handkerchief her venerable Cheeks, that I always endeavour thus to dry up all my good Mrs. Jervis's Tears; and then I kissed her, thinking of you, my dear Mother; and I was forced to withdraw a little abruptly, lest I should be too much moved myself, because I was going up to our departing Com-

pany, who, had they inquired into the Occasion, would perhaps have thought it derogatory (tho' I should not) to my present Station, and too much retrospecting to my former.

I could not, in Conversation between Mr. B. and myself, when I was gratefully expatiating upon the amiable Characters of our noble Guests, and of their Behaviour and Kindness to me, help observing, that I had little expected, from some * Hints which formerly dropt from Mr. B. to find my good Lord Da-

vers lo polite and io fensible a Man. He is a very good-natur'd Man, realy'd Mr. B. I believe I might once or twice drop some difrespectful Words of him. But it was the Effect of Passion, at the Time, and with a View to two or three Points of his Conduct in public Life; for which I took the Liberty to find fault with him, and received very unfatisfactory Excuses. One of these, I remember particularly, was in a Conference between a Committee of each House of Parliament, in which he behaved in a way I could not with from a Man fo nearly ally'd to me by Marriage; for all he could talk of, was the Dignity of their House, when the Reason of the Thing was strong with the other; and it fell to my Lot to answer what he faid; which I did with fome Afperity, and this occasion'd a Coolnels between us for fome Time.

But no Man makes a better Figure in private Life than Lord Davers; especially now, that my Sister's good Sense has got the better of her Passions, and she can behave with tolerable Decency towards him. For, formerly, Pamela, it was not so; the Violence of her Spirit making him appear in a Light too little advantageous either to his Quality or Merit. But now his Lordship improves upon me every time I see him.

You know not, my Dear, continued Mr. B. what a Difgrace a haughty and passionate Woman brings upon her Husband, and upon herself too, in the Eye of her own Sex, as well as ours. Nay, even those Ladies, who would be as glad of Dominion as she, if they might be permitted to exercise it, despise others who do, and the Man most who suffers it.

And let me tell you, my Panela, said the dear Man, with an Air that shew'd he was satisfy'd with his own Conduct in this particular, that you cannot imagine how much a Woman owes to her Husband, as well with regard to her own Peace of Mind, as to both their Reputations, (however it may go against the Grain with her sometimes) if he be a Man, who has Discretion to keep her incroaching Passions under a genteel and reasonable Controul!

How do you like this Doctrine, Miss?—I'll warrant you believe, that I could do no less, than drop Mr. B. one of my best Curt'sies, in acknowlegement of my Obligation to him, for so considerately preserving to me my Peace of Mind, and my Repu-

tation, as well as his own, in this Case.

But after all, when one duly weighs the Matter, I can't tell but what he fays may be right in the main; for I have not been able to contradict him, partial as I am to my Sex, when he has pointed out to me Inflances in the Behaviour of certain Ladies, who, like Children, the more they have been humour'd, the more humouriome they have grown; which must have occasion'd as great Uneasiness to themselves, as to their Husbands. Will you excuse me, my Dear?—This is between ourselves; for I did not own so much to Mr. B.—For one should not give up one's Sex, you know, if one can help it; for the Men will be as apt to impose, as the Women to incroach, I doubt.

Well, but here, my honoured Father and Mother, and my dear Miss Darnford at last, I end my Journalmal-wife Letters, as I may call them; our noble Guests being gone, and our Time and Employments rolling on in much the same Manner, as in past Days,

of which I have given an Account.

If any thing new or uncommon, or more particularly affecting to me than usual, occurs, I shall not fail to trouble you with it, as I have Opportunity. But I have now my Correspondence with Lady Davers to refume; and how shall I do about that? - Oh! I can easily tell: It is but trespassing a little on your indulgent Allowance for me, my ever-honoured Parents-And you, my dear Miss, will find it a Relief, instead of an Occasion for Regret, to be eased of a great many Impertinencies, which I write to you in my Heart's Confidence, and in the Familiarity of Friendship.—Besides, I shall have the Happiness of changing our Paper-Correspondence into personal Conversation with you, when at London. ——And what a fweet Change for me will that be !-- I will end with the joyful Thought; and with the Affurance, that I am,

My dearest Father and Mother, and best beloved Miss Darnford, Your dutiful and affectionate

P. B.

LETTER XXXIX.

My dear Miss Darnford,

Health. I am very forry for it. I pray for her Life, that she may be a Credit (it it please God) to the Penitence she has so lately affumed.—For if she die, it will look discouraging to some thoughtless Minds who penetrate not far into the Methods Providence takes with its poor Creatures, that as soon

as she had changed her Manner of Living, and was in a reformed State, she was taken away: Tho' 'tis certain, that a Person is sittest to die, when worthiest to live. And what a Mercy will it be to her, if she should not live long, that she saw her Errors, and

repented before 'twas too late?

Do, my dear good Miss Darnford, vouchsafe to the poor Soul the Honour of a Visit: She may be low-spirited—She may be too much sunk with the Recollection of past Things.—Comfort with that Sweetness which is so natural to Miss Darnford, her drooping Heart; and let her know, that I have a true Concern for her, and give it her in Charge to take care of herself, and spare nothing that will administer either to her Health, or Peace of Mind.

You'll pardon me, my Dear, that I put you upon fuch an Office; an Office indeed unfuitable from a Lady in your Station, to a Person in hers; but not to your Piety and Charity, where a Duty so eminent as that of visiting the Sick, and chearing the

doubting Mind, is in the Question.

I know your Condescention will give her great Comfort; and if she should be hastening to her Account, what a Pleasure will it give such a Lady as you, to have illuminated a benighted Mind, when

it was tottering on the Verge of Death!

But I hope the will get the better of her Indispofation, and live many Years a thankful Monument of God's Mercies, and to do more Good by her Example in the latter Part of her Life, than she

may possibly have done Evil in the former.

I know she will want no spiritual Help from good Mr. Peters; but then the kind Notice of so generally esteem'd a young Lady, will raise her more than can be imagin'd; for there is a Tenderness, a Sympathy, in the good Persons of our Sex to one another, that (while the best of the other seem but to act as in Office, saying to one those Things, which tho' edifying

and

and convincing, one is not certain proceeds not rather from the Fortitude of their Minds, than the Tenderness of their Natures) mingles from one Woman to another with one's very Spirits, thins the animal Mass, and runs through one's Heart, in the same lify Current (I cannot clothe my Thought suitably to express what I would express) giving Assurance, as well as Pleasure, in the most arduous Cases, and brightening our misty prospects till we see the Sun of Righteousness rising on the Hills of Comfort, and dispelling the heavy Fogs of Doubt and Dissidence.

This it is makes me wish and long as I do, for the Company of my dear Miss Darnford. O when shall I see you? When shall I?— To speak to my present Case, it is all I long for; and, pardon my Freedom of Expression, as well as Thought, when I let you know in this Instance, how early I experience the

ardent Longings of one in the Way I am in.

But I ought not to fet my Heart upon any-thing that is not in my own Power, and which may be subject to Accidents and the Controul of others. But let whatever Interventions happen, so I have your Will to come, I must be rejoiced in your kind Intention, although your Power should not prove answerable.

And now, my dearest honoured Mother, let me tell you, that I build no small Consolation in the Hope, that I shall, on a certain Occasion, have your Presence, and be strengthened by your Advice and Comfortings. For this was a Proposal of the best and most considerate of Men, who is every Day, if he fees but the least thoughtful Cloud upon my Brow, studying to fay or to do something to expel it. But I believe it is the grateful Sense I have of his Goodness to me, that makes me thus over anxious: For the Apprehensions of a Separation from such an excellent Husband, from Hopes so cheering, Prospects so delightful, must, at times affect one, let one's Affiance and Defires be ever fo strong where Vol. III. they

they ought to be preferably placed. ——Then one would live to do a little more Good, if one might!

I am a fad weak, apprehensive Creature; to be fure I am! How much better fitted for the Contingencies of Life, are the gay, frolic Minds, that think not of any-thing before it comes upon them, than

fuch thoughtful Futurity-pokers as I am!

But why should I trouble you, my honoured and dear Friends, with my idle Fears and Follies—just as if nobody was ever in my Case before?—Yet weak and apprehensive Spirits will be gloomily affected sometimes; and how can one help it?—And if I may not hope for the indulgent Soothings of the best of Parents, and of my Miss Darnford, in whose Bosom besides can one disburden one's Heart, when oppressed by too great a Weight of Thought?

You will come, and be in the House with me, my dear Mother, for some Time, when my best Friend sends to you:—Won't you?—And you will spare my dear Mother, my best of Fathers: Won't you?—Yes, yes, I am sure you will—And I am sure my Miss Darnford will be with me, if she can; and these are my Comforts. But how I run on!—For I am

fo much a Novice, that-

But I will say no more, than that I am, my honoured Father and Mother, your ever dutiful Daughter; and, my dear Mis Darnford,

Your affectionate and obliged

P. B.

LETTER XL.

From Miss DARNFORD, to Mrs. B.

My dear N'rs. P.

E are greatly obliged to you for every particular Article in your entertaining Journal, which you have brought, fooner than we wish'd, to a Conclusion. We cannot express how much we admire you for your judicious Charities, so easy to be practised, yet so uncommon in the Manner; and for your inimitable Conduct in the Affair of your frail Polly, and the silly Mr. H.

Your Account of the Visit of the Four Rakes, of your parting with your noble Guests; your Verses, and Mr. H.'s Letter, (an Original indeed!) have all greatly entertained us, as your Prerogative Hints * have amused us: But we defer our Opinion of those Hints, till we have the Case more fully explained.

But, my dear Friend, are you not in danger of falling into a too thoughtful and gloomy Way? By the latter Part of your last Letter, we are afraid you are; and my Mamma, and Mrs. Jones, and Mrs. Peters, injoin me to write, to caution you on that Head. But there is the less need of it, because your Prudence will always suggest to you Reasons, as it does in that very Letter, that must out-balance our Fears. Think little, and bope much, is a good Lesson in your Case, and to a Lady of your Temper; and I hope Lady Davers will not in vain have given you that Caution. After all, I dare say, your Thoughtfulness is but symptomatical, and will go off, in proper Time.

Meantime, permit me to choose you a Subject, that will certainly divert you. You must know, that I have been a diligent Observer of the Conduct of People in the married Life to each other; and have often pronounced, that there cannot be any tolerable Happiness in it, unless the one or the other makes such Sacrifices of their Inclinations and Humours as renders it a State very little desirable to free and generous Minds. Of this I see an Instance in our own Family; for though my Papa and Mamma live very happily, it is all owing to one Side, I need not say which.

[·] Sce p. 370, 371.

which. And this, I am sure, must be the Case between Mr. B. and you: For you must, even through Fire, if required, sacrifice to Moloch. I know your Prudence will oblige you to make the best of it; and like a contented good Wise, you will say, you have your own Will in every-thing: A good Reason why, Because you make your own Will his. This, long ago, we all agreed, any Lady must do, be her Quality ever so great, who would be happy with Mr. B.—Yet my Sister once hoped (entre nous) to be the Person. Fine Work would there have been be-

tween two fuch Spirits, you may believe!

But to wave this: Let me ask you, Mrs. B. Is your Monarch's Conduct to you as respectful, I do not mean fond, when you are alone together, as when in Company? --- Forgive me, Madam-But you have hinted two or three Times, in your Letters, that he always is most complaifant to you in Company; and you observe, that wifely does he act in this, because he thereby does Credit with every-body to his own Choice. I make no doubt, that the many charming Scenes which your Genius and fine Behaviour furnish out to him, must, as often as they happen, inspire him with Joy, and even Rapture; and must make him love you more for your Mind than for your Person:—But these rapturous Scenes last very little longer than the present Moment. What I want to know is, Whether in the fleadier Parts of Life, when you are both nearer the Level of us common Folks, he gives up any thing of his own Will in complement to yours? Whether he acts the Part of a respectful, polite Gentleman in his Behaviour to you; and breaks not into your Retirements, in the Dress, and with the brutal Roughness of a Foxhunter?-Making no Difference, perhaps, between the Fie'd or his Stud, I will not fay Kennel, and your Chamber or Closet?-Policy, for his own Credit fake, as I mentioned, accounts to me well,

for his Complaifance to you in Public. But his regular and uniform Behaviour to you in your Retirements, when the Conversation between you turns upon usual and common Subjects, and you have not obliged him to rife to Admiration of you, by such Scenes as those of your two Parsons, Sir Jacob Swynford, and the like; are what would fatisfy my Curiofity, if you please to give me an Instance or two of it.

Now, my dearest Mrs. B. if you can give me a Case, partly or nearly thus circumstanced, you will

highly oblige me.

First, Where he has borne with any Infirmity of your own; and I know of none where you can give him such an Opportunity, except you get into a vapourish Habit, by giving way to a Temper too thoughtful and apprehensive:

Next, that, in complaifance to your Will, he re-

cedes from his own in any one Instance :

Next, whether he breaks not into your Retirements unceremoniously, and without Apology or

Concern; as I hinted above.

You know, my dear Mrs. B. all I mean, by what I have said; and if you have any pretty Conversation in Memory, by the Recital of which, this my bold Curiosity may be answered, pray oblige me with it; and we shall be able to judge by it, not only of the inborn Generosity which all that know Mr. B. have been willing to attribute to him, but of the Likelihood of the Continuance of both your Felicities, upon Terms suitable to the Characters of a fine Lady and fine Gentleman; and of consequence, worthy of the Imitation of the most delicate of our own Sex.

This is the Task your Polly Darnsford presumes to set her beloved Mrs. B. And why? For your own Diversion, in the first place. For my Edification, in the next. And that when I have the Pleasure, I hope

for, of attending you in London, I may fee what there is in the Conduct of you both, to admire, or to remonstrate against, in the Third. For, where there is to little wanting to l'erfection between you, I finall be very free with you both, in my Cenfures, if he in poles, through Prerogative, or you permit, through an undue Compliance, which I shall in agine ought not to be in either Cafe. I know you will excuse me for what I have said; and well you may, fince I am fure, I shall have nothing to do, when I am with you, but to admire and to initate you; and to wish, if ever I marry, I may have just such a Husband (though not quite so haughty perhaps) as Mr. B. But pray, let not the lordy Man fee this Letter, nor your Answer, nor the Copy of it, till you may conclude I have the latter, if then; that you may not be under any undue Influences.

Your obliging Longings, my beloved dear Lady, for my Company, I hope, will be soon, very soon, answered. My Papa was so pleased with your sweet Earnestness on this Occasion, that he joined with my Mamma, and both, with equal Cheerfulness, said, You should not be many Days in London before me. Murray and his Mistress go on swimmingly, and have not yet had one Quarrel. The only Person, he, of either Sex, that ever knew Nancy so

intimately, and fo long, without one!

This is all I have to fay, at present, when I have assured you, my dear Mrs. B. how much I am

Your obliged and affectionate

POLLY DARNFORD.

I must add, however, that I expect from you almost as many Letters as there are Post-Days, between this and the Time I see you; for I will not part with my Correspondent for anybody; no, not for Lady Dayers.

But

But I must insist upon your giving me the Converfation with the young Ladies, related to Lady Towers and Mrs. Arthur.

I will observe every-thing you say in relation to Mrs. Jewkes; who is much as she was; but not better.

LETTER XLI.

My dearest Miss Darnford,

I WAS afraid I ended my last Letter in a gloomy Way; and I am obliged to you for the kind and friendly Notice you take of it. It was owing to a Train of Thinking which sometimes I get into, of late; I hope, only symptomatically, as you say, and that the Cause and Effect will soon vanish together.

But what a Task, my dear Friend, I'll warrant, you think you have set me! I thought, in the Progress of my Journal, and in my Letters, I had given so many Instances of Mr. B.'s polite Tenderness to me, that no new ones would be required at my Hands; and when I said he was always most complaisant before Company, I little expected, that such an Inserence would be drawn from my Words, as would tend to question the Uniformity of his Behaviour to me, when there were no Witnesses to it. But I am gl d you give me an Opportunity to clear up all your Doubts on this Subject. To begin then;

You first desire an Instance, where Mr. B. has

borne with fome infirmity of mine:

Next, that in complaifance to my Will, he has

receded from his own:

And, lastly, Whether he breaks not into my Retirements unceremoniously, and without Apology or Concern, making no Difference between the Field or the Stud, and my Chamber or Closet?

54

I know

I know not, my Dear, what the Distance is, at which the polite Ladies, and those of Rank, think it proper to endeavour to keep their Husbands: But I will give you by and bye, the Subject of one Conversation only, which will answer all you mean, as I apprehend, and at the same time acquaint you with the Notions and Behaviour of us both, with respect to this Distance, and my Retirements; and then

leave you to judge as you think fit.

As to the first, his bearing with my Infirmities, he is daily giving Instances of his Goodness to me on this Head, and I am ashamed to fav, that of late I give him so much Occasion for them as I do: But he fees my Apprehenfiveness, at times, though I endeavour to conceal it; and no Husband was ever so foothing and so indulgent as Mr. B. He gives me the best Advice, as to my Malady, if I may call it one: Treats me with redoubled Tenderness; talks to me upon the Subjects I most delight to dwell upon; as of my worthy Parents; what they are doing at this time, and at that; of our intended Journey to London; of the Divertions of the Town; of Miss Darnford's Company; and when he goes abroad, fends up my good Mrs. Fervis to me, because I should not be alone: At other times, takes me abroad with him; brings this Neighbour and that Neighbour to visit me; and carries me to vifit them: Talks of our Journey to Kent, and into Lincolnshire, and to my Lady Davers's, to Bath, to Tunbridge, and I cannot tell whither, when the apprehended Time shall be over. - In fine, my dear Mils Darnford, you cannot imagine one half of his tender Goodnels and Politeness to me! Indeed you cannot !- Then, as to what you call respectful, he watches every Motion of my Eye, every Turn of my Countenance; feldom gives his Opinion upon Subjects that he kindly imagines within my Capacity, till he has heard mine; and I have the less fear of falling into mean Compliances, because

because his Generosity is my Guardian, and never fails to exalt me more than I can debase myself, or than it is possible I can deserve. Then he hardly ever goes out to any Distance, but he brings me fome pretty Prefent, that he thinks will be grateful to nie: When at home he is feldom out of my Company; delights to teach me French and Italian, and reads me Pieces of Manuscript Poetry, in several of the modern Tongues (for he speaks them all;) explains to me every-thing I understand not; delights to answer all my Questions, and to encourage my Inquisitiveness and Curiosity; tries to give me a Notion of Pictures and Medals, and reads me Lectures upon them, for he has a fine Collection of both: and every now and then will have it, that he has been improved by my Questions and Observations.

What say you to these Things, my Dear? Do they come up to your first Question? or do they not? Or is not what I have said a full Answer, were I to say no more, to all your Enquiries? Can there be any such Thing as undue Compliances to such an Husband, on my Side, think you? And when I have charmed to sleep, by my grateful Duty, that watchful Dragon, Prerogative, as Lady Davers in one of her Letters call it *; and am resolved not to awake it, if I can help it, by the least disobliging or wilful perverse Act, what have I to apprehend from it?

O my Dear, I am thoroughly convinced, that half the Mifunderstandings among married People are owing to Trifles, to petty Distinctions, to mere Words, and little captious Folies, to Over weenings, or unguarded Petulances: And who would forego the folid Satisfactions of Life, for the sake of triumphing in such poor Contentions, if one could triumph?

Are such Foibles as these to be dignished by the Name of *Inclinations* and *Humours*, which to be given up, would be making such a Sacrifice, as shall

· See this Vol. p. 105.

render the married Life little desirable to free and ge-

nerous Minds?

But fay not, my Dear, to free and generous Minds: For every high Spirit deserves not these Epithets: Nor think what I say, a Partiality in behalf of my own Conduct, and an Argument for Tameness of Spirit, and such an one as would lick the Dust; sor, let me tell you, my dear Friend, that, dearly as I love and honour my Mr. B. if he were to require of me any-thing that I thought it was my Duty not to comply with, I should be the unhappiest Creature in the World; because I am sure I should withstand his Will, and desire him to excuse my Non-compliance.

But then I would referve my Strength for these greater Points, and would never dispute with him the smaller, although they were not intirely to my Likeing: And this would give both Force and Merit to the Opposition, when I found it necessary: But to contest every little Point, where nothing but one's stubborn Will was in the Question, what an inexcusable Perverseness would that be! How ready to enter the Lists against an Husband, would it make one appear to him? And where, besides, is the Merit of Obliging, were we only to yield to what will

oblige ourselves?

But you next require of me an Instance, where, in complaifance to my Will, he has receded from his own? I do not know what to say to this. When Mr. B. is all Tenderness and Indulgence, as I have said, and requires of me nothing that I can have a material Objection to; ought I not to oblige him? Can I have a Will that is not his? Or would it be excusable if I had? All little Matters, as I have said, I cheerfully give up: Great ones have not yet occurred between us, and I hope never will. One Point, indeed, I have some Apprehension may happen; and that, to be plain with you, is, we have had a Debate or two on the Subject (which I maintain) of a Mother's

Duty to nurse her own Child; and I am forry to say it, he seems more determined than I wish he were,

against it.

I hope it will not proceed to far, as to awaken the fleeping Dragon I mentioned, Prerogative by Name; but I doubt I cannot give up this Point very contentedly. But as to lesser Points, had I been a Duches born, I think I would not have

contested them with my Husband.

Upon the Whole of this Question then, I have really had no Will of my own to contend for, so generous is Mr. B. and so observant and so grateful have I thought it my Duty to be: yet I could give you many respectful Instances, too, of his receding, when he has defired to see what I have been writing, and I have told him to whom, and begged to be excused. One such Instance I can give since I began this Letter. This is it.

I put it in my Bosom, when he came up : He saw

me do fo.

Are you writing, my Dear, what I must not see? I am writing to Miss Darnford, Sir; and she begged you might not, at present.

This augments my Curiofity, Pamela. What can

two fuch Ladies write, that I may not fee?

If you will not be displeased, Sir, I had rather you would not, because she desires you may not see her Letter, nor this my Answer, till the latter is in her Hands.

Then I will not, returned Mr. B.

Will this Instance, my Dear, come up to your Demand for one, where he recedes from his own

Will, in complainance to mine?

But now, as to what both our Notions and our Practice are on the Article of my Retirements, and whether he breaks in upon them unceremoniously, and without Apology, let the Conversation I promised inform you, which began on the following Occasion:

Mr. B. rode out early one Morning, within a few Days past, and did not return till the Asternoon; an Absence I had not been used to of late; and breakfasting and dining without him being also a new Thing with me, I had such an Impatience to see him, having expected him at Dinner, that I was forced to retire to my Closet, to try to divert it, by writing; and the gloomy Conclusion of my last, was then the Subject. He returned about sour o'Clock, and indeed did not tarry to change his Riding-dress, as your Politeness, my dear Friend, would perhaps have expected; but came directly up to me, with an Impatience to see me, equal to my own, when he was told, upon Inquiry, that I was in my Closet.

I heard his welcome Step, as he came up-flairs; which generally, after a longer Absence than I expect, has such an Effect upon my fond Heart, that it gives a responsive Throb for every Step he takes towards me, and beats quicker and fafter, as he comes nearer and nearer, till tapping my Breaft, I fay to it sometimes, Lie still, bufy Fool as thou art! Canst thou not forbear letting thy differning Lord fee thy nonfenfical Emotions? I love to indulge thee in them, myfelf, it is true, but then let nobody elfe observe them; for, generous as thy Mafter is, thou may'ft not perhaps meet with fuch favourable Interpretations as thou deferveft, when thou art always fluttering thus, as he approaches, and playest off all thy little joyful Frolics into the glowing Cheek, and brightened Eye of thy Mistress; which makes her look as if the were conscious of some Misdemeanour; when, all the Time, it is nothing in the World but grateful Joy, and a Love so innocent, that the purest Mind might own it.

This little Flutter and Chiding of the bufy Simpleton, made me meet him but at the Closet-door, instead of the Entrance of my Chamber, as sometimes I do.—So, my dear Love, how do you? folding his kind Arms about me, and faluting me with Ardour. Whenever I have been but a few Hours from you, my Impatience to fee my Beloved, will not permit me to stand upon the Formality of a Message to know how you are engag'd; but I break in upon you, even in my Riding-dress, as you see.

Dear Sir, you are very obliging. But I have no Notion of mere Formalities of this kind (How unpolite this, my Dear, in your Friend!) in a married State, fince 'tis impossible a virtuous Wife can be employ'd about any thing, that her Husband may

not know: and so need not fear Surprises.

I am glad to hear you say this, my Pamela; for I have always thought the extraordinary Civilities and Distances of this kind, which I have observed among several Persons of Rank, altogether unaccountable. For, if they are exacted by the Lady, I should suspect she had Reserves, which she herself believ'd I could not approve of. If not exacted, but practised of Choice by the Gentleman, it carries with it, in my Opinion, a salse Air of Politeness, little less than affrontive to the Lady, and dishonourable to himself; for does it not look as if he supposed, and allowed, that, probably, she might be so employed that it was necessary to apprise her of his Visit, less the should make Discoveries not to her Credit, or his own?

One would not, Sir, (for I thought his Conclufion too fevere) make fuch a harsh Supposition as this neither: For there are little Delicacies and Moments of Retirement, no doubt, in which a modest Lady would be glad to be indulged by the

tenderest Husband.

It may be so, in an early Matrimony, before the Lady's Considence in the Honour and Discretion of the Man she has chosen, has disengag'd her from her Bridal Reserves.

Bridal

Bridal Reserves! dear Sir; permit me to give it, as my humble Opinion, I hat a Wise's Behaviour ought to be as pure and circumspect, in Degree, as that of a Bride, or even of a Maiden Lady, be her Considence in her Husband's Honour and Discretion ever so great. For, indeed, I think a gross or a careless Demeanour little becomes that Modesty, which is the peculiar Excellency and Distinction of our Sex.

You account very well, my Dear, by what you now fay, for your own over nice Behaviour, as I have fometimes thought it. But are we not all apt to argue for a Practice we make our own, because we do make it our own, rather than from the Reason of the Thing?

I hope, Sir, that is not the present Case with me; for, permit me to say, that an over-tree or negligent Behaviour of a Lady in the married State, must be a Mark of Disrespect to her Consort; and would shew, as if she was very little solicitous about what Appearance she made in his Eye. And must not this beget in him a slight Opinion of her, and her Sex too, as if, supposing the Gentleman had been a free Liver, she would convince him there was no other Dissernce in the Sex, but as they were within or without the Pale; licensed by the Law, or acting in defiance of it?

I understand the Force of your Argument, Panula.

But you were going to fay something more.

Only, Sir, permit me add, That when, in my particular Case, you injoin me to appear before you always* dressed, even in the early Part of the Day, it would be wrong, if I was less regardful of my Behaviour and Actions, than of my Appearance.

I believe you are right, my Dear, if a precise or unnecessary Scrupulousness be avoided, and where all is unaffected, easy, and natural, as in my Pamela. For I have seen married Ladies, both in England

and

and France, who have kept a Husband at greater Distance than they have exacted from some of his Sex, who have been more intitled to his Resent-

ment, than to his Wife's Intimacies.

But to wave a Subject, in which, as I can with Pleasure say, neither of us have much Concern, tell me, my Dearest, how you were employed before I came up? Here are Pen and Ink: Here too is Paper; but it is as spotless as your Mind. To whom were you directing your Favours now? May I not know

your Subject!

Mr. H.'s Letter was a Part of it; and so I had put it by, at his Approach, and not choosing he should see that, I am writing, replied I, to Miss Darnsord: But I think you must not ask me to see what I have written this time. I put it aside, that you should not, when I heard your welcome Step. The Subject is our parting with our noble Guests; and a little of my Apprehensiveness, on an Occasion upon which our Sex may write to one another; but, for some of the Reasons we have been mentioning, Gentlemen should not desire to see.

Then I will not, my dearest Love (So here, my Dear, is another Instance—I could give you an hundred such—of his receding from his own Will, in complaisance to mine:) Only, continued he, let me warn you against too much Apprehensiveness, for your own Sake, as well as mine; for such a Mind, as my Pamela's, I cannot permit to be habitually over-clouded. And yet there now hangs upon your Brow an over-thoughtfulness, which you must not

Indeed, Sir, I was a little too thoughtful, from my Subject, before you came; but your Presence, like the Sun, has diffipated the Mists that hung upon my Mind. See you not, and I pressed his Hand with my Lips, they are all gone already? finiling

upon him, with a Delight unfeigned.

Not

Not quite, my dearest Pamela; and therefore, if you have no Objection, I will change my Dress, and attend you in the Chariot for an Hour or two, whither you please, that not one Shadow may remain visible in this dear Face; tenderly faluting me.

Whithersoever you please, Sir. A little Airing

with you, will be highly agreeable to me.

The dear Obliger went and changed his Dress in an Instant; and he led me to the Chariot, with his usual tender Politeness, and we had a charming Airing of several Miles; returning quite happy, cheerful, and delighted with each other's Conversation: without calling in upon any of our good Neighbours: for what need of that, my Dear, when we could be the best Company in the World to each other?

Do these Instances come up to your Questions, my Dear? or, do they not?—If you think not, I could give you our Conversation in the Chariot; for I wrote it down, at my first Leisure, so highly was I delighted with it: For the Subject was my dearest Parents; a Subject started by himself, because he knew it would oblige me. But being tired with writing, I may reserve it, till I have the Pleasure of seeing you, if you think it worth asking for. And so I will hasten to a Conclusion of this long Letter.

You will perceive, my Dear, by what I have written, in what Sense it may be justly said, That Mr. B. is most complaisant to me before Company, perhaps, politically, as you say, to do Credit to his own generous Choice:—But that he is more tender, yea, respectfully tender, (for that is the Word with you) and not less polite to me, in our retired Hours, you will have no Doubt, from what I have related; and could further relate, if it were necessary: For every Day produces Instances equal to what I have given you.

Then,

Then, my Dear, let me fay to you, what I could not so freely fry to any other young Lady; That I never could have hoped I should be so happy as I am, in other Particulars, from a Gentleman who has given himself the Liberties Mr. B. has done: For I never hear from him, in Company, or when alone, the least shocking Expression, or such frothy Jeffs, as tend to convey impure Ideas to the most apprehensive Mind. There is indeed the less Wonder in this, and that we can glory in a true conjugal Chaffity, as I have the Vanity to think, his Love, 25 well as my own, is the Love of the Mind, rather than that of Person; and our tenderest and most affeeting Moments, are those which lift us up above Sense, and all that Sense can imagine. But this is a Subject too delicate to be dwelt upon, even to you: And you will better comprehend all I mean, when your pure Mind meets with a Gentleman of exalted Sense, like Mr. B. whom, if you find him not fo good as you wish, your Example will make fo.

Permit me to add, for the sake of you, my dear Parents, as well as for the Sakes of my much respected Friends, who have joined in the kind Caution, you so obligingly give me, against getting into too thoughtful and gloomy a Way, that there is no great Fear I should continue long in it, when I have so kind and so generous a Comforter as Mr. B. For, at his Presence, all my featful Apprehensions are dissipated, and vanish like a Morning Dream. And depend upon it, that so sure as the Day succeeds to the Night, so sure will my Mind, while capable of the least Sense of Gratitude, be illuminated the Moment he shines out upon me, let it be ever so overcast in his Absence, through imaginary Doubts, and

apprehended Evils.

I have only farther to add, for my Comfort, that next Thursday Se'nnight, if nothing hinders, we are to set out for London. And why do you think I say

for my Comfort? Only that I shall then soon have the Opportunity, to assure you personally, as you give me Hope, how much I am, my dear Mits Darnford,

Your truly affectionate

P. B.

I will shew you, when I see you, the Conversation you require about the young Ladies.

LETTER XLIL

My dear Miss Darnford,

NE more Letter, and I have done for a great while; because I hope your Presence will put an end to the Occasion. I shall now tell you of my second Visit to the Dairy-house, where we went to Breakfast, in the Chariot and Four, because of the

Distance, which is Ten pretty long Miles.

I transcrib d for you, from Letters written formerly to my dear Parents an * Account of my former Dairy-bouse Visit, and what the People were, and whom I saw there; and altho' I besought you to keep that Assair to yourself, as too much affecting the Reputation of my Mr. B. to be known any farther, and even to destroy that Account, when you had perused it; yet, I make no doubt, you remember the Story, and so I need not repeat any Part of it.

When we arrived there, we found at the Door, expecting us, (for they heard the Chariot-wheels at a Distance) my pretty Miss Goodwin, and two other Misses, who had earned their Ride, attended by the Governess's Daughter, a discreet young Gentlewoman. As soon as I stepped out, the Child ran into my Arms with great Eagerness, and I as tenderly embraced her, and leading her into the Parlour, asked her

. See Vol. II. p. 359.

her abundance of Questions about her Work and her Lessons; and among the rest, If she had merited this Distinction of the Chaise and Dairy house Breakfast, or if it was owing to her Uncle's Favour, and to that of her Governess? the young Gentlewoman assured me it was to both, and shewed me her Needleworks, and Penmanship; and the Child was highly

pleased with my Commendations.

I took a good deal of Notice of the other two Misses, for their School-sellow's sake, and made each of them a Present of some little Toys; and my Miss, of a Number of pretty Trinkets, with which she was highly delighted; and I told her, That I would wait upon her Governess, when I came from London into the Country again, and see in what Order she kept her little Matters; for, above all things, I loved pretty housewisely Misses; and then,

I would bring her more.

Mr. B. observed, with no small Satisfaction, the Child's Behaviour, which is very pretty; and appeared as fond of her, as if he had been more than her Uncle, and yet seemed under some Restraint, lest it should be taken, that he was more. Such Power has secret Guilt, poor Gentleman! to lessen and restrain a Pleasure, that would, in a happier Light, have been so laudable to have manifested! But how commendable is this his Love to the dear Child, compared to that of most wicked Libertines, who have no Delight, but in destroying Innocence; and care not what becomes of the unhappy Infants, or of the still more unhappy Mothers!

I am going to let you into a charming Scene, refulting from this Perplexity of the dear Gentleman. A Scene that has afforded me high Delight ever fince: and always will, when I think of it: But I

will lead to it, as gradually as it happened.

The Child was very fond of her Uncle, and told him, She loved him dearly, and always would love

and honour him, for giving her fuch a good Aunt.
—You talked, Madam, faid she, when I saw you before, that I should come and live with you—Will you let me, Madam? Indeed I will be very good, and do every thing you bid me, and mind my Book, and my Needle; indeed I will.

Ask your Uncle, my Dear, said I; I should like

your pretty Company of all things.

She went to Mr. B. and faid, Shall I, Sir, go and live with my Aunt? Pray let me, when you come from London again.

You have a very good Governess, Child, said he;

and the cannot part with you.

Yes, but she can, Sir; she has a great many Misses, and can spare me well enough; and if you please to let me ride in your Coach sometimes, I can go and visit my Governess, and beg a Holiday for the Misses, now-and-then, when I am almost a Woman, and then all the Misses will love me.

Don't the Misses love you now, Miss Goodwin? said he. Yes, they love me well enough, for matter of that; but they will love me better, when I can beg them a Holiday. Do, dear Sir, let me go home to my new Aunt, next time you come into the Country.

I was much pleased with the dear Child's Earnestness; and permitted her to have her full Argument
with her beloved Uncle; but was much moved, and
he himself was under some Concern, when she said,—
But you should, in pity, let me live with you, Sir,
for I have no Papa, nor Mamma neither: They are
so far off!—But I will love you both as if you were
my own Papa and Mamma; so, dear now, my good
Uncle, promise the poor Girl that has never a Papa
nor Mamma!—

I withdrew to the Door: It will rain, I believe, faid I, and looked up. And, indeed, I had almost a Shower in my Eye; and had I kept my Place, could not have refrained shewing how much I was affected.

Mr. B. as I faid, was a little moved; but for fear the young Gentlewoman should take Notice of it, How! my Dear, said he, no Papa nor Mamma!— Did they not fend you a pretty Black Boy to wait upon you, a while ago? Have you forgot that?— That is true, replied she: But what is a Black Boy to living with my new Aunt?—That is better a great deal than a Black Boy!

Well, your Aunt and I will confider of it, when we come from London. Be a good Girl, mean time, and do as your Governess would have you, and then you don't know what we may do for you. Well then, Miss Bett, said she to her young Governess, let me be set two Tasks instead of one, and I will

learn all I can to deferve to go to my Aunt.

In this Manner the little Prattler diverted herself. And as we returned from them, the Scene I hinted

at, opened as follows:

Mr. B. was pleased to say, What a poor Figure does the proudest Man make, my dear Pamela, under the Sense of a concealed Guilt, in company of the Innocent who know it, and even of those who do not!—Since the casual Expression of a Baby shall overwhelm him with Sname, and make him unable to look up without Consussion. I blushed for myself, continued he, to see how you were affected for me, and yet withdrew, to avoid reproaching me so much as with a Look. Surely, Pamela, I must then make a most contemptible Appearance in your Eye! Did you not disdain me, at that Moment?

Dearest Sir! how can you speak such a Word? A Word I cannot repeat after you! For at that very Time, I beheld you with the more Reverence, for seeing your noble Heart touched with a Sense of your Error; and it was such an Earnest to me of the happiest Change I could ever wish for, and in so young a Gentleman, that it was one half Joy for that, and

the other half Concern at the little Charmer's accidental Plea, to her best and nearest Friend, for coming home to her new Aunt, that affected me so sen-

fibly as you faw.

You must not talk to me of the Child's coming home, after this Visit, Pamela; for how, at this rate, shall I stand the Reproaches of my own Mind, when I see the little Prater every Day before me, and think of what her poor Mamma has suffered on my Account! It is enough, that in you, my Dear, I have an hourly Reproach before me, for my Attempts on your Virtue; and I have nothing to boast of, but that I gave way to the Triumphs of your Innocence: And what then is my Boast?

What is your Boast, dearest Sir? You have every thing to boast, that is worthy of being boasted of:

—Brought up to an affluent Fortune, uncontrouled in your Will, your Passions uncurbed; you have nevertheless permitted the Divine Grace to operate upon your truly noble Heart, and have seen your Error, at a Time of Life, when others are rushing into Vices, in the midst of which, perhaps, they

are cut off.

You act generously, and with a laudable Affection, to a deferving Baby, which some would have left friendless to the wide World, and have made more miserable, perhaps, than they had made the very miserable Mother: And you have the Comfort to think, that, through God's Goodness, this Mother is not unhappy; and that there is not a lost Soul, any more than a lost Body, to lay to your Charge,

You have inspirited, by your generous Example, and enabled, by your splendid Fortune, another Perfon, whom you have made the happiest Creature in the World, to do good to the Poor and Destitute all around her; besides making every one who approaches you, easy and happy, with the Bounty of

your own Hands.

You are the best of Husbands, the best of Landlords, the best of Masters, the best of Friends; and, with all these Excellencies, and a Mind, as I hope, continually improving, and more and more affected with the Sense of its past Mistakes, will you ask, dear

Sir, what is your Boaft?

O my dearest, dear Mr. B. and then I pressed his Hand with my Lips, whatever you are to yourself, when you give way to Restections so hopeful, you are the Glory and the Boast of your grateful Pamela! And permit me to add, Tears standing in my Eyes, and holding his Hand between mine, That I never beheld you in my Life, in a more amiable Light, than when I saw that noble Consciousness which you speak of, manifest itself in your Eyes, and your Countenance—O Sir! this was a Sight of Joy, of true Joy! to one who loves you for your dear Soul's sake, as well as for that of your Person; and who looks forward to a Companionship with you, beyond the Term of this transitory Life!

The dear Gentleman looked down fometimes, and fometimes upon me, without offering to interrupt me; and when I had done speaking, I began to sear, by his Silence, that I had offended him, remembering just then, one of his former * Cautions to me, not to throw a Gloom upon his Mind by my Over-seriousness; and I said, putting my Arms round his Arm, as I sat, my fearful Eye watching his, I fear, Sir, I have been too serious! I have, perhaps, broken one of your Injunctions! Have cast a Gloominess over your Mind! And if I have, dear Sir, forgive me!

He clasped his Arms around me: O my beloved Pamela, said he; thou dear Confirmer of all my better Purposes! how shall I acknowledge your inexpressible Goodness to me? I see every Day more and more, my dear Love, what Confidence I may repose in your Generosity and Discretion! You want no Forgiveness; and my Silence was owing to much better Motives, than to those you were apprehensive of.

Judge ye, my honoured Parents, what Pleasure must overspread my Heart, encouraged in a Manner so agreeable to all my Wishes, and at the hopeful Prospect of a thorough Reformation, which I had so often prayed for, and which so happily began to open to my delighted Mind, on this Occasion.

Indeed I could not find Words to express my Joy, and so was obliged to Silence in my Turn, being only able to raise my swimming Eyes to his encouraging ones, and to press his Hand between both mine, to my Lips, which, by their quivering Motion, shewed their Readiness to perform their Part of Speech, could my backwarder Tongue have given Utterance

to my Meanings.

He saw my grateful Transport, and kindly said, Struggle not my beloved Pamela, for Words to express Sentiments which your Eyes and your Countenance much more significantly express than any Words can do. Every Day produces new Instances of your affectionate Concern for my future as well as present Happiness: And I will endeavour to confirm to you all the Hopes which the present Occasion has given you of me, and which I see by these transporting Effects, are so desirable to you.

If, my dear Miss Darnford, you are not at present able to account for this speechless Rapture, as I may call it, I am confident you will, if it should be your Lot to marry such a Gentleman as Mr. B. one who is capable of generous and noble Sentiments, and yet has not been so good as you could wish, whenever it shall happen, that the Divine Grace, and your unaffected Piety, shall touch his Heart, and he shall give Hopes like those I have the Pleasure to

rejoice

rejoice in.—Hopes so charming, that they must, if confirmed, irradiate many a gloomy Appearance, which, at times, will cast a Shadow over the bright-

est and happiest Prospects.

The Chariot brought ushome sooner than I wished, and Mr. B. handed me into the Parlour. Here, Mrs. Jervis, said he, meeting her in the Passage, receive your Angelic Lady. I must take a little Tour without you, Pamela; for I have had too much of your dear Company, and must leave you, to descend again into myself; for you have raised me to such a Height, that it is with Pain I look down from it.

He kissed my Hand, and went into his Chariot again; for it was but half an Hour after Twelve; and said, he would be back by Two at Dinner. He lest Mrs. Jervis wondering at his Words, and at the solemn Air with which he uttered them. But when I told that good Friend the Occasion, I had a new Joy in the Pleasure and Gratulations of the

dear good Woman, on what had passed.

Were I, my dear Friends, to recount to you every Conversation that gives me Delight, when we are alone (my Miss Darnford) as well as when we are in Company, I should do nothing but write. Imagine the rest from what I have (but as so many Specimens of my Felicity) informed you of, and then think, if there can possibly be a happier Creature on

Earth, than I am at present.

My next Letter will be from London, and to You, my honoured Parents; for to You, my Dear, Ishall not write again, expecting to see you soon. But I must now write seldomer, because I am to renew my Correspondence with Lady Davers; with whom I cannot be so free, as I have been with Miss Darnford; and so I doubt, my dear Father and Mother, you cannot have the Particulars of that Correspondence; for I shall never find Time to transcribe.

Vol. III. T But

But every Opportunity that offers, you may affure yourfelves, shall be laid hold of by your ever-dutiful Daughter.

And now, my dear Miss Darnford, as I inscribed this Letter to you, let me conclude it, with the

Affurance, that I am, and ever will be,

Your most affectionate Friend and Servant,

P. B.



The END of Vol. III.

